

# Biographical History of North Carolina

From Colonial Times  
to the Present



*Editor-in-Chief*

Samuel A. Ashe,

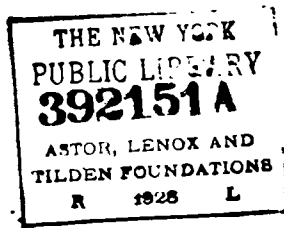
VOLUME IV

Charles L. Van Noppen

PUBLISHER

Greensboro, N. C.

MCMVI



COPYRIGHT, 1906  
BY CHARLES L. VAN NOPPEN

—  
All rights reserved





W L Taubert



KEMP P. BATTLE . . . .	Chapel Hill
JOHN C. BUXTON . . . .	Winston-Salem
THEO. F. DAVIDSON . . . .	Asheville
JUNIUS DAVIS . . . .	Wilmington
RUFUS A. DOUGHTON . . . .	Sparta
THOMAS J. JARVIS . . . .	Greenville
JAMES Y. JOYNER . . . .	Raleigh
CHARLES D. McIVER . . . .	Greensboro
WILLIAM L. POTEAT . . . .	Wake Forest
JAMES H. SOUTHGATE . . . .	Durham
CHARLES W. TILLET . . . .	Charlotte





ADVISORY BOARD . . . . .	ix
CONTENTS . . . . .	xi
PORTRAITS . . . . .	xv
CONTRIBUTORS . . . . .	xvii
RALEIGH, WALTER . . . . .	i
DARE, VIRGINIA . . . . .	8
ADAM, ROBERT . . . . .	19
ADAMS, SPENCER BELL . . . . .	22
ANDERSON, GEORGE BURGWIN . . . . .	28
ASHE, JOHN BAPTISTA . . . . .	32
ASHE, JOHN . . . . .	36
BAILEY, JOHN L. . . . .	53
BRASWELL, JAMES CRAIG . . . . .	55
BUNDY, JESSE MOORE . . . . .	59
BUNN, BENJAMIN HICKMAN . . . . .	62
BURTON, HUTCHINS GORDON . . . . .	68
CAMPBELL, ROBERT FISHBURNE . . . . .	72
COBB, HENRY WELLINGTON . . . . .	78
CORBETT, MICHAEL J. . . . .	82
COX, JOSEPH JOHN . . . . .	86
COX, JONATHAN ELWOOD . . . . .	89
CRAIG, DAVID IRVIN . . . . .	96
CRAVEN, BRAXTON . . . . .	102

CRAWFORD, LEONIDAS WAKEFIELD . . . . .	112
CREECY, RICHARD BENBURY . . . . .	119
DAVIDSON, WILLIAM LEE . . . . .	124
DOUGHTON, RUFUS ALEXANDER . . . . .	129
FRANKLIN, JESSE . . . . .	133
GREGORY, ISAAC . . . . .	139
HADLEY, THOMAS JEFFERSON . . . . .	146
HAD, LEO . . . . .	153
HARRINGTON, HENRY WILLIAM . . . . .	158
HARVEY, JOHN . . . . .	163
HILL, WILLIAM H. . . . .	176
HILL, JOSEPH ALSTON . . . . .	181
HOBBS, LEWIS LYNDON . . . . .	184
HOBGOOD, FRANKLIN P. . . . .	189
HOGUN, JAMES . . . . .	196
HOWARD, GEORGE . . . . .	203
HUME, THOMAS . . . . .	213
HUNTER, THEOPHILUS . . . . .	218
JACK, JAMES . . . . .	221
JOHNSON, ANDREW . . . . .	228
JOHNSTON, SAMUEL . . . . .	241
JONES, ALLEN . . . . .	252
JONES, THOMAS . . . . .	256
LAWRENCE, THOMAS . . . . .	262
LEAK, THOMAS CRAWFORD . . . . .	270
LEAZAR, AUGUSTUS . . . . .	275
MACKAY, JAMES IVER . . . . .	284
MACON, NATHANIEL . . . . .	291
MARTIN, FRANÇOIS-XAVIER . . . . .	306
MCQUEEN, HENRY C. . . . .	315
MENDENHALL, NEREUS . . . . .	319

---



---

CONTENTS

---

xiii

MILLER, ROBERT JOHNSTONE . . . . .	325
MILLER, WILLIAM . . . . .	328
MOTT, JOHN JAMES . . . . .	331
MURPHEY, ARCHIBALD DE BOW . . . . .	340
PARKER, WALTER SCOTT . . . . .	349
PARKS, HUGH, SR. . . . .	355
PEEBLES, ROBERT BRUCE . . . . .	361
PHILIPS, FREDERICK . . . . .	366
POGUE, JOSEPH EZEKIEL . . . . .	370
ROBERTSON, LUCY H. . . . .	375
SAUNDERS, WILLIAM L. . . . .	381
SIMPSON, JOHN . . . . .	390
SPAIGHT, RICHARD DOBBS, SR. . . . .	397
SPAIGHT, RICHARD DOBBS, JR. . . . .	403
SPEIGHT, RICHARD HARRISON . . . . .	406
STEPHENS, JOHN WALTER . . . . .	411
STONE, DAVID . . . . .	422
TATE, SAMUEL McDOWELL . . . . .	430
TOURGEE, ALBION WINEGAR . . . . .	440
URMSTONE, JOHN . . . . .	450
WAKEFIELD, WILLIAM HAINES . . . . .	456
WATSON, CYRUS B. . . . .	460
WHITE, MATTHEW H. . . . .	469
WILLARD, MARTIN STEVENSON . . . . .	473
WOMACK, THOMAS BROWN . . . . .	481
YOUNG, ROBERT SIMONTON . . . . .	488



SAUNDERS, WILLIAM L. . . . .	<i>Frontispiece</i>
ADAMS, SPENCER BELL . . . . .	<i>facing</i> 22
BRASWELL, JAMES CRAIG . . . . .	" 55
BUNDY, JESSE MOORE . . . . .	" 59
BUNN, BENJAMIN HICKMAN . . . . .	" 62
CAMPBELL, ROBERT FISHBURNE . . . . .	" 72
COBB, HENRY W. . . . .	" 78
CORBETT, MICHAEL J. . . . .	" 82
COX, JONATHAN ELWOOD . . . . .	" 89
CRAIG, DAVID IRVIN . . . . .	" 96
CRAVEN, BRAXTON . . . . .	" 102
CRAWFORD, LEONIDAS WAKEFIELD . . . . .	" 112
DOUGHTON, RUFUS ALEXANDER . . . . .	" 129
HADLEY, THOMAS JEFFERSON . . . . .	" 146
HAD, LEO . . . . .	" 153
HOBBS, LEWIS LYNDON . . . . .	" 184
HOBGOOD, FRANKLIN P. . . . .	" 189
HOWARD, GEORGE . . . . .	" 203
HUME, THOMAS . . . . .	" 213
LAWRENCE, THOMAS . . . . .	" 262
LEAK, THOMAS CRAWFORD . . . . .	" 270
LEAZAR, AUGUSTUS . . . . .	" 275

McQUEEN, HENRY C. . . . .	<i>facing</i>	315
MENDENHALL, NEREUS . . . . .	"	319
MOTT, JOHN JAMES . . . . .	"	331
MURPHEY, ARCHIBALD DE BOW . . . . .	"	340
PARKER, WALTER SCOTT . . . . .	"	349
PARKS, HUGH, SR. . . . .	"	355
PEEBLES, ROBERT BRUCE . . . . .	"	361
PHILIPS, FREDERICK . . . . .	"	366
POGUE, JOSEPH EZEKIEL . . . . .	"	370
ROBERTSON, LUCY H. . . . .	"	375
SPEIGHT, RICHARD HARRISON . . . . .	"	406
TATE, SAMUEL McDOWELL . . . . .	"	430
WAKEFIELD, WILLIAM HAINES . . . . .	"	456
WATSON, CYRUS B. . . . .	"	460
WHITE, MATTHEW H. . . . .	"	469
WILLARD, MARTIN STEVENSON . . . . .	"	473
WOMACK, THOMAS BROWN . . . . .	"	481
YOUNG, ROBERT SIMONTON . . . . .	"	488



SAMUEL A. ASHE	THOMAS N. IVEY, A.M., D.D.
ROBERT BINGHAM	BERTHA MARVIN LEE
WILLIAM A. BLAIR, A.M., LL.D.	PAUL B. MEANS, A.B.
G. SAMUEL BRADSHAW, A.M.	GERTRUDE MENDENHALL, B.S.
BENJAMIN H. BUNN	JAMES H. MYROVER
BAYLUS CADE	FRANK NASH
WALTER CLARK, A.M., LL.D.	WALTER L. PARSONS
COLLIER COBB, A.M.	WILLIAM S. PEARSON, A.B.
R. D. W. CONNOR, Ph.B.	THOMAS M. PITTMAN
HENRY G. CONNOR	GEORGE ROUNTREE
MRS. L. W. CRAWFORD	WILLIAM WALTER SCOTT
WILLIAM E. DODD, Ph.D.	EGBERT W. SMITH, A.B., D.D.
ROBERT DICK DOUGLAS, A.B.	CHARLES M. STEDMAN, A.B.
✓ MARSHALL DE L. HAYWOOD	ZEBULON V. TAYLOR
L. LYNDON HOBBS, A.M.	STEPHEN B. WEEKS, Ph.D., LL.D.
WILLIAM HENRY HOYT, A.M.	E. PAVSON WILLARD, Ph.B.
WILLIAM A. WITHERS, A.M.	



## WALTER RALEIGH

**T**HE capital of the State of North Carolina was at its incorporation in 1792, named the City of Raleigh, in remembrance of "the Citie of Raleigh," which was to have been established, about two centuries before, on Roanoke Island by the English colonists under the direction of Sir Walter Raleigh; and thus the name of that English statesman, soldier, sailor, scholar and courtier, who first conceived the idea of creating an English nation in the New World, and led the way in colonization, has been perpetuated here in the State within whose territory he made the first entrance into the wilderness of America.

The family of Raleigh was an old and honorable one of Devonshire, but had fallen somewhat into decay; and to retrieve his fortunes, Walter Raleigh, of Fardell, the father of the subject of this sketch, on the awakening of a mercantile spirit early in the sixteenth century, connected himself with some of the merchants of Exeter. His third wife was Catherine Campernoun, the widowed mother of Sir Humphrey Gilbert and Walter Gilbert, and by her Raleigh had two sons, Sir Walter and Carey Raleigh.

Catherine Champernoun was connected with Mrs. Kate Ashley, who indeed was aunt to her son, Sir Humphrey Gilbert; and she was also connected with the Carey family; and Queen Eliza-

---

It has been deemed best to insert the sketches of Walter Raleigh and Virginia Dare out of their alphabetical sequence.

beth's nearest kinsman was Henry Carey, Lord Hunsdon, the son of Mary Boleyn, the Queen's aunt.

When Anne Boleyn lost her head, and Elizabeth was declared illegitimate, the cast-off Princess, not then in her teens, was committed to Kate Ashley, whose husband was her kinsman, and who as governess was charged with her education and oversight; and so well was this trust discharged that Elizabeth regarded Kate Ashley with filial affection. During this period of her young life it would seem that Elizabeth was intimately thrown with Humphrey Gilbert, the elder half-brother of Walter Raleigh, for on his departure to explore Newfoundland she sent Raleigh to him with the direction that he should send her his picture and should be careful of himself; "as one whom she had tendered;" and doubtless she also knew Raleigh himself in his infancy. These circumstances and associations probably had much to do with Raleigh's subsequent career, for the Queen showed no favor to her father's kinspeople, but was evidently attached to those connected with her on her mother's side.

Of Raleigh's early life but little is recorded. He was born in 1552, at his father's manor house of Hayes, and the only record of his education is a meagre account that at an early age he became a commoner of Oriel; had a distinguished career at Oxford, being esteemed a wit as well as a scholar, although not a student at the University for three full years.

At eighteen he was in active service as a soldier in the civil wars of France, where he remained some six years, gaining laurels and fame. In 1576 he was in Ireland, where Sir Humphrey Gilbert had been President of Munster. It was about that time that Queen Elizabeth bestowed on Sir Humphrey a patent authorizing him to make discoveries and settlements in America, in effect conferring on him a principedom in the New World, with permission to colonize his possessions with Englishmen. In this first attempt at colonization, Walter Raleigh was associated with his great half-brother, but did not accompany him on his ill-starred expedition. In 1580 and 1581 Raleigh was a soldier in Ireland, and bore dispatches to the Queen in December, 1581, remaining



at court. In the following April the Queen conferred on Raleigh the command of a band of footmen in Ireland, "chiefly that our pleasure is to have our servant, Walter Raleigh, trained some time longer in that our realm for his better experience in martial affairs, and for the especial care that we have to do him good, in respect of his kindred that have served us, some of them (as you know) near about our person. These are to require you that the leading of the said band may be committed to the said Raleigh; and for that he is, for some considerations, by us excused to stay here, our pleasure is that the said band be, in the meantime, till he repair into that our realm, delivered to some such as he shall depute to be his lieutenant there." Raleigh seems never to have joined his troops in Ireland, but remained at Court, where the Queen "took him for a kind of oracle." Particularly did he commend himself to her by an act of gallantry in spreading his fine cloak "reverentially on the ground before her Majesty, whereon the Queen trod gently over a miry slough, rewarding him afterwards with many suits for his seasonable tender of so fair a foot-cloth."

At Court Raleigh developed into a favorite courtier, and after the death of his brother, the charter of colonization being about to expire, he solicited and obtained a renewal of it. It is to be observed that this favor was bestowed by Elizabeth only on these two half-brothers, whose fortunes she seemed inclined to push beyond that of others; although it is equally true that they were both deserving of peculiar distinction because of their personal characteristics and attainments.

Having obtained this charter, ambitious and hopeful, Raleigh fitted out two barks and sent them forth under the command of Amadas and an old companion-in-arms, Barlowe, who had served with him in France, giving them particular directions as to how they should proceed. Raleigh evidently proposed to avoid the bleak northern coast and to discover an eligible location for a colony in a more temperate latitude. Many gentlemen accompanied this expedition, which indeed excited great interest among the mercantile classes of England. Observing Raleigh's

directions, his admirals safely arrived at Roanoke Inlet early in July, 1584, and formally took possession of the land as the domain of Walter Raleigh under the royal grant of the English Queen. The accounts carried back were marvellous. The newly discovered land was a veritable Garden of Eden. The popular furor at the success of the expedition was immense, and Raleigh was the hero of the age. The Queen was transported with enthusiasm. She named the new country for herself, and bestowed upon Raleigh the honor of knighthood, and various lucrative monopolies, and otherwise sought to advance his interests.

At great expense Raleigh the next year equipped a second expedition to Virginia, and as soon as that had sailed, sent out the Davis Expedition to discover a northern route to India, from which "Davis Straits" on the ice-bound coast of North America takes its name.

It was about this time that Elizabeth entered into a treaty with the Protestants of the Netherlands, and thus gave cause for war with Spain, and there were rumors of an intended invasion of England. In this supreme moment Raleigh was called on to play an important part, and his skill in maritime as well as military affairs gave him still greater consequence. He became Lord Warden of the Stannaries and Vice-Admiral of Devon, and no man in England was more engaged in public business than he.

To build forts, to equip fleets, to muster and arm the companies of his territory were the severe duties that taxed his energies to the utmost capacity.

The first attempted settlement at Roanoke ended in disaster. Lane's Colony came to naught; so in 1587 Raleigh, whose means were now much impaired, proposed a new plan, and admitted London merchants to a share in his enterprise. Nineteen of these associates remained at home; while thirteen, John White and a dozen others, were constituted "the Governor and Assistants of the Citie of Raleigh in Virginia." These accompanied the colony to Roanoke. White returned to England the same year for additional supplies. In March, 1588, Raleigh prepared a supply expedition to be commanded by Grenville; but a Spanish

attack being imminent, the Queen forbade the departure of any vessel, and particularly assigned Grenville to duties of defence. In July, 1588, the great Spanish Armada, whose coming had been expected with such apprehensions, at length made its appearance, and Raleigh bore himself bravely in that great sea-fight. His ship was one of those which kept up the pursuit till the last, and he saw the ending of what Sir Henry Watton called "the morris dance on the waves."

The next year an expedition with supplies set sail, but meeting with hostile vessels, was beaten back to England; and Raleigh then found himself so engaged that of himself he could do nothing more, and so he made a further assignment to those already interested in the colony, divesting himself of nearly every right as the absolute proprietor. There was still an inhibition on the departure of vessels from England; but Raleigh finding some ships whose owners desired to send them to the West Indies to trade and prey upon the Spaniards, obtained the Queen's assent to their departure on condition that they would carry relief to the colonists at "the City of Raleigh," in Virginia. And so at last White again left England in March, 1590. He found that the colonists had abandoned Roanoke Island; and the Lost Colony of Sir Walter Raleigh has ever since lived a mystery in song and story. It is recorded, however, that Raleigh never forgot their sad fate, and between that time and 1602 he sent five separate expeditions for their rescue.

After the destruction of the Armada in 1588, under Raleigh's advice England boldly took the seas against the Spaniards in the contest for mastery, and every year and every month brought its new duties and its new toils. In the Fall of 1588, under his advice, a great expedition carried the war into Spain, and on land and sea victory attended every blow. In 1591 it was a great expedition against the Azore Islands in which Raleigh's boldest captain and beloved kinsman, Grenville, lost his life. The next year it was the expedition against Panama. And then came his marriage and consequent imprisonment—and the only hours of home life at his beautiful Manor of Sherborne, where for a season he

toyed with love and revelled in the pleasures of intelligent recreation. In 1595 he set sail for Guiana to explore that country. And then he gained his highest title to renown in the victory at Cadiz. There the loss of life was great, but despite all the carnage, Raleigh pursued his intent and, though sorely wounded, did not desist until the last Spanish flag had struck and the last enemy was vanquished. Again at Fayal he distinguished himself, performing surprising feats of personal valor.

During all these years he also served in Parliament, and boldly grappled with questions requiring extensive information and a comprehensive understanding of the condition, the needs and resources of the English people.

He was truly a progressive statesman of the most advanced school; laying down principles and policies far ahead of his day, and urging measures to relieve trade, commerce, agriculture and manufactures, to relieve of all those restrictions which had their origin in the benighted times of the Middle Ages. He was for freedom—freedom of the citizen, freedom of trade, disenthraling the people from the burdens which tradition had fastened upon them. He was a prodigy in genius, a man of lofty mind, lofty purposes, and of wide intelligence. He loved knowledge and was ever a hard and systematic student, and enjoyed the pleasures that wait on a comprehensive understanding.

In the year 1603 Elizabeth died, James of Scotland fell heir to the kingdom, and an end came to the active career of Walter Raleigh, then in the meridian of his splendor and usefulness. There is a hasty line by an obscure writer that Raleigh contemplated the possibility of a commonwealth, and it is said that his unprinted writings were treasured by John Milton, John Hampden, and other patriots of the next generation. But he was not charged because of his liberal principles, but for an alleged conspiracy in the interests of Spain, in which there was no proof of his complicity. The proceeding was not a trial; it was a measure to remove Raleigh even though at the cost of his innocent blood.

In November, 1603, the gates of the Tower closed in upon him—the poet, the scholar, the gallant seaman, the brave soldier, the

admirable statesman and unswerving patriot, the first man of his time in varied accomplishments and universality of genius. For fifteen years he was confined to the Tower, and there he slaked his thirst for ambition in deep study and new lines of thought. His first recourse was chemistry, a science then little understood and not often practised. And he wrote history, ancient and modern, treatises on military and maritime affairs, and on subjects well nigh covering the entire realm of knowledge. At length in the spring of 1618 Raleigh was released to go about with a keeper to make provision for a voyage in search of gold in South America. The misfortunes of that voyage ended his career. He was now charged with breaking the peace with Spain, and was executed under his old sentence.

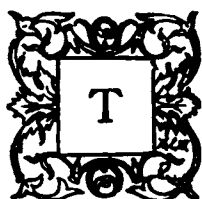
In 1602 Raleigh had sent Mace to make further search for his colonists in Virginia. When Mace returned, Raleigh was in prison and his rights in Virginia were forfeited to the Crown. Three years later ten of Raleigh's associates in the City of Raleigh, together with others of his old-time friends and connections, obtained a new grant from the Crown, and, following the original instructions Raleigh had given to John White, made in 1607 a settlement on the Chesapeake, and the work of creating a new nation in the New World begun by Walter Raleigh twenty years before was continued, and the result is the United States of America.

*S. A. Ashe.*





## VIRGINIA DARE



HE name of Virginia Dare is, speaking after the manner of men, immortal. The people of the Western Hemisphere in the centuries to come will ever recall her as the first of the English race to be born in the New World. Other names of that distant era will fade away from the remembrance of man, but in the far future, when hundreds of millions of people shall inhabit America, little Virginia Dare will still live in song and story.

Of her brief life but two incidents are recorded: she was born; and she was baptized into the Christian faith according to the rites of the English Church—and then her life and fate were involved in impenetrable obscurity. But she was the first of the English-speaking race, of American birth, to behold these American skies, and to breathe the pure air of a virgin continent, then uncontaminated by the oppressions of men, and which has become the home of the free and the land of Liberty; and even the mystery attaching to her unfortunate fate imparts to her an additional interest, which grows with the passing years.

On July 4, 1584—auspicious day—Walter Raleigh's captains, Amadas and Barlowe, first sighted land somewhere about the "Cape of Fere," and a few days later came to anchor in the unknown waters of the New World, near what we call Cape

Hatteras. When their boats first grated upon the sand, they sprang upon the beach, and Captain Amadas proclaimed: "We take possession of this land in the right of the Queen's most excellent Majesty, as rightful Queen and Princess of the same," and then they delivered the same "over to the use of Walter Raleigh, according to her Majesty's grant and letters patent under her Highness' great seal." Some days later they went twenty miles into the Sound and came to an island which the Indians called Roanoke. After remaining two months exploring this delightful country, they returned home, and Queen Elizabeth bestowed upon her new possessions the name of Virginia, in commemoration of herself, the Virgin Queen.

The next year, for purposes of exploration, seven ships great and small, carrying 108 men, but no women or children, set sail from England on the 9th of April, and arrived at Roanoke on July 3d. It was expected that other settlers would come to join them later. For a year they lived on Roanoke Island and explored the sounds and country. Among them were distinguished mathematicians, scientific men, and competent draughtsmen and painters, who were to investigate and make known the manners and customs of the natives and the material resources of the country. Relying on being supplied from home with needed provisions, they did not plant crops or provide for their own sustenance, and in the following Spring their stores were exhausted. In the meantime some of the Indians on the mainland had become very hostile; but the few who lived on Croatan, as that portion of the ocean banks on which Cape Hatteras is situated was called, were always friendly. After many vicissitudes, being often in peril of death from starvation and of being cut off by Indian enemies, some vessels touching, they unfortunately determined to abandon the settlement and return home. Sailing in June, they reached England safely on July 27, 1586. But hardly had they set sail before the ship bringing the promised supplies arrived, but, finding the island deserted, it also returned to England.

A fortnight later, Sir Richard Grenville, Raleigh's cousin,

arrived with three ships; and unwilling that the country should be abandoned, he left fifteen men in Fort Raleigh, on Roanoke Island, well supplied with provisions. The next year a permanent settlement was designed; but now Sir Walter thought it best that the Colony should be located at some more eligible harbor on the Chesapeake Bay, and gave directions accordingly. He also associated with himself in the enterprise some thirty merchants and adventurers, and the government of the Colony was invested in a corporation named "The Governor and Assistants of the Citie of Raleigh," of whom twelve were to go to Virginia, the others interested remaining in England.

It was also necessary that some women should accompany the Colonists, and as the settlers were not to return to England, that they take their wives and children with them. No woman had yet ventured to cross the great ocean. No woman had ever thought to separate herself from home and home ties and seek a strange life in the distant country. Doubtless to procure female Colonists strenuous efforts were made, with only partial success. But among those who were now interested in the enterprise was John White, a man who had already made three voyages to Virginia, a man of education, an artist as well as a competent manager. He had drawn the charts and maps made on previous explorations, and the pictures he had drawn and painted of the Indians and of scenes in Virginia are still preserved in the British Museum. His daughter Eleanor had lately married Ananias Dare; and it was arranged that White should come as Governor, and Ananias Dare should be an Assistant, and that Eleanor, yet a bride, was to accompany her husband and father. This perhaps tended to induce other women to embark, and sixteen of them agreed to undertake the experience of untried life in far-away Virginia. Of these ten appear to have been wives of Colonists, and with them were nine children. There were in addition 91 men, and with the Colonists were two Indians, Manteo, of the Hatteras tribe, and Towaye, then in England, who now returned to Virginia.

On the 26th of April, 1587, they departed from Portsmouth



in one large vessel and two smaller ones, and on the 22nd of July they arrived at Hattorask. On reaching Roanoke Island, the Colonists could but have had their ardor dimmed and their apprehensions aroused by finding that the fifteen men left in Fort Raleigh a year before had been murdered by the Indians. But nevertheless they disembarked there, although their destination was intended to be at Chesapeake. At once they began to make themselves comfortable, building houses and arranging for defence against hostile Indians.

On the 13th of August an interesting ceremony took place. By direction of Sir Walter Raleigh, Manteo, one of the Hatteras Indians who had been to England and who had always been friendly with the whites, "was christened in Roanoke and called Lord thereof, and of Dasamonguepeuk," which was the name of that part of the mainland lying opposite to Roanoke Island.

Five days later, on the 18th of August, "Eleanor, daughter to the Governor, and wife to Ananias Dare, one of the Assistants, was delivered of a daughter in Roanoke, and the same was christened there the Sunday following; and because this child was the first Christian born in Virginia, she was named Virginia."

Although in the list of the Colonists no one is particularly named as a minister, or as a physician, yet without reasonable doubt the settlement must have been provided with both, and the mention of the administration of the rite of baptism without any other particulars would indicate that it was performed in the manner usually practised among the English people at that time, which was according to the usages of the Church of England.

The ships had now unladen their stores and began to take in wood and fresh water, and the planters also prepared their letters and tokens to send back to England. At length on the 22d of August the whole company requested the Governor to return to England "for the better and sooner obtaining of supplies and other necessities for them." It had already been determined that the Colonists should remove "fifty miles

further up into the main presently," and Governor White objected to his being absent, as his "goods might be both spoiled and most of them pilfered away in the carriage, so that at his return he would be utterly unfurnished," wherefore he concluded that he would not go himself to England. The next day, however, they came to him again, renewing their entreaty and promising "to make him their bond under their hands and seals for the safe preserving of all his goods, so that if any part thereof was spoiled or lost, they would see it restored to him." Governor White at last yielded to their extreme entreaties, and departed from Roanoke on the 27th of August, and the two larger ships then at Hattorask sailed away, leaving only a pinnace with the Colonists.

White, who had been in three previous voyages, probably knew as much about the new country as any one. He had now come out as Governor and brought with him his daughter and valuable personal belongings. There was every reason for him to hurry back. He reached the west coast of Ireland on the 16th of October; but circumstances prevented his return until 1590. He left Plymouth on the 20th of March of that year, and came to anchor at Hattorask on the 15th of August, three years after he had bidden good-bye to his daughter and his little granddaughter, Virginia Dare.

After numerous distressing experiences, he approached Roanoke Island. In his account of his voyage published in 1593, he says: "We put off from Hattorask, being the number of nineteen persons in both boats; but before we could get to the place where our planters were left, it was so exceeding dark, that we overshoot the place a quarter of a mile. We let fall our grapnel near the shore and sounded with the trumpet a call, and afterwards many familiar English tunes of songs; and called to them friendly; but we had no answer; we therefore landed at daybreak. In all this way we saw in the sand the print of the savages' feet of two or three sorts trodden in the night; and as we entered up the sandy bank, upon a tree, in the very brow thereof, were curiously carved these fair Roman letters, C. R. O., which letters presently

we knew to signify the place where I should find the planters seated, according to a secret token agreed upon between them and me at my last departure from them; which was, that in any way they should not fail to write or carve on the trees or posts of the doors the name of the place where they should be seated; for at my coming away they were prepared to remove from Roanoke fifty miles into the main." Governor White also says that he found on one of the chief trees graven the word CROATOAN without any cross or sign of distress. He also found where divers chests had been hidden and long since digged up, and much of the goods in them spoiled and scattered about; of these three were the Governor's own chests, and about the place were many of his things spoiled and broken, and his books torn from the covers, and the frames of his pictures and maps rotten and spoiled with rain, and his armor almost eaten through with rust. The Colonists had long since departed. Governor White did not have command of the ships, and although Croatoan was near by, for one reason or another no particular effort was made to search that part of the banks for the English settlers; but the vessels bore away and eventually came to anchor in Plymouth on the 24th of October, 1590.

In subsequent years expeditions were sent to find the Lost Colony. Even as late as March, 1602, "a barque of Dartmouth, called *The Concord*, set sail for the northern part of Virginia; at which time likewise, Sir Walter Raleigh once more bought a barque and hired all the company for wages by the month, employing therein for chief Samuel Mace (a sufficient mariner, who had been twice before at Virginia), to find out those people which he had sent out thither by Captain White, 1587; and who, if so be they could happily light upon them, were like enough to instruct us the more perfectly in the quality of the natives."

Unfortunately all the vessels sent out had also in view the obtaining of sassafras and other such cargoes for purposes of trade; and coming to the coast north or south of Roanoke, they obtained their cargoes and returned home without entering Roanoke Sound, and the Colonists were never discovered.

At length the settlement was made at Jamestown in 1607, and the authorities in England gave positive directions that efforts should be made to find the Lost Colony and relieve their distresses. Expeditions were sent by land and water, but without avail. Powhatan, the Emperor of the Virginia Indians, resided at the Falls on the James River, and the Indians on the Roanoke were not under his dominion. Still he had influence with them; and from friendly Indians it was learned that after the arrival of the colony at Jamestown, he had caused the settlers, who for more than twenty years had lived peaceably and intermixed with the Indians south of the Chowan, to be slaughtered, although some few were said to have escaped. The exploring party under Newport, in 1608, "went southward to some parts of Chowanook and the Mangoangs, to search there those left by Sir Walter Raleigh." Smith in his "True Relation," speaking of Paspehegh, the King of the few Indians who lived near Jamestown, says: "What he knew of the Dominions he spared to acquaint me with, as of certain men cloathed at a place called Ocanahonan, clothed like me."

And again: "He sent from Warraskoyack Master Scittlemore and two guides to seek for the Lost Colony of Sir Walter Raleigh. We had agreed with the King of Paspehegh to conduct two of our men to a place called Panawicke, beyond Roanoke, where he reported many men to be appareled. We landed him at Warraskoyack, where playing the villaine and deluding us for rewarde, returned within three or four days after, without going further." This was in 1608.

Alexander Brown, in his "Genesis of the United States," has reproduced a rude drawing made from Indian descriptions and sent by Thomas Nelson from Virginia in 1608 to illustrate Smith's "True Relation" in this particular matter. On this map Warraskoyack is on the Nansemond. Ocanahonan seems to be on the Nottoway. On the Tar is located "Pakrakanick," and near it on the map is a legend: "Here remayneth four men clothed that came from Roanoke to Ochanahonan." Between the Chowan and the Morratock (Roanoke River) on the map is an-

other legend: "Here the King of Paspehegh reported our men to be, and wants to go." And that region is designated "Pananiock." From this it would seem that White's Colony, after his departure, did remove into the interior, and located in either what is now Bertie County, or south of Albemarle Sound. ✓

William Strachey, who was Secretary of the Jamestown Colony, arriving there in 1610, in his "Travaile in Virginia," written 1613, repeats information received by him from an Indian of Powhatan's tribe named Machumps, who had been to England, and was a man of intelligence, having friendly relations with the English, and to whom credit is due. Strachey says: "The highland is in all likelihoods a pleasant tract, and the mould fruitful, especially what may lye to the Southward, where at Peccarecamek and Ochanahoen, by the relation of Machumps, the people have houses built with stone walls, and one story above another; so taught them by the English who escaped the slaughter at Roanoke, at what time this our Colony, under the conduct of Captain Newport, landed within the Chesapeake Bay; where the people breed up tame turkeys about their houses, and take apes in the mountains; and where at Ritanoë the Weroance (the Chief) Eyanoco preserved seven of the English alive, four men, and two boys and one young mayde (who escaped and fled up the river of Chowanook) to beat his copper," etc.

And again, says Strachey: "That the men, women and children of the first plantation at Roanoke were by practize and commandment of Powhatan (he himself persuaded thereunto by his priests) miserably slaughtered, without any offence given him, either by the first planted (who twenty and od years had peaceably lyved intermyxed with those savages and were out of his territory) or by those who now are come to inhabit some parte of his desarte lands."

And still again: "He (Powhatan) doth often send unto us to temporize with us, awaiting perhaps a fit opportunity (inflamed by his furious and bloody priests) to offer us a taste of the same cup which he made our poor countrymen drink of at Roanoke."

For twenty years the Lost Colony seem to have lived on friend-

ly terms with the Indians bordering on Albemarle Sound; and then on the arrival of the Jamestown settlers, Powhatan had them cut off, but few escaping. It is a bare possibility that the "young mayde" who found protection at Ritanoe, on the Chowan, was Virginia Dare, whose father, probably succeeding White as Governor, might have found means for her escape, although doubtless many children in the meantime had been born in the colony.

The only other reference in history to these unfortunate Colonists was made by Lawson in 1708: "A further confirmation of this we have from the Hatteras Indians, who either then lived on Roanoke Island or much frequented it. These tell us that several of their ancestors were white people, and could talk in a book as we do; the truth of which is confirmed by gray eyes being found frequently amongst these Indians and no others. They value themselves extremely for their affinity to the English, and are ready to do for them all friendly offices. It is probable that this settlement miscarried for want of timely supplies from England, or through the treachery of the natives, for we may reasonably suppose that the English were forced to cohabit with them for relief and conversation; and that in process of time they conformed themselves to the manners of their Indian relations; and thus we see how apt human nature is to degenerate."

Lawson's book is a complete study of conditions in Carolina in 1708: of the people, the Indian tribes, their languages, manners and customs; and of the country and its natural products. The Hatteras Indians, it would seem, were no different from the others, except gray eyes were frequently found among them; and they had the language, manners and customs of an Indian tribe. At that time, 1708, the Hatteras Indians, occupying the sandbanks in the early days known as Croatan, had but sixteen fighting men. They were probably of Southern origin like the Coranines, while the other tribes of Albemarle and Pamlico were of Northern origin. In the Indian War (1711-1716) these Indians were friendly to the whites and fought for them, some of them being captured by the Indian enemy, and the tribe became very

much impoverished, and probably was still further reduced in numbers. For 50 years at least these Indians remained in their old locality. In 1763, the Hatteras Mathaminkut Indians were still living on the coast of Hyde County. (Col Rec. vol. 6, p. 995.) What became of the remnant of that small tribe is uncertain, but the tradition of a mixed race inhabiting lands on Drowning Creek in Robeson County indicates that they may have formed a part of that settlement. It is said these people were found on Drowning Creek by the Scotch who first settled the Upper Cape Fear (1735)—about twenty years after the Indian War, when the Hatteras Indians were living on the sandbanks of Croatan. In 1754 they were described as follows: "Drowning Creek, on the head of Little Pedee, fifty families, a mixed crew, a lawless people, possess the lands without patent or paying quit rents; shot a surveyor for coming to view vacant lands, being enclosed in great swamps." But at that time these families were not regarded as Indians, and are said to have possessed slaves, to speak the English language, to till their lands, and practise many of the arts of civilized life, being in these respects different from any Indian tribe then known on the continent. The difference between the Hatteras Indians and the other tribes some forty years before was scarcely observable; the change indicated above was too great to be natural, unless indeed the tribe received many accessions of families trained to civilized life.\*

It may be that some few of the colonists who escaped the slaughter in 1607 made their way to the sandbanks, or that at some earlier time some of the English colonists had intermingled

\*Mr. Hamilton McMillan, A.M., in 1888, wrote an account of the Croatan Indians of Robeson County which is instructive and of historical importance, connecting that tribe with the Hatteras Indians, with whom some of Raleigh's colonists appear to have co-mingled; and in 1891 that painstaking and laborious scholar, Dr. Stephen B. Weeks, published a very valuable pamphlet in which he collated extracts from Strachey, and Smith, and the Relation of the Virginia Company bearing on the fate of the Lost Colony—that being the first publication of the kind within the knowledge of the Editor of this work; and the Editor desires to make his acknowledgements for information to both Mr. McMillan and Dr. Weeks.

their blood with these Indians; but after a hundred years the effects had disappeared, except alone in the gray eyes then found among them. Certainly no *houses* replaced the wigwams.

But while this faint trace of the blood of the early English settlers probably exists, yet there is no reason to suppose that little Virginia Dare was ever connected in any way with this tribe. Her fate, like that of her mother, is a mystery that time and circumstances have not revealed. She, however, lives in agreeable fiction. It has been said: "By the Indians, Eleanor Dare, the first mother of the white race known to them, is said to have been called, in their figurative and descriptive way, 'The White Doe,' and her baby, the little Virginia, the first white infant they had ever seen, 'The White Fawn;,' and there is a pretty tradition that 'after her death her spirit assumed that form—an elfin fawn—which, clad in immortal beauty, would at times be seen haunting like a tender memory the place of her birth, or gazing wistfully over the sea, as with pathetic yearning for the far-away Motherland!" Another tradition is "that in that sweet form she was slain by her lover, a young Indian Chief, who had been told that if he shot her from ambush with a certain enchanted arrow, it would restore her to him in human form."

The venerable Colonel Creedy has also, in his pleasant way, perpetuated a "Legend of the White Doe," and Mrs. Sallie Southall Cotton has written a poem on the same subject.

But we pass these legends by, as also one perpetuated by Lawson. "I cannot forbear," said that historian, "inserting here a pleasant story that passes for an uncontested truth amongst the inhabitants of this place (Croatan); which is, that the ship which brought the first colonists does often appear amongst them, under sail, in a gallant posture, which they call Sir Walter Raleigh's ship, and the truth of this has been affirmed to me by men of the best credit in the country."

But not only does Virginia Dare live in story; the State of North Carolina has perpetuated her name by calling a county after her that embraces the very spot where she first saw the light of day.

S. A. Ashe.





## ROBERT ADAM



ROBERT ADAM was the first captain of the Fayetteville Independent Light Infantry, which was organized on the 23d of August, 1793. He was a Fayetteville merchant, characterized by the thrift and steadfastness of his nationality; but the old records represent him as a man of liberal views and public spirit, and especially devoted to his command, never begrudging his time or the contents of his purse in the promotion of its interests on imposing occasions—parades, celebrations, etc.

Camp Adam, a beautiful grove on Haymount, in the center of which was a large stand for public exercises, was named in honor of this gallant Scotch captain, and remained intact up to the breaking out of the Civil War. There the Fourth of July celebrations, May-day picnics and similar ceremonies were wont to take place. Handsome residences now cover the site of old Camp Adam.

Robert Adam prospered at merchandising in Fayetteville, but in the closing years of the eighteenth century he removed to Wilmington, and continued in business for some time, with a country place nearly opposite Wrightsville Beach. At this residence he died on the 11th of June, 1801, in the zenith of his manhood, aged only forty-two years. Many years afterward his remains were exhumed, conveyed to Fayetteville and deposited in a grave in the southwest corner of old Cross Creek Cemetery.

On a warm day of early Fall I stood beside the resting place of this sterling citizen and faithful soldier, within a few feet of the high bluff which forms the extremity of the inclosure. In the hot sunshine a lizard, lithe and sinuous, flashed green and gold across the old broken wall, vibrant and electric with nature's warm, glowing life; from the mill below the whirr of machinery beat the air with the throb of industrial force, and the water dashed off the mill-wheel with impatient vigor and went foaming and whirling on its way. But where I stood was the realm of repose and peace, and the majesty of silence was over all. Let the epitaph on the plain marble tablet above his head tell the short, simple story of Robert Adam's life:

"Beneath this stone are deposited the mortal remains of Robert Adam, a native of Greenock, Scotland, and for many years a merchant of Fayetteville and Wilmington, who departed this life June 11, 1801, aged forty-two years. He was universally beloved and regretted. In his conduct and deportment through life was combined all that should adorn the Christian character and constitute the honorable man, the kind husband and affectionate parent.

"'Stranger, welcome to the scene—  
The last in Nature's course,  
The first in Wisdom's thought.'"

Robert Adam left to his successor a military corps which has achieved an illustrious history through a period of one hundred and twelve years; never having forfeited its organization or allowed it to fall into disuse from the day of its founding to the present time. It offered its services in the War of 1812, and marched toward Wilmington, going into camp near that city, but its presence on the field was not needed. Many of its members took part in the war with Mexico. It was one of the first bodies of volunteer soldiery to tender itself to the State and the Confederacy, being Company H of the famous Bethel Regiment at Yorktown; and during the four years following its rank and file furnished to other regiments, battalions, etc., some of the most distinguished officers in the Southern armies. It enlisted for the Spanish-American War, but was not mustered into active service,

being in Colonel Burgwyn's Regiment, its commander Major Benjamin R. Huske, and was encamped on Tybee Island, opposite Savannah, Georgia, until the close of hostilities.

Its peace record has been brilliant and full of stirring incidents. In its devotion to the South and the memory of the Confederate soldier, it retired from the State Guard some years ago rather than discard the honored grey when blue was adopted as the regulation color of uniform. It has since been rehabilitated, and is now Company F, Second Regiment, National State Guard, Captain N. H. McGeachy commanding. The old Independent Light Infantry now constitutes a battalion, there being a reserve corps still wearing the grey, the battalion under command of Major J. C. Vann. At the centennial celebration at Philadelphia, in 1876, the company, then commanded by Major Charles Haigh, won highest praise from prominent officers of the regular army for its bearing, drill and exercise of arms in the great parade of July 4th. It has also taken part in many other imposing public ceremonies in different parts of the country.

In 1828 the General Assembly of North Carolina, in tribute to its distinction as a corps and to its splendid service, passed a special act conferring the brevet rank of major on its captain and of captain on its lieutenants. This act is in force to-day.

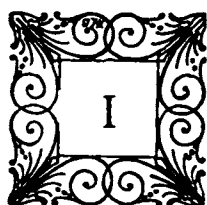
The motto of the Fayetteville Independent Light Infantry is the exclamation of the great King Henry V. of England, just before the battle of Agincourt in France:

"He that hath no stomach to this fight, let him depart."

*J. H. Myrover.*

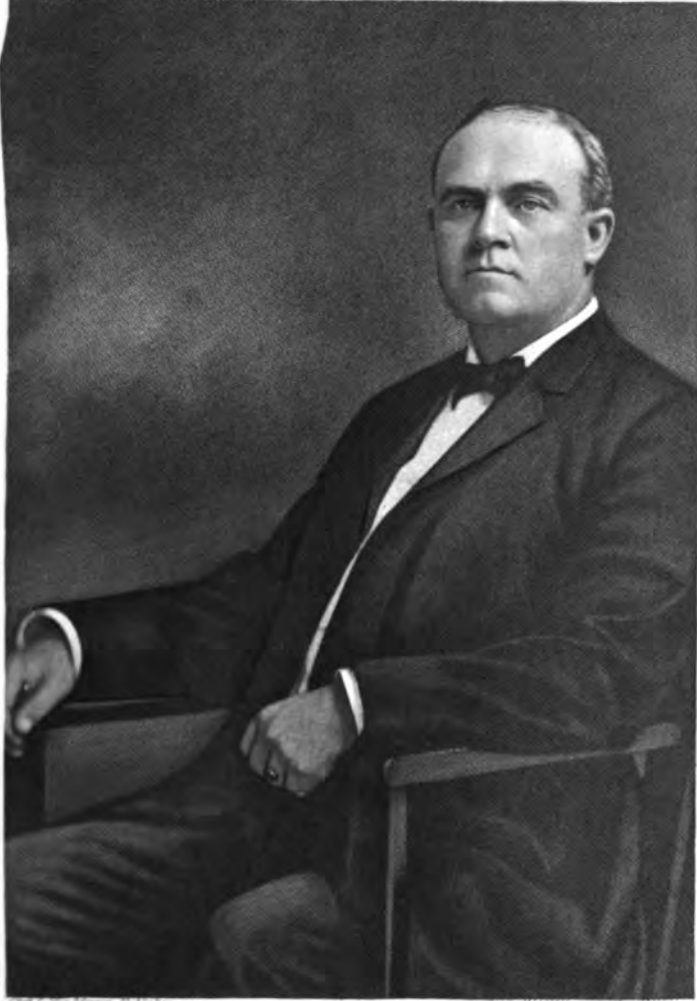


## SPENCER BELL ADAMS



IN the opening chapter of an unpublished book written by Hon. Albert J. Beveridge, member of the United States Senate from Indiana, entitled "The Young Man and the World," he discusses the matter of man's limitations to success in these truthful words: "First let him learn his limitations; let him take time enough to think out just what he cannot do. By finding out one's limitations is not meant, of course, what society will permit you to do, but what nature will permit you to do. You have no other master than nature. Nature's limitations only are the bounds of your success. So far as your success is concerned, no man, no set of men, no society, not even all the world of humanity, is your master, but nature is. A man may make himself what he will within the limitations nature has set about him."

No man will fail of success in life who believes that his Creator designed no limitation upon his advancement save that imposed by the laws of nature. This belief or conviction or faith finds its fullest fruition in a free country. It is strangled in its infancy in a despotism where it has neither air nor room nor light in which to bud, to flower and bring forth fruit. Sometimes it seems to come as a gift direct from Heaven, regardless of environment, but as a rule it owes its origin to the natural forces which surround and envelop a man who realizes in his childhood or early youth



*Spencer B. Adolovs*

that his duty demands of him great efforts, and who knows by sad experience, already and so soon, that his struggle with poverty will be fierce and hard. It does not flourish amidst the vice and luxury engendered by a vast accumulation of wealth.

The supreme power of such a faith has been well illustrated in the life of Judge Spencer Bell Adams. His parents, John A. Adams and Sarah A. Adams, came from Virginia to North Carolina in 1857 and settled near Dobson, in Surry County. Here Judge Adams was born on the 15th of October, 1860. His father was a farmer and large slave-holder. He was respected wherever known for his integrity and unflinching adherence and devotion to whatever principle or cause he believed to be right. He had strong convictions. Notwithstanding his interest apparently pointed the other way, he was intensely opposed to secession and devoted to the Union of the States. Yet when hostilities commenced between the North and the South, he espoused the cause of his own section, and sent his sons to the battlefield, although he had no faith in the final result. He was an ardent Whig, and Judge Adams owes a part of his name to the fact that he was born during the Bell and Everett campaign, in which his father took an active part. He was called after John Bell of Tennessee, the Whig candidate for President. His mother was a Christian woman of unusual force of character, who was loved for her benevolence and kindness. She had great influence with both her husband and her children, who were devotedly attached to her.

The early days of Judge Adams were full of perplexity and severe trial. Whilst only a lad he realized that he must depend absolutely upon his own exertions. His father, whose fortune had been destroyed by the result of the Civil War, died when he was only two years of age, and his mother died when he was eleven. They left to their children only the heritage of a name loved by their neighbors and without stain or reproach. Yet young as he was, and dreary as the outlook for him seemed to be, he was not discouraged nor disheartened. He resolved to make the money necessary to defray the expenses of his education, it mattered not how severe the task. And so he did. He toiled at

manual labor wherever he could find employment, and with his earnings paid for his board and tuition at the schools which he attended later at Riceville, Virginia, and Booneville and Rockingham, North Carolina. He entered the famous law school of Dick and Dillard at Greensboro in January, 1881, and remained there until February, 1882, when he obtained from the Supreme Court of North Carolina license to practise in the several courts of the State. He soon thereafter located at Yanceyville, the county seat of Caswell, and commenced a professional career which has been eminently successful, and which has won for him the respect of all who have an interest in the profession of law and love its good name.

Judge Adams has always been a Republican in his political faith, although tolerant of the opinions of others who differ with him. He has ever asserted publicly and privately that in his opinion the success and glory of our country is inseparably connected with the success of the Republican Party. Those who know him do not doubt his sincerity, however much they may question the accuracy of this statement. His aggressiveness, his capacity for organization, and his recognized loyalty and fidelity to its principles have given him a commanding influence in his party, of which he is an acknowledged and trusted leader. In November, 1882, he was elected clerk of the Superior Court and *ex-officio* probate judge for Caswell County. He was reëlected in 1886 by a very large majority, only twelve votes having been cast at the polls against him. He was again reëlected in 1890 and 1894. He resigned this office in 1896, two years before the term for which he had been elected had expired. He was elected a judge of the Superior Court in November, 1896, and took the oath of office on December 30, 1896. Yielding to the insistent demands of his party friends, who regarded him as the strongest candidate they could possibly name, he resigned his position as a judge of the Superior Court to be a candidate for Congress in the Fifth Congressional District against Hon. W. W. Kitchin, the Democratic nominee, by whom he was defeated. He moved to Greensboro in the fall of 1898. He was elected secretary and

treasurer of the North Carolina Railroad Company in July, 1899, and held this position until July, 1901. In May, 1900, his party called upon him to carry its banner in a hopeless struggle. He had done so before, when he made the fight against Mr. Kitchin, a strong man, in a district overwhelmingly Democratic. Hon. Charles B. Aycock, one of the ablest, most popular and most eloquent men living in the State of North Carolina, was nominated by the Democratic Party for the office of governor. His great personal strength was supplemented by the intense feeling engendered by the race issue in that campaign. Judge Adams was selected by the Republican Party to make the fight against him. Although it was manifest to all that his defeat was certain by a large majority, he accepted the nomination, and made the sacrifice without a murmur. In the estimation of his political friends he gained rather than lost prestige in this campaign fought under very adverse circumstances. He was appointed by President Roosevelt, and confirmed by the Senate on the 1st of July, 1902, chief judge of the Choctaw and Chickasaw Citizenship Court, a special appellate court created by act of Congress to try questions as to Indian citizenship in the Indian Territory. His associate judges were H. S. Foote, formerly of Mississippi, and W. L. Weaver, ex-member of Congress from Ohio. The work of this court was completed and its existence was terminated by limitation on the 31st of December, 1904. Judge Adams then returned to Greensboro, where he has since resided and been engaged in the practice of his profession. His business is large and lucrative.

His judicial career, both as a State and a Federal judge, won for him high praise. His conduct on the bench was marked by firmness, impartiality and courtesy to all. He sought the path of duty and followed where it led, regardless of the results to himself. A notable instance of his adherence to duty and his respect for the constitutional rights of the citizens of the State was his decision in *Wood v. Bellamy*. This case was heard by him at chambers at Raleigh, in April, 1896, and will be found in 120 North Carolina Reports, at page 212. In March, 1897, the "Fusion" legislature passed an act entitled "An Act to Charter



the Eastern Hospital for the Colored Insane, and the Western Hospital for the Insane, and North Carolina Insane Asylum at Raleigh, and to Provide for their Government," which purported to repeal the charters of the North Carolina Insane Asylum at Raleigh, the Western North Carolina Insane Asylum near Morganton and the Eastern North Carolina Insane Asylum near Goldsboro, and to abolish the offices of superintendent and directors of such institutions and to recharter them under other names, and to create offices to be filled by officers under such designations. The object of those who passed the act was manifestly to provide places for persons of the same political faith. Public interest in the decision of the court as to the validity of the act was intense. If it was sustained and declared to be constitutional, it meant that these institutions would be at the mercy of the politicians of both political parties, as they might be respectively victorious in future contests. *Wood v. Bellamy* was the test case. Judge Adams adjudged the act to be illegal and unconstitutional in so far as it attempted to abolish the offices of superintendent and directors of such institutions or to deprive the holders thereof of them before the expiration of the terms for which they were respectively elected and appointed. This decision was a sore disappointment to a few extreme partisans, who desired to see the act sustained; but the best men of all political parties rejoiced that this young Republican judge rose superior to temptation and declared the law as it was, and that he was sustained by the Supreme Court of the State, to which an appeal had been taken from his decision. For the firmness, moral courage and learning shown by him in rendering this decision Judge Adams received unstinted praise from the most prominent and influential newspapers in the State, as well as from the people at large. At the close of his term of office as chief judge of the Choctaw and Chickasaw Citizenship Court he was complimented in very high terms by the Department of Justice at Washington, District of Columbia, for the ability and integrity with which he had discharged his duties.

The domestic life of Judge Adams has been fortunate and happy. He was married on the 19th of February, 1884, to

Miss Lizzie L. Swift of Caswell County, a lady who, by her refinement of character, her gentle disposition and high sense of duty to her husband and children, has made their home one of rest, contentment and happiness.

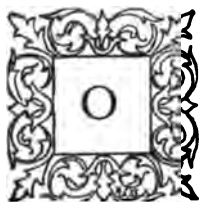
The story of the life of Judge Spencer B. Adams is well worth the study of every boy whose young life is burdened by poverty and anxiety for the future. It will teach him that in this great American Republic the avenues to honor and prosperity are open to all who recognize the dignity and honor of labor, who follow the pathway of morality and virtue and who keep the faith with their own conscience and with their fellow-men.

*Charles M. Stedman.*





## GEORGE BURGWIN ANDERSON



ONE of the many North Carolina soldiers who rose to distinction during the War between the States was George Burgwin Anderson, who was born in the county of Orange, near Hillsboro, North Carolina, on the 12th of April, 1831. His father was Colonel William E. Anderson, and his mother belonged to a well-known North Carolina family, whose several branches have varied the spelling of their patronymic, writing it both Burgwin and Burgwyn. Mrs. Eliza Anderson, mother of the general, was a daughter of George Burgwin, of New Hanover County.

George B. Anderson, after due preparation, entered the University of North Carolina and remained there during the session of 1847-1848. In the latter year he was appointed to a cadetship in the United States Military Academy at West Point, his standing being always near the head of his class.

On graduating, the first of July, 1852, he was appointed brevet second lieutenant in the Second Dragoons, and was commissioned second lieutenant on the 21st of March, 1854. He was promoted to the rank of first lieutenant on December 13, 1855. From May 27 to September 8, 1857, and from August 8, 1858, to June 24, 1859, he held the post of regimental adjutant. The greater part of the active service of Lieutenant Anderson in the United States Army was in the West. Much of the Kansas turmoil, immediately

preceding the war, fell under his personal observation, and he marched under Colonel Albert Sydney Johnston to quiet the Mormon troubles in Utah. Upon the outbreak of the War between the States, George B. Anderson was one of the first of those devoted Southerners who resigned from the Army of the United States—indeed, Lieutenant Anderson did not wait for North Carolina to pass her Ordinance of Secession, but resigned on the 25th of April, 1861. Upon tendering his services to North Carolina they were gladly accepted, and he was commissioned colonel of the Fourth regiment of State troops in May, 1861. The organization of the regiment was begun at Raleigh and completed at Garysburg, and it arrived at Manassas on July 29th. Though too late to participate in the battle of Manassas, the Fourth regiment did garrison duty in that vicinity till March 8, 1862, when it was ordered to Clark's Mountain, near Orange Court House. Though only a colonel in rank, Anderson was now acting as commanding officer of a brigade composed of the 49th Virginia, the 27th and 28th Georgia, and the 4th North Carolina, Major Bryan Grimes acting as colonel of the last-named command. On the 8th of April orders were received to repair to Yorktown, and here some skirmishing occurred. On the 4th of May, 1862, Yorktown was evacuated and the brigade, under Acting Brigadier General Anderson, repaired to Williamsburg, where the troops on May 5th witnessed for the first time a pitched battle, though not allowed to participate, being held in reserve. The first important battle in which the troops under Anderson were engaged was at Seven Pines, otherwise known as Fair Oaks, and his conduct in this fight won for him a commission as brigadier general. At Seven Pines, Major Grimes commanded the Fourth regiment, and Anderson was commander of the brigade, though not yet a brigadier general in point of real rank. One of the many acts of prowess which won fame for Colonel Anderson occurred at Seven Pines, when he seized the flag of the 27th Georgia Regiment, whose color-bearer had been shot down, and led a charge which captured one of the enemy's works. President Davis was present at this battle, and immediately promoted Colonel Anderson, who received his com-

mission as brigadier general on the 9th of June, 1862. The new brigade assigned to General Anderson was composed entirely of North Carolina regiments—the 2nd, 4th and 30th. In the seven days' fight around Richmond, Anderson's brigade won a high reputation, and its commander received a wound in the hand at Malvern Hill. In the Maryland campaign, the brigade formed a part of the command of General D. H. Hill, whose single division held McClellan's whole army in check at South Mountain until the arrival of Longstreet. Having on this occasion held McClellan at bay till Jackson could capture Harper's Ferry, Hill's division three days later, on September 17, 1862, was engaged as the great battle of Antietam, known in the South as Sharpsburg. Here Anderson's brigade was again engaged, and here he received a wound which eventually proved fatal. In this battle, as was usually the case, the Confederates were largely outnumbered, McClellan's force being upwards of 87,000 men, while Lee's was less than 40,000. In this unequal conflict General Anderson was struck on the foot by a minie ball and fell to the ground. At first the wound was not thought to be of a dangerous, or even serious, nature. Together with his brother and aide-de-camp, Captain Walker Anderson, who had also been wounded at Sharpsburg and was afterwards killed at the Wilderness, General Anderson was carried to the home of his brother, Colonel William E. Anderson, in Raleigh. His wound growing worse, amputation was decided upon, but this operation was too late. He died on the 16th of October, 1862. This event cast a gloom over the State, and at Raleigh, the capital, a public meeting, called by the Mayor, was held to take suitable action looking to his burial.

The remains of General Anderson are interred just northward of the Confederate plot in Oakwood Cemetery, at Raleigh, and a white marble shaft marks his resting place. On Confederate Memorial Day, in 1885—May 10th—General Anderson's life and military career were the theme of an eloquent and instructive address delivered by Colonel Alfred Moore Waddell, and from that are obtained many of the facts mentioned herein. Other tributes will be found in the North Carolina Confederate regimental his-

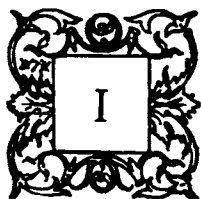
tories, where Rev. E. A. Osborne, formerly a colonel in the Confederate Army, says: "The writer of this sketch knew him well and loved him much. He was a perfect specimen of a man in every way, a graduate of West Point, a devoted churchman, a pure and chivalrous gentleman, as modest and chaste as a woman, as brave and daring as a man could be. His was a very great loss." Later on, Colonel Osborne says: "He had a handsome figure, was a fine horseman, a splendid tactician, had a clear musical voice, a mild blue-gray eye, a fine golden beard, long and flowing, and a very commanding presence. His discipline was mild, but firm; and his patriotism of the very highest order." In the same work, General William R. Cox writes of Anderson as follows: "Physically he was a splendid specimen of young manhood, six feet in height, broad-shouldered, erect and thoughtful, and endowed with a commanding and well modulated voice." More brief, yet none the less forcible, is a tribute to General Anderson by that heroic veteran, Colonel Frank M. Parker, who says: "The State gave no finer soldier to our cause."

While General Anderson was a lieutenant in the United States Army, prior to the war, he was married on November 8, 1859, to Miss Mildred Ewing, of Louisville, Kentucky. To this union were born two children, one of whom died young; the other, George B. Anderson, Esq., still survives.

*Marshall De Lancey Haywood.*



## JOHN BAPTISTA ASHE



IN a letter written by Colonel Pollock in February, 1718, he mentions Mr. Ashe, and about that time John Baptista Ashe married Elizabeth Swann, a daughter of Colonel Sam Swann by Elizabeth Lillington, and a sister of Speaker Sam Swann of the succeeding generation. It is probable that Mr. Ashe located in the Albemarle about the time of his marriage, and that all of his children were born in that section. He was Receiver of the "powder money" at Bath from 1723 to 1726. On January 15, 1724, Governor Burrington appeared in the colony and took the oaths of office.\* Mr. Ashe was a member of the old Wiltshire family of that name, and Edward Ashe, one of the Board of Trade and Plantations, having direction of the colonies, was his kinsman; Burrington had known several members of Mr. Ashe's family in England, and was not unnaturally drawn to him in this new and wild country. By his marriage Ashe had become son-in-law to the wife of Colonel Maurice Moore and a nephew of Edward Moseley, and was allied with the family connections of the Porters and Lillingtons, which represented the interests of the people in opposition to the interests of the Lords Proprietors. Governor Burrington, through his association with Ashe, thus fell under the influence of the leading inhabitants of the Province, and he undertook to advance their purposes, being

\*Vol. 3, p. 371.

in full accord with them. Indeed it appears that the officers representing the Lords Proprietors informed their lordships that Burrington was preparing to bring about a revolution similar to that which in 1719 had wrested South Carolina from their control; so that on the 7th day of April, 1725, the Lords Proprietors appointed Sir Richard Everard to succeed Burrington. In July Everard took the oaths and dissolved the Assembly which was favorable to Burrington. The new Assembly met in November, Maurice Moore being the Speaker, and Burrington a member of the Legislature, along with Mr. Ashe. The Governor had undertaken to prorogue this Assembly before its meeting, and Ashe was appointed one of the committee to draw up a protest. The House, however, having transacted some business, of itself adjourned to the following April agreeably to the prorogation. When it met, Ashe, who represented Beaufort precinct, was chosen Speaker, Speaker Moore not appearing. The House again resolved that the prorogation was illegal, and an address was prepared and approved and ordered to be signed by the Speaker, and delivered to the late Governor of the Province, Burrington; and another address was prepared and signed by the Speaker and sent to the Lords Proprietors, in which the House severely arraigned the Chief Justice, Attorney General, and the Secretary as "evil-minded persons, who have for many years been the common disturbers of the peace and tranquillity of the Province." In all these matters Ashe was the warm friend of Burrington, and when Burrington because of his disorderly conduct was indicted, he appeared as attorney for him.

Burrington had joined with Colonel Maurice Moore in opening up the Cape Fear, and in 1725 grants were located at Old Brunswick and along the river, by Burrington and others. And there Ashe also located in 1727. Burrington's relations with Ashe were so friendly that on his departure from the Province and return to England he left all of his affairs in Ashe's hands.

In 1729 the Crown purchased Carolina, and Burrington was appointed the first Royal Governor of North Carolina. He recommended the appointment of Ashe among others as a member of



his council, and doubtless expected his aid in his administration. But now conditions were changed, and Burrington, on his return in 1731, instead of being friendly with what might be called the Popular Party in the Province, was required by the Crown to assert prerogatives which Ashe and his friends would not submit to. It soon appeared to the Governor that "Ashe was altogether bent on mischief."\* In the council he organized opposition to the Governor and eventually controlled that body against him,† while in the House Edward Moseley exerted a potent influence in opposition to the Governor's instructions. A great contest ensued, characterized by bitterness and personal enmity. Both Ashe and Burrington resorted to the most extreme measures, and on one occasion Burrington caused Ashe's arrest and incarceration. So resolute and determined were the leaders of the Popular Party to maintain what they regarded as their chartered rights, that during Burrington's entire administration not a single Act was passed by the General Assembly. At one time it was in contemplation that Ashe should go to England to obtain Burrington's recall, but the communications of Ashe and Rice, covering charges of misconduct on the part of Burrington, and the Governor's own indiscreet letters to the Board of Trade, rendered that unnecessary; and in the summer of 1733 Gabriel Johnston was appointed to supplant him; but Governor Johnston did not arrive in the Province until June, 1734.

Ashe had joined his family connections in making the settlement on the Cape Fear, which at that time was a wilderness separated by a great distance from the inhabited parts of Carteret precinct, of which it formed a part—and it may be stated in passing that many of the early deeds and grants for land on the Cape Fear are recorded at Beaufort.

On the formation of New Hanover Precinct and the passage of the Currency Act of 1729, Ashe became Treasurer of the new Precinct, and retained that office until his death. While he owned lands on Rocky Point, and had a sawmill higher up the Northeast River, his residence plantation was at Old Town; and he died

\*C. R. Vol. 3, p. 332.

†C. R. Vol. 3, p. 331.

there in November, 1734. He left two sons and one daughter, the latter becoming the wife of George Moore, a son of "King" Roger Moore. The youngest son, Samuel, born 1725, was afterwards Governor of the State, 1795-1798; the eldest son was General John Ashe, born in 1720, and distinguished for his Revolutionary services.

As some indication of the ideas then prevalent on the Cape Fear, the following extract is made from the will of Mr. Ashe: "I will that my slaves be kept at work on my lands, that my estate may be managed to the best advantage, so as my sons may have as liberal an education as the profits thereof will afford. And in their education I pray my executors to observe this method: Let them be taught to read and write, and be introduced into the practical part of arithmetic, not too hastily hurrying them to Latin or grammar; but after they are pretty well versed in these, let them be taught Latin and Greek. I propose this may be done in Virginia, after which let them learn French. Perhaps some Frenchman at Santee will undertake this. When they are arrived to years of discretion, let them study the Mathematics. To my sons when they arrive at age I recommend the pursuit or study of some profession or business (I would wish one to the law, the other to merchandise), in which let them follow their own inclinations.

"I will that my daughter be taught to write and read and some feminine accomplishments which may render her agreeable, and that she be not kept ignorant as to what appertains to a good housewife in the management of household affairs."

*S. A. Ashe.*





## JOHN ASHE

**J**OHN ASHE, the eldest son of John Baptista Ashe, born in the Albemarle region in 1720, is spoken of by the historian Jones as the most chivalric hero of the Revolution. His career, at least, was remarkable for its dramatic episodes. At ten years of age he was bereft of his mother, and at fourteen he lost his father, himself the oldest of three orphan children. But even under these unhappy circumstances, his early life was fortunately cast. His uncle, Speaker Sam Swann, eminent for his virtues and public worth, was his guardian, and he was raised at Rocky Point among his kindred, the families of Colonel Maurice Moore, Edward Moseley, the Porters, Swanns and Lillingtons. He was possessed of a competency, and is said to have been educated in England, and he named two of his sons after English kinsmen, from whom he doubtless at that period received some particular kindnesses. He was a reading man and possessed a library which he prized so highly that during the Revolution he made particular efforts to preserve it, secreting it in a huge, hollow cypress in Burgaw swamp.

A man of good address, he excelled as an orator, and perhaps in this regard he was unequalled by any of his contemporaries in North Carolina. When he came to man's estate, his elders were men of affairs, and he had to wait his turn to enter upon official life. At thirty-one he became a Justice of the Peace for New

Hanover County, and the next year he was elected to the Assembly to succeed his uncle, John Swann, then appointed to the Council.

In 1749 John Starkey, of Onslow, who was his friend, had brought in a bill to establish a free school; and an appropriation of 6000 pounds had been made for that purpose. The first day Ashe took his seat as a member of the Assembly, he, Ormond and Starkey were appointed a Committee to prepare an answer to the opening speech of the Governor. The answer was reported to the House by Mr. Ashe and was clear and spirited, and without a doubtful note: "We intend to frame such other laws as shall be judged needful and consistent with the circumstances of our constituents, whereby the public worship of Almighty God may be effectually supported, the virtuous education of our youths promoted, our trade and navigation enlarged and encouraged."\*

At the session of 1754 the Committee of Propositions and Grievances, of which Ashe was a member, reported a recommendation that the 6000 pounds theretofore appropriated for a public school should be used for that purpose; but the exigencies of the moment required the Assembly to divert it for the defense of the western parts of the Province then attacked by the Indians. However, that Assembly allowed an aid of 40,000 pounds to the King, and 18,000 pounds in the same bill was appropriated to establish public schools, but for some reason the Board of Trade always withheld the King's assent, and the law was never carried into effect.

The year 1754 ushered in many changes in North Carolina. In that year the French and Indian War broke out, and Colonel Innes was appointed to command a regiment raised in North Carolina for the protection of Virginia. At that time John Ashe was the senior Captain of Innes' Militia Regiment, and he now became Major of that Regiment;† and he was also an Aide of Colonel Innes, and as such went to Virginia for him on military business. He continued an active member of the Assembly, always employed on important matters; and at its session in December, 1758, when

\*C. R. Vol. 4, p. 1332.

†Vol. 5, p. 163.

the Assembly appointed an agent for the Province in London, it appointed a Committee of Correspondence to communicate with its agent, composed of Speaker Swann, Barker, Starkey, George Moore and John Ashe.\* At the same session "Mr. Ashe, according to order, laid before the House an address to his Majesty," in which after mentioning the expense the province had borne in defence of the Colonies, the Assembly asked that the allowance the Crown was expected to make by way of reimbursement "might be used in purchasing a glebe for each Parish, and erecting and establishing a free school in each County."† The address was ordered to be presented to the King, but Ashe's plan for free schools was not to materialize. Governor Dobbs had other views, and the fund allowed by the King was eventually dissipated through the contrivances of the Governor.

The antagonism between the leaders of the Assembly and the Governors, which began in the proprietary times and was more pronounced after the purchase of the Province by the Crown, continued with increasing violence during Governor Dobb's administration. The Assembly, under the control of Swann, Ashe and their associates, claimed the exclusive right of naming the Treasurers, the Agent at London, and Public Printer, and of laying taxes and directing the payment of all public moneys. The Governor denounced these leaders as being a "junto whose purpose was to absorb the powers of the Governor and Council." It was indeed a long and obstinate conflict, the popular leaders being insistent on establishing and maintaining the rights and liberties of the people and the rightful powers of the Assembly.

At the Assembly of 1762 Swann declined to serve longer as Speaker, and Ashe, who had constantly risen in importance, succeeded him; and at the Assembly of February, 1764, he was re-elected to that commanding position. At the session of November, 1764, a new element entered into the political situation. Parliament had adopted a resolution that the Colonies should be taxed to support the Empire, and in June a Committee of the Massachusetts Assembly addressed a circular letter to the other Colo-

\*Vol. 5, p. 1087.

†Vol. 5, p. 1094.

nies on this subject. On November 17th Speaker Ashe laid this communication before the Assembly, and a Committee composed of the Speaker, Starkey, McGuire, Harnett and Maurice Moore was appointed to make a suitable reply to it.\* In their answer North Carolina expressed her concurrence with Massachusetts.†

Another sharp conflict over the exclusive rights and privileges of the House, not only as against the Governor and the Crown, but as against the Council, also made this session memorable; and at its close the House formally resolved: "That the Treasurers do not pay any money out of any fund by order of the Governor and Council without the concurrence or direction of this House."

Governor Dobbs, then quite old, died on March 28, 1765, and Colonel Tryon, who had arrived some months earlier as Lieutenant-Governor, entered on the administration, and convened the Assembly at New-Bern on May 3rd. In addition to provincial matters, the purpose of Parliament to tax America now became a cause of irritation and excitement. That was a question so novel that public opinion was not entirely settled. In June, Otis of Massachusetts first suggested a Continental Congress, and that course was later determined on. In North Carolina the feeling was so strong, says Bancroft, "that the inhabitants set up looms for weaving their own clothes; and South Carolina was ready to follow their example." At the May session the Assembly had been prorogued till November, and North Carolina had no opportunity of appointing delegates to that first Continental Congress, which met on October 7th; and indeed, in October, Governor Tryon prorogued the Assembly again until March; and eventually he dissolved it without allowing it to meet again. The Stamp Act, passed in March, was to go into operation in the Colonies in November; but although William Houston had been appointed Stamp Master for North Carolina, the stamps had not yet arrived from England. Nevertheless the people of Wilmington and of the Cape Fear determined that the Act should not be enforced in the Province. There were several great popular demonstrations against the Act, and, on the 16th of November, Houston, having

\*Vol. 6, p. 1296.

†Bancroft.

come to Wilmington from his home in Duplin, was seized by the people under the leadership of De Rosset and forced to resign his office.\* Two days later Governor Tryon had fifty of the gentlemen of the Cape Fear to dine with him at Brunswick, and they told him that they could not permit the act to be enforced; while John Ashe, the Speaker, warned him that it would be resisted to blood and death.† On November 28th the stamps arrived, but, there being no Stamp Master, remained on shipboard. There was, however, a general cessation of business throughout the Province, although there was no cause for an outbreak until in January, when two merchant vessels coming into the Cape Fear were seized because their clearance papers were not duly stamped. Some days then elapsed before the law officers determined what course the Government should pursue. In the meantime the leaders on the Cape Fear were arranging their plans. The Mayor of Wilmington resigned, and Moses John De Rosset, a strenuous leader against the Stamp Act, was elected to replace him. Rocky Point for a generation had been the residence of Moore, Moseley, Swann, Ashe and Lillington; and it was still the centre from which emanated the influences directing public action. The people of Onslow, Duplin and Bladen were brought together at Wilmington to meet those of New Hanover and Brunswick; and they entered into an association:—"Detesting rebellion, yet preferring death to slavery, . . . we hereby mutually and solemnly plight our faith and honor that we will at any risk whatever, and whenever called upon, unite and truly and faithfully assist each other to the best of our power in preventing entirely the operation of the Stamp Act."‡ Of this association Bancroft says: "Still more bold, if that were possible, was the spirit in North Carolina." On that occasion John Ashe was the leading spirit. He was now to make good his warning to Governor Tryon that the people would resist to blood and death. Like some John Hampden he drew his friends around him, and at the meeting at Wilmington, on the 18th of February, he and his kinsman, Alexander Lillington, and Colonel Thomas Lloyd became "Directors"

\*Vol. 7, p. 168.

†Vol. 7, P. Notes 111.

‡Vol. 7, p. 168c.

to direct the movement;\* and General Hugh Waddell was appointed to marshal and command the citizen soldiery, numbering near 1000 armed men.† It was not a mob, but an orderly movement of the people under civil authority of their own appointment, with the military subordinate to the Directory, at the head of which was the Speaker of the Assembly. Accompanying the Directors were the Mayor and corporation of Wilmington, and gathered around them were all the gentlemen of the Cape Fear‡—a glorious cavalcade of patriots intent on a high purpose and full of high resolve. But it was treason. Well might the eloquent Davis exclaim: "Take care, John Ashe! Hugh Waddell, beware!" Marching to Brunswick, Fort Johnston was seized, the Crown officials arrested, the war vessels of Great Britain defied, their commanders constrained to surrender the detained merchant ships, and the Stamp Act was annulled in North Carolina. In triumph the people returned to their homes victors over the government and the King's forces. The effect and influence of this daring and victorious movement on the spirit of the Province can neither be estimated nor portrayed.

In a few months the news came that the obnoxious Act was repealed; and that brief period of storm and rebellious action gave place to one of great joy and demonstrations of loyal attachment to the King; and in the midst of the rejoicing a new Assembly was elected. Governor Tryon had manifested his indignation at the course of Judge Maurice Moore, Ashe's brother-in-law, during the Stamp Act times, by suspending him from his office, and he keenly felt the conduct of the other insurrectionary leaders. However, only the Southern counties had been offensive in their action, and the public men in the other counties had not been drawn into actual rebellion. The Assembly met in November. Ashe did not attend for some days after its meeting, and John Harvey of Perquimans county was chosen Speaker. Ashe, however, entered actively on the business of the Assembly, and together with Fanning and Robert Howe was appointed on a Committee to prepare an address to his Majesty on the repeal of the Stamp Act. This

\*Vol. 7. p. 172.

†Vol. 7, p. 174.

‡Vol. 7, p. 174.



address was manly and patriotic. It referred to the action of the Colonists, to their apprehensions, to the burdens "much too heavy for us to bear," to their late unhappy situation, and expressed joy and thankfulness at the action of the King and Parliament in repealing the Stamp Act, "as thereby the happiness of your subjects is secured and fixed upon the true basis of public liberty;" throughout it all, however, there were expressions of love and loyalty to the best of Kings, and a declaration of "the glory and happiness of the inhabitants of this your Province of North Carolina to look upon themselves as part of the British Empire."\* From Boston to Savannah joy and loyalty filled the atmosphere. In the ecstasy of the moment, the Assembly, ignoring its long and persistent denial of the King's prerogative to fix the seat of government at New-Bern, magnanimously petitioned the King to locate it there, and appropriated ten thousand pounds to build a palace for the Governor at that place.

Ashe's old friend Starkey, the Treasurer, had died before the previous session of the Assembly; and a dispute had arisen, as in former years, between the Assembly and the Council as to the exclusive right of the Assembly to nominate the Treasurer, and at that session the vacancy was not filled. The Governor had, however, appointed Sam Swann temporary Treasurer; and now the Legislature was to elect to the office. The Assembly nominated Ashe; the Council, insisting on its rights, nominated Lewis De Rosset. For a time neither body would recede; but eventually the Council agreed itself to nominate Ashe, thinking thus to save its claim to share in the nomination; and he became Treasurer of the Southern District.

In 1768 the Regulators having raised a riot at Hillsboro, Governor Tryon called out the militia of Rowan and Mecklenburg Counties to overawe them, and John Ashe accompanied him on that expedition as Major-General. Again in 1771, when the Regulators broke up the Court at Hillsboro, Governor Tryon determined to suppress them by a display of military power. The Legislature had made no provision for this movement, and there were

\*Vol. 7, pp. 397-408.

no funds to pay the expenses. Montfort, the Treasurer of the Northern District, refused to advance any money; but Ashe, the Treasurer of the Southern District, not only supplied what funds he had, but issued his own notes to pay the expenses. As the result of Montfort's action, no troops were raised in the Northern section. Again was Ashe appointed Major-General, and as such he participated in the Battle of Alamance; and when, after the Regulators had been dispersed and Tryon had received his appointment as Governor of New York, he turned over the command of the army to Ashe and hastened to his new post.

The next Assembly met Governor Josiah Martin in November, 1772. The Assembly in 1768 had directed the Sheriffs not to collect a certain tax of three shillings; and at this session it proposed to direct the Sheriffs not to collect a certain tax of one shilling. The Governor declared that this would be a fraud and dissolved the House before it could place the resolution on its journal. Ashe was a member of the House, and, as Treasurer, obeyed its will in this matter and refused to require the sheriffs of his district to collect the tax. The Governor dissolved the Assembly, and there was a new election. When the Assembly met in January, 1773, Harvey was chosen Speaker in place of Caswell; and by a combination between Caswell's friends and the Northern District, Caswell defeated Ashe for Treasurer. At the Assembly that met in December, 1773, a standing Committee of Correspondence was appointed to communicate with the other Colonies, and Ashe was one of its members. The Governor dissolved that Assembly on March 28, 1774, because of disagreements over the court law and its action and spirit in regard to Continental affairs. In the progress of events the Port of Boston was closed that spring, and in July the inhabitants of the Cape Fear Counties met at Wilmington and issued a call for the election of deputies to the first Provincial Congress;\* and of that body Ashe was a member. Writing on September 1, 1774, Governor Martin alludes to the fact that "the Northern Counties were then controlled by Sam Johnston and that the Southern Counties were supporting John Ashe; and

\*Vol. 9, p. 1016.

that these counties, usually in antagonism, were now in harmony, and he apprehended every embarrassment from their union." That Fall, Committees of Safety began to be formed in the several counties, and Ashe was a member of the Committee for New Hanover. He realized the necessity of resolute action, and, again gathering his friends around him, he led the way for the people to follow. Having met the situation in 1765 and 1766 with a strong hand, he now prepared to be armed and ready for the crisis he saw approaching. He had long been Colonel of the New Hanover Regiment. He now freed himself from duties to the Crown, and declining a reappointment tendered him by Governor Martin,\* began to organize troops independently of the Government. On March 10, 1775, Governor Martin wrote:† "It is rumored that in the counties of Brunswick and New Hanover, the people, at the instigation of some of the leaders, have met and chosen field officers for a regiment; and that Mr. Robert Howe, formerly captain of Fort Johnston, is training some people in the former county to arms." Elsewhere the Governor reported "that Ashe had declined his appointment as colonel and had accepted the appointment at the hands of the people." It was stated by survivors of the Revolution that he was the first person in North Carolina to receive a military commission from the people. After that time independent companies began to be formed in the other counties.

On March 6th the New Hanover Committee adopted an association that:‡ "We do most solemnly engage by the most sacred ties of honor, virtue and love of country," etc., and they resolved to "offer this paper to all citizens for their signatures." There were some of the inhabitants of the town wavering, and Governor Martin represented to the Crown that: "Ashe had, at the head of a body of 400 or 500 men, menaced the people with military executions if they did not immediately subscribe the association." Without doubt, being now an active leader in the throes of a revolution, Ashe used every influence that could be exerted to infuse zeal among the people, to fix the wavering

\*Vol. 10, p. 48.

†Vol. 9, p. 1157.

‡Vol. 9, p. 1148.

and to overawe those who were disinclined to cast their fortunes with the revolutionists. He was stalwart, bold and determined. With him were his kinsmen, and Harnett and Howe, Moore and Lillington; unhappily De Rosset and Waddell, leaders in 1765, had now passed away. Harnett, Ashe, Howe and Abner Nash were particularly marked out by the Governor as proper objects of proscription because "they stand foremost among the patrons of revolt and anarchy." \*

On May 8th the express with the news of the Battle of Lexington reached Wilmington; intense excitement prevailed; and Governor Martin, alarmed by the organization of an independent company at New-Bern by Abner Nash and his associates, fled from his palace and sought safety in Fort Johnston, reaching there June 2nd. From there he began to communicate with the disaffected in the interior, and he planned to strengthen the fort and garrison it with more troops. In the meantime John Harvey had died, and on May 31st Howe, Harnett and Ashe wrote Sam Johnston urging that another Provincial Congress should be at once held.† On June 12th the Committee of Safety of the Cape Fear counties took an oath of secrecy, and a week later they adopted an association binding themselves "to go forth and sacrifice their lives and fortunes to secure freedom and safety." Three days later, on June 23rd, the Mecklenburg Resolves, supplanting the old government in Mecklenburg County and inaugurating an independent government based on the will of the people, were published in the Cape Fear *Mercury*; and the cry for independence from the interior gave strength to the Cape Fear leaders.‡ Bladen and the sea coast counties "were pursuing the example of Mecklenburg."

Ashe determined to expel the Governor from North Carolina soil and to remove the cannon from Fort Johnston and to destroy the fortifications; and he planned by means of fire-rafts to drive the British cruisers from the harbor. He embodied his forces, and on July 18th, being joined by detachments from Brunswick and Bladen, he marched to Fort Johnston and with his own hand ap-

\*Vol. 10, p. 98. †C. R. Vol. 9, p. 1285. ‡C. R. Vol. 10, pp. 45, 48.

plied the torch to the fort. His plan to drive the cruisers from the river by fire-rafts was not, however, carried into effect,\* and Governor Martin continued on board his shipping, but his communication with the Loyalists was interrupted and very uncertain. The stimulus of this action aroused and nerved the patriots in every quarter of the Province and the Revolution went forward by leaps and bounds. A month later the third Congress met, and it invested the functions of government in a Provincial Committee of Safety. Royal rule had ceased in North Carolina. Provision was also made to organize military forces. Minute men were provided for, and also two regiments of Continental troops. Ashe desired the command of the first of these regiments; but his brother-in-law, James Moore, who had greater military experience, was preferred to him, receiving a majority of one vote. Without question this defeat was a source of great mortification. His proud spirit quivered with disappointment. But he knew his duty and performed it. Mr. George Hooper is quoted as saying "that he could never forget General Ashe's return from the Convention of Hillsboro in September, 1775. He was in a state of prodigious excitement. His object was to raise a regiment; and he accomplished it. You cannot imagine what a commotion he stirred up. He kindled an enthusiasm in New Hanover and the adjacent counties, of which there is no parallel in the traditions of the State."†

In February, 1776, the Highlanders and Regulators assembled at Cross Creek, and Colonel Moore marched against them, along with his forces being a company of Independent Rangers enlisted by Ashe, and paid a bounty by him out of his own purse; and he fought with them at Moore's Creek. Immediately after that battle the Provincial Congress met and reorganized the militia, appointing brigadier-generals for the different districts. Ashe was appointed to command in the Wilmington District. In April and May the British began to gather in the lower Cape Fear, and the militia of the State was called out to defend Wilmington. The command of that army was with General Ashe, and the force was stated to number over 9,000 men. He hemmed in the British

\*Vol. 10, pp. 142, 143.

†A. M. Hooper's Memoir, *University Magazine*, Oct., 1854.

forces, until finally the fleet sailed away; and, the danger being passed, in August he disbanded his troops. While he thus commanded the army, his brother was President of the Council.

He continued in active service, both in military and civil affairs, being constantly a member of the Congresses, and later of the Assemblies, and, coöperating with the other leaders, directing the affairs of state. In December, 1776, Caswell being elected Governor, Ashe was appointed Treasurer, and in 1777 he was elected by the Assembly, and he held that post until 1781.

When Washington was hard pressed in the Fall of 1777, the State of North Carolina offered to send a force of 5,000 militia to his aid. It being thought that this force would be sent, Governor Caswell on the 7th of February wrote to General Ashe: \* "If the militia shall be ordered to march to the aid of the United States, will it be agreeable to you to command them? If it will, 'twill give me pleasure; otherwise, I think it may be necessary for me to go with them." General Ashe, in reply, said that while indisposed to the command, yet after the next session, if it should be not "expedient for Governor Caswell to go, and should it then be offered, I may perhaps accept it." † That detachment was not raised; but in October a detachment of 5,000 was to be sent to the South, and Governor Caswell wrote to General Ashe: ‡ "I am now apprehensive I shall not go, and cannot think of offering that appointment to any other gentleman than yourself. Let me entreat you to accept it. . . . This request I make to you not only from my own inclination that you should have this command, but also on a full conviction that the troops will more readily turn out; indeed, I have engaged to some of the officers who have turned out here that either you or myself would command them. . . . If you go, I will give every assistance to your treasury office that I possibly can."

It was arranged that Ashe should accept the commission of major-general and undertake this command, the commission being sent him on the 18th of November, 1778, § and Governor Caswell agreeing to perform his duties as treasurer in his absence. Orders

\*Vol. 13, p. 30.

†Vol. 13, p. 55.

‡Vol. 13, p. 256.

§Vol. 13, p. 289.

were issued at once for detachments of militia to be drafted and assembled at Elizabethtown. The method of raising militia troops all during the war was to apportion about fifty to each county, and each county apportioned that number among the various companies. The result was that while a regiment was raised from each district, neither the privates nor the officers of the regiment had any previous acquaintance, but the organization was a medley and mixture, without any element of confidence or cohesive strength. General Rutherford's brigade being ordered out, quickly responded; but the detachments from the other sections of the State were slow in assembling. At length, however, regiments were collected from the New-Bern District, from those of Edenton, Halifax and Wilmington. Another was commanded by Colonel Perkins. Governor Caswell remained at Kinston, urging the troops forward. On December 8th he wrote to General Lincoln, from Kinston: "At length the troops from the Northern and Eastern Districts of this State have crossed the river at this place. The whole, I expect, will join General Ashe at Elizabethtown six days hence; from whence they will be able to reach Charleston in about a fortnight. I am much concerned to know the greater number of the militia who have firearms have such as are by no means fit for service, and many of them have no arms at all. I flatter myself, notwithstanding Governor Lowndes's information to me, that arms will be furnished them."

It was expected that arms would be furnished at Charleston to this North Carolina detachment; but General Rutherford's brigade, which was in advance, got all the arms that could be supplied.

On December 29th, Caswell wrote to Ashe, who was still detained at Elizabethtown, that militia was hourly expected at Kinston; that he was concerned to learn that the troops were so far short of the number ordered out, and he added: "The deficiency in arms and accoutrements I am sensible of, and equally concerned at, but it seems that these deficiencies cannot be removed here. I was led to believe that he (General Lincoln) thought our people would obtain arms at Charleston, and I sincerely hope they will."

When the Legislature met in January, the Governor reported

to that body that of the 5,000 troops called out, he was fearful not more than half had marched, and those badly armed.

Lincoln's forces were posted along the Savannah River, and when Ashe reached that vicinity he was ordered to proceed immediately to Augusta and to cross the river and to take post at Briar Creek, and then himself to return to Lincoln's camp for a council of war.\* He reached Briar Creek on the 27th of February, and in obedience to instructions left his command in charge of General Bryan and attended the council, at which it was agreed that he should cross Briar Creek and strike the enemy at their first post down the river, and clear the way for Rutherford to cross. He reached his camp at noon on March 2d. It was in the depths of a narrow swamp, nearly forty miles long, lying between the creek and the river, and a mile or so from their juncture. Ashe had represented to General Lincoln its unfavorable location, admitting of no escape from an attack in the rear by a superior force. There were but few horsemen with the command; but General Bryan had established a line of heavy pickets to the rear and had sent the Light Horse to obtain information. At 3 o'clock, on the afternoon of the 3d, information was received that the enemy were approaching, about eight miles above. "We immediately beat to arms, formed the troops into two lines, and served them with cartridges, which they could not prudently have been served with sooner, as they had several times received cartridges which had been destroyed and lost for want of cartouch boxes. We marched out to meet the enemy—some carrying their cartridges under their arms, others in the bosoms of their shirts, and some tied up in the corners of their hunting shirts." A few Georgia Continentals and Colonel Perkins's Regiment, on the right of the first line, engaged the enemy. The Halifax Regiment, on the left of the second line, broke and took to flight. The Wilmington and New-Bern Regiments, after firing two or three rounds, followed their example. The Edenton Regiment continued for two or three discharges longer, when they gave way, just as Colonel Lytle with his light infantry and a brass piece came up. He saw

\*Vol. 13, pp. 51, 39.



the impossibility of rallying the troops, and he followed in rear of the fugitives, reserving his fire."

Ashe, who had been in the rear of Colonel Perkins's Regiment and the Georgians on the first line, hurried to check the fugitives, but although assisted by Majors Blount, Doherty, Colonel Perkins and other commanding officers, he was unable to rally them. They made their way to the river, where most of them crossed, while others turned up the swamp and reached Augusta. The loss was ten or twelve killed, about the same number drowned, some missing; but a large majority threw away their arms in their flight. There were about 600 in the camp at Briar Creek, and they were assailed by 800 British Regulars, and their defeat was inevitable. Apparently General Lincoln erred in placing this force at the bottom of a bag from which there was no avenue of escape, except by dispersing through the swamps. A year later he repeated this mistake at Charleston, and himself was forced to surrender his entire command. General Ashe immediately asked for a Court of Inquiry, which, after the examination of many witnesses, decided:\* "That General Ashe did not take all the necessary precautions which he ought to have done to secure his camp, and to obtain timely intelligence of the movements and approach of the enemy; but they entirely acquitted him of every imputation of a want of personal courage, and thought that he remained in the field as long as prudence and duty required." Ashe himself thought that he did everything in his power to obtain timely intelligence of the movements of the enemy; still this inglorious termination of his expedition weighed heavily upon him. Excuses that even form a reasonable justification do not relieve the sting of defeat. The period for which his men were enlisted was to expire on April 10th. They would remain no longer; and somewhat later General Ashe himself returned to his home, keenly feeling the misfortune that had befallen his command. He resumed his duties as Treasurer, but General Lillington having been appointed Brigadier-General of his district on February 4, 1779, he had no subsequent military command.

\*Moultrie's Memoirs, *University Magazine*, Oct., 1854.

In the last days of January, 1781, Major Craig took possession of Wilmington, and from that time onward his Tory bands ravaged the country, making captures of such Whigs as they could find. "Two of the General's sons, having been taken, were confined on a prison-ship and sentenced to be shot. One was Samuel Ashe a Captain in the Continental Line, the other his youngest son, William. A day was fixed for the execution, and it would have taken place if Major Craig had not received authentic information from the Whig camp that a dreadful retaliation was in their power." The General himself took refuge in the recesses of Burgaw swamp. He was betrayed, and a party of dragoons was dispatched to capture him. Attempting to escape, he was shot in the leg and carried a prisoner to Wilmington. While in confinement he contracted the smallpox; but when convalescent was parolled and returned to his home, where he at once made preparations to remove his family to the back country.\*

In October he began this journey, and with his family reached the residence of Colonel John Sampson, in Sampson County. There suddenly the end came. Taken with a paroxysm of pain at 12 o'clock at night, he expired before the dawn of day.

Bright and glorious had been his years of manhood, but disappointment, suffering and calamity marked his exit from the world. The first in North Carolina to begin the Revolution, with arms in his hands, he passed away before Cornwallis's surrender, and without a view of the promised land of independence, and ignorant of the glorious victory which was then to reward and rejoice the patriots who survived him.

Early in life General Ashe had married his cousin, Rebecca Moore, the sister of Judge Maurice Moore and of General James Moore. His eldest son, John, early took arms in the Revolution; his son, Captain Samuel Ashe, commanded a troop of Light Horse, serving in New York and Pennsylvania; William was lost at sea on board of a privateer, and A'Court died in his youth. His daughter Mary, in 1777, married Colonel William

\**University Magazine*, Oct., 1854.

Alston, and was the mother of Governor Joseph Alston, of South Carolina, who married the ill-fated Theodosia Burr. Eliza Maria married William H. Hill, and was the mother of Joseph Alston Hill. Harriet married Dr. Laspeyre. None of his sons left issue, and none of his descendants bear his name.

Speaking of his powers of oratory, Mr. George Hooper is quoted as saying: "He struck the chords of passion with a master hand. His words roused the soul like the roll of the drum or the roar of artillery at the commencement of an action. Every breast heaved, as if with the sentiment of the Athenian orator: 'Let us away! Let us arm! Let us march against Philip!'" Mr. Sam Strudwick, who had "mingled in the fashionable and political circles of the great metropolis of England, speaking of General Ashe, declared emphatically that there were not in the city of London four men superior in intellect to John Ashe."

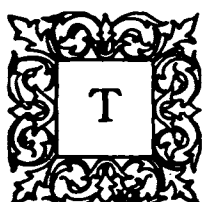
But his chief title to fame rests neither on his powers of oratory nor his intellectual capacity, but rather on his resolute patriotism and bold leadership in starting the ball of revolution that brought independence to his country.

*S. A. Ashe.*





## JOHN L. BAILEY



THE subject of this sketch was a jurist of unblemished reputation and held in the highest personal esteem throughout the State during the period of his activity. He was the son of Gabriel Bailey, who resided in Pasquotank County, where the family had long been settled, and he was born on August 13, 1795. After his preliminary education he entered the University at Chapel Hill, where his scholastic education was completed, and then studied law under Hon. James Iredell, at Edenton. Governor Iredell was one of the most accomplished lawyers, as he was one of the strongest and most superior in intellectual endowments of the public men of the State, and this association with that distinguished and thorough lawyer and gentleman had a most excellent effect on the young law student.

Having received his license, he returned to Pasquotank and established himself as a lawyer in Elizabeth City; but his residence in Chowan had not been without a deeper effect on his life, and on the 26th of June, 1821, he was happily united in marriage to Miss Priscilla Brownrigg of that county, a daughter of Thomas Brownrigg, who was a grandson on his mother's side of Colonel Benjamin Hill, and whose father, Richard Brownrigg, appears to have come from Ireland many years before the Revolution and to have had considerable possessions in Ireland and in Jamaica, as well

as in Chowan County. Easily taking his place among cultured gentlemen of that day in Elizabeth City, in 1824 Mr. Bailey was elected to represent Pasquotank County in the House of Commons and was elected to the Senate in 1827 and 1828. Again in 1832 he was a member of the Senate, and now his reputation as a man of fine judgment and as a Constitutional lawyer was so well established that when delegates were chosen to represent Pasquotank in the Convention of 1835, he was selected to be a member of that body. In the Convention he voted to amend the religious tests for office, admitting Roman Catholics, who had formerly been excluded. He voted against the alteration in the Constitution providing for biennial elections of the General Assembly, but he voted to submit all of the amendments which had been agreed to by the Convention to the people, while Mr. Macon, Judge Ruffin, Mr. Edwards, and others who like himself were Conservatives, voted against that proposition. By the first General Assembly held under the amended Constitution he was elected a Judge of the Superior Court, a position for which he was admirably qualified by his character, his personal traits and his judicial attainments. For more than a quarter of a century he rode the circuits of the State, holding court many times in every county in North Carolina. He wore well on the bench. Every year added to his reputation and to the esteem in which he was held. The people in every part of the State became familiar with his personality, and because of his fine carriage and excellence he attained a high place in the popular regard. He continued on the bench until 1863, when circumstances led him to resign his office, and afterwards he made his home in Asheville, where he resumed the practice of the law and became as highly esteemed in that community as he had been in his old home.

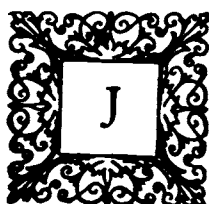
In the salubrious climate of that mountain region he regained his health and attained a ripe old age. He was survived by his sons, Thomas B. Bailey and Hon. William H. Bailey, formerly of Charlotte, but later in life a resident of Texas, but his amiable wife preceded him to the grave by a few years. He died at Asheville on June 30, 1877, in the 82nd year of his age. *S. A. Ashe.*



Yours truly,  
James Craig Braswell



## JAMES CRAIG BRASWELL



JAMES CRAIG BRASWELL, distinguished as a banker and business man, was born near Battleboro, on the 17th day of August, 1868. He is the youngest son living of Thomas P. Braswell and Emily Stallings Braswell, who are still living at the home in which James Craig Braswell was born.

Thomas P. Braswell, the father of James Craig, is of Scotch-Irish descent, and the sterling honesty of the one and the wit of the other of these two great people are concentrated in him. He is one of the most progressive men in Nash County and one of her most honored citizens. He was born in Edgecombe County in the year 1833, and during his youth and early manhood lived in Edgecombe County, where he married Emily Stallings, and in 1866 moved to his present home in Nash County.

Mr. T. P. Braswell's early educational advantages were limited, but by application, constant reading, and extensive travelling there are few better informed men of to-day; being denied many advantages, yet his innate manhood soon asserted itself, and he forged his way to the front, and by his honesty of purpose, indomitable will-power, and sound judgment he has won a high place in the esteem of his fellow-men. He has filled every public position which he has ever sought, and indeed some have been thrust upon him without his desire, and he has declined many, preferring the

quiet of his splendid home to the cares of public life. He has been constable, deputy-sheriff, Commissioner of his county, Chairman of the Democratic Executive Committee, and member of the Legislature, which last position he declined to accept again, and finally retired from public life.

He is to-day the largest planter and land-owner of Nash County, and is extensively engaged in stock-raising, owning one of the finest herds of Jersey cattle in the State. In addition to his farming interests, he is largely engaged in other business. He is the senior member of the large mercantile firm at Battleboro, N. C., of T. P. Braswell & Son, which business is conducted by his oldest son, M. C. Braswell, of whom more will be said later. He is a large owner of real estate in Rocky Mount, Battleboro, Nash and Edgecombe Counties. He is a stockholder in all the large corporations organized in and around Rocky Mount and Battleboro for the past few years, and indeed the organization of many of them can be attributed to him; for instance, Planters' Bank, which bank has gained a State reputation, although only six years old.

Mr. T. P. Braswell realized, as no man can except one similarly circumstanced, the advantage of thorough education, and he has spared no effort to give his children every advantage which education can bestow, and well have they repaid his efforts.

M. C. Braswell, his oldest son, after leaving the University was graduated from a business college, and has taken the very forefront of business enterprises, and is himself an extensive planter. Indeed he is one of the safest and foremost business men of his entire section.

His second son, Dr. R. M. Braswell, was a student of the University and graduated from the Maryland University, and is to-day one of the leading physicians of Eastern North Carolina. He, too, is a large planter and extensively engaged in other business enterprises, having been instrumental in organizing and carrying on much of the business in and about Rocky Mount, and is especially noted for being one of the most open and candid men who ever lived in our midst. No one ever heard it said of him that his position on any question was doubtful or deceptive. He is a use-



ful man to society, for being so open and candid himself, no Dr. Jekyll and Mr. Hyde can live near him without the Mr. Hyde being exposed.

Reared by a loving Christian mother, whose influence is so deeply impressed on him, and benefited by the example of the trio above referred to, the subject of this sketch came upon the stage of life.

He was prepared for college at Horner's Military School at Oxford, N. C., and was graduated from the University of North Carolina in the summer of 1890.

During his boyhood days he was taught by his parents that it was honorable to do manual labor, and when at home for his vacation he was deprived of no pleasure, but his duties must come first. He took part in his father's business in every way, and was educated in the arts of all farm work.

As soon as he left college he sought the commercial field, and for a short time was connected with Dun's Mercantile Agency at Winston, N. C. Remaining there for a short time, he moved to Rocky Mount in 1891, and as the town was just organizing large and extensive tobacco factories and warehouses, he embarked in the tobacco business and commenced the tobacco trade in co-partnership with his father under the firm name of J. C. Braswell & Co., which has since been incorporated. From the year 1891 to 1900 Mr. Braswell was a quiet worker in this business, laying the foundation of the active business which was soon to follow.

On the 12th of June, 1901, he was happily married to Miss Lillian Grizelle Burton of Durham, N. C., and his charming wife has made his home life all that the most exacting could ask. She is the granddaughter of the late Rev. Alex. Walker and the daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Robert C. Burton, and inherited both on the paternal and maternal lines those admirable traits that adorn her character and have made her justly esteemed as one of the loveliest of her sex. Mr. Braswell has since then built and moved into one of the handsomest homes in Eastern North Carolina.

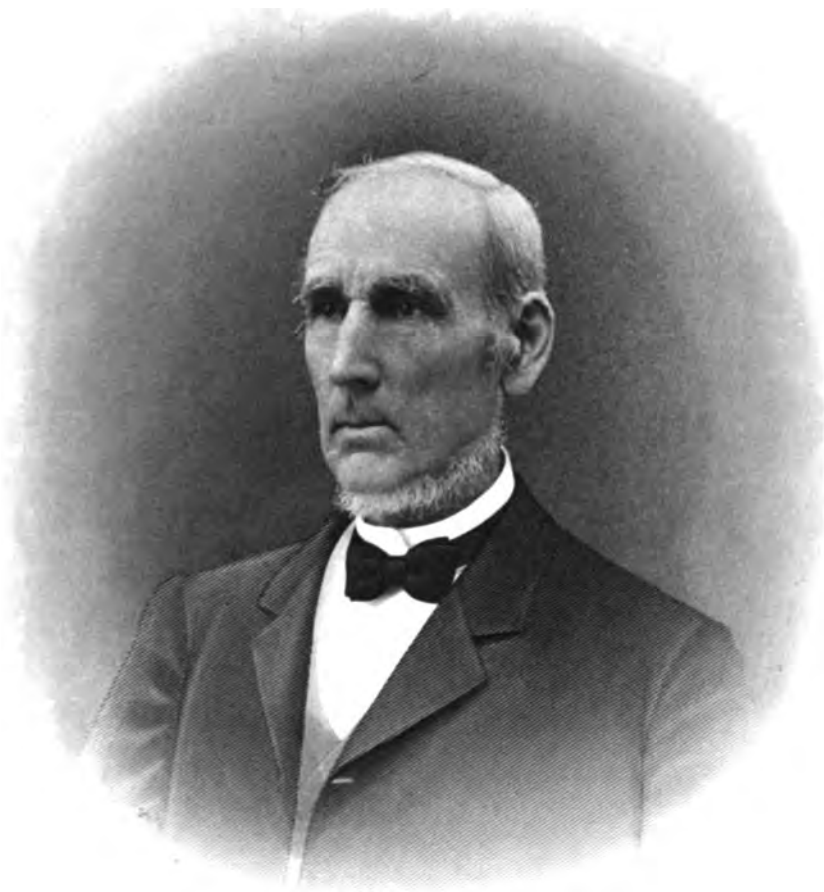
During the past few years especially Mr. Braswell's fine character has become more manifest and more thoroughly recognized, and his worth is appreciated by all with whom he has come in contact.

By his unquestioned honesty, by his never-failing energy, by his absolute fairness, by his determination to get what belongs to him, and to be just as sure that he gets nothing that is not his, by a strict adherence to his motto, "Live within your income, be thorough and exact in business, avoid evil things and men, and have your eyes open to every opportunity," he has won the confidence and esteem of all men with whom he has come in contact; and though yet a young man, he is to-day president of the following corporations: Planters' Bank of Rocky Mount, Rocky Mount Sash and Blind Company, Rocky Mount Hosiery Company, J. C. Braswell Tobacco Company, the Chamber of Commerce, the Marigold Heights Land Company, Secretary of the Planters' Cotton Seed Oil Company, Director of the Rocky Mount Storage Warehouse Company, Wilkinson Bullock & Company Insurance and Loan Office, the Rocky Mount Brick Company, and he is Vice-President of the Rocky Mount Savings & Trust Company. He is also one of the Commissioners of the town of Rocky Mount, and a member of the Board of Graded School Trustees, and Vice-President of the North Carolina Bankers' Association.

These positions of trust to which he has been called by his associates fully attest the confidence and esteem in which he is held.

Adding him to the trio above described, it may be said that they form one of the most honorable families within the limits of that part of the State. They are at all times in the closest touch with each other. They are all men of great public enterprise, fully abreast with the times, not afraid to venture, with plenty of means to back any enterprises on which they may embark, and last but not least, are always together. So it is not difficult to understand that when they venture others are ready to follow.

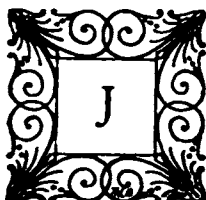
*B. H. Bunn.*



*Jesse M. Bundy*



## JESSE MOORE BUNDY



JESSE MOORE BUNDY, a well known and greatly esteemed citizen of Atlantic City, N. J., was born in Deep River neighborhood, Guilford County, North Carolina, on the 27th of March, 1837. His parents, John and Mary Moore Bundy, were members of the Society of Friends and were people of sterling worth and strict integrity. John Bundy was quiet and unassuming in his manner, but of active mind and sound business ability. He was of Irish descent, his father being a native of Ireland. He was born in 1803 and died in 1885. His occupation was that of farming. His mother, too, was a strong, lovable character, and to her and her teaching of the truths of the Bible her son ascribes much of his success in life.

Thus Jesse M. Bundy received his early impressions of life and his preparation for its duties in that best of all training schools—a well ordered home upon a well managed farm. He grew up strong and healthy in mind and body, assisting in the various kinds of work which at that time more than in our own included many pursuits, as that of blacksmith, carpenter, mason, etc. This developed in the boy a fondness for any kind of mechanical work and made him acquainted with the requirements of various occupations. In after life these qualifications have rendered him capable of doing the work of four or five men in several positions which he has been called to assume, notably as Superintendent of

Guilford College during its inception when new buildings were being erected, brick made, lumber secured, and many men under his sole management.

As a boy he attended the public schools of the day, and later entered New Garden Boarding School—now Guilford College. While there his favorite studies were natural philosophy, physics, and kindred subjects.

During his boyhood his father removed to Indiana and settled at Monrovia. There for a time Jesse pursued farming as his occupation. After attaining his majority he established and operated a successful carriage manufactory, thus exercising the gift which had shown itself from his tenth year—of handling tools and serving mankind through his knowledge of mechanics.

On the 27th of October, 1859, he married Mary Jane Copeland, of Rich Square, North Carolina, with whom he became acquainted while they were both students at Friends' Boarding School. After his marriage he remained at Rich Square for six months and engaged in teaching. In the Spring of 1860, with his wife, he returned to Indiana and settled at Monrovia, which became their home for eighteen years, engaging in manufacturing as before. During those years three children were born, two of whom died in infancy. The surviving child, a daughter, Anna Moore, was married in 1892 to Rev. John B. Jacobs, who only a few months after their marriage was drowned while bathing in a river. Anna and her little daughter Pearl make their home with Mr. and Mrs. Bundy at Atlantic City, gladdening the hearts of their parents as the shadows lengthen in their lives.

In 1874 Jesse Bundy removed to Rich Square, North Carolina; and in 1878 he and Mrs. Bundy became Superintendent and Matron of New Garden Boarding School. They remained in this position for seven years. These were the years of transition from a boarding school to a college, and it would have been almost impossible to find a man who so thoroughly combined the characteristics needed by the occupant of this position as did Mr. Bundy; while his wife was most admirably fitted to manage the large and diverse household. Jesse Bundy seemed equally at home in the

Faculty meeting, or with the student body, with the carpenters, the masons, the brick-makers; and by his quiet dignity and genuine sympathy endeared himself to all who worked with him, from college president to the boy who carried water for the workmen.

Since his residence at Guilford he has been engaged in various pursuits in Indiana, Chattanooga, Tenn., Philadelphia, New York. In the latter State he had charge of a large hotel at Columbia White Sulphur Springs. For several years past Mr. and Mrs. Bundy have made their home in Atlantic City. At first in rented property they conducted a charming home-like hotel, and now in their own new commodious and thoroughly up-to-date hotel, The Archdale, they entertain in such a manner that guests find every convenience of hotel life added to the most cordial, friendly and sympathetic association from those in charge. It is indeed an ideal resort.

Jesse M. Bundy has always remained a Friend and has for many years been an elder in the church. His life is full of encouragement and has been spent in whatever locality his lot has been cast in the cause of truth and righteousness. His is the kind of life which makes, and will continue to make, our nation great, God-fearing, honest, upright in every particular. In politics he has always been Republican, but never a partisan. He is well known in those sections in which he has resided, and in every place he is held not only in esteem, but in affection.

*L. L. Hobbs.*





## BENJAMIN HICKMAN BUNN



BENJAMIN HICKMAN BUNN, distinguished as a lawyer and public man, was born in Nash County on the 19th of October, 1844, and has continued to reside in his native county all through life. His ancestor, Benjamin Bunn, and his brother, coming from London in Colonial days, first settled in Virginia and then removed to Edgecombe County, North Carolina, locating in the section which was later formed into Nash County. The earliest public service recorded of the family was in the Spring of 1776, when Sir Peter Parker's fleet lay in the Cape Fear River and ten thousand North Carolinians stood ready under General Ashe to repel the threatened invasion, among them being Benjamin Bunn, a lieutenant in Captain James Gray's Company from Edgecombe, and the Council of Safety in North Carolina at Wilmington on June 11, 1776, resolved that he should be fully commissioned accordingly. One of his sons, Redmun Bunn, was Senator from Nash County in 1788, and frequently represented his country thereafter in the House, but generally the members of the family appear to have devoted themselves to their private business and not to have sought official station. Enjoying the pleasures of their home life, they were contented to till their fields and cultivate their estates, living in happiness and abundance.





A great-grandson of Benjamin Bunn, Redmun Bunn, successfully united the business of merchandizing to his farm work and exercised a strong influence in his community. He was esteemed particularly for his high sense of honor, his gentleness and chivalric bearing. He had an acute intellect and was known for his keen wit, and was highly regarded in his community for his social virtues. In person he was striking and his manners engaging. Once, being in Macon, Ga., with his eldest son, William H. Bunn, a gentleman, seeing their names recorded at the hotel, approached them, and introducing himself as a citizen of London, said to Mr. Bunn: "I was struck by the name of William H. Bunn; that is the name of one of the Queen's assistant counsellors, and you are the very image of him. I never saw such a likeness.

Mr. Bunn married Miss Mary Hickman Bryan, and they were the parents of the subject of this sketch.

Blessed with perfect health and living in boyhood in the country, where he did light farm work, attending to the stock and engaging in country pastimes, Captain Bunn developed into a strong, healthy young man. He attended the preparatory schools in the neighborhood until he was sixteen years of age, when the war breaking out, on the 20th of July, 1861, he enlisted as a private in Company I of the 30th North Carolina regiment, commanded by Colonel Parker, and served as a private until September, 1862, when he was elected second lieutenant of Company A., 47th North Carolina regiment, with which he remained connected during the rest of the war, although in 1864 he was assigned to the command of the corps of sharpshooters of the brigade. At the battle of Gettysburg the regiment was subjected to a terrible experience on the first day and suffered severely, and on that occasion Captain Bunn was wounded in front of Seminary Heights. He was carried back to the hospital and removed to Winchester, but recovered rapidly and soon rejoined his company, and from that time onward participated in every battle fought by General Lee until he was again wounded, on the 25th of March, 1865. Indeed, he was one of two officers of his command who were on duty every

day of the campaign of 1864 and who participated in every fight in which the division took part.

Shortly before the campaign opened in 1864 he was assigned to the command of a corps of sharpshooters, and he continued on that exposed and arduous service until the end of the war. In the Wilderness campaign, he with his sharpshooters was on duty fourteen out of nineteen successive nights, guarding the front line of the Confederate army. Participating in all the great battles of the war, he rendered efficient service on every field; and being thrown in close contact with his commanders, he acquired the personal acquaintance and friendship of the generals who directed his movements, especially of General MacRae, commanding his brigade, General Heth, commanding the division, and General D. H. Hill, the corps commander, as well as of General Lee himself. On one occasion General MacRae declared his corps of sharpshooters, to which Captain Bunn's company belonged, the best body of men that he had ever seen, the most thoroughly drilled and disciplined. As an illustration of their discipline an incident is narrated as occurring on October 27, 1864, at Burgess's Mills. The brigade being sent forward, Captain Bunn's sharpshooters were advanced to discover the position of the enemy, he being instructed to locate the Federal lines without firing and to apprise the commanding general of their location. He conducted his men through a dense underwood and suddenly emerged into a beautiful open pine forest about 200 yards deep, behind which was an outlying field grown up with tall broom straw. As soon as Captain Bunn reached the pine forest he discovered the Federal skirmish line in full view, and halting they commenced to talk to each other, the Federals calling out: "Come over, Johnny, and join us. Don't you think you have been fighting long enough? Come over and let's make friends," etc. Sending word back to General Mahone, the commanding officer, orders were received to hold his position. Presently, when the brigade had come up, the engagement began, Captain Bunn's sharpshooters advancing rapidly; but as soon as they had passed beyond the forest a Federal line of battle, previously unseen, ran from the broom straw and

fired a volley at them, who, however, were so well trained that by a direction given by a mere motion of Captain Bunn's sword, each one lay as close to the ground as possible and the volley passed over them and not a man in the company was harmed. At that very moment the Confederate line of battle emerged from the woods in their rear and a fearful contest ensued. The sharpshooters, being between the firing lines, lay as quiet as if dead with the balls from both armies whistling over their heads. This situation was relieved only when the Federal line was repulsed and the Confederates marched over the prostrate sharpshooters, who were rejoiced to be once more free from their perilous position.

Captain Bunn passed through all the dangers of that campaign without harm, but on the 25th of March, 1865, before Petersburg, he received a wound in his right hand cutting the sinews of all his fingers and breaking several of the bones. He was taken to the Winder hospital and there remained until the Sunday morning when Richmond was evacuated. Having dressed for the first time since he had been wounded, he walked from Richmond to Danville and then proceeded by rail to Rocky Mount, arriving there the day Lee surrendered.

His brother, Elias Bunn, who was adjutant of the 12th North Carolina regiment, was wounded at Hanover Court House on May 27th, at the very beginning of the seven days' fight around Richmond, and after lingering about a month, died on July 2nd. His other brother, William H. Bunn, was captain of a cavalry company and was killed on the battlefield at Burgess's Mills.

On the return of peace, Captain Bunn at once began the study of the law with his uncle, Hon. W. T. Dortch, of Goldsboro. His grandfather had died at the early age of 26, and his grandmother married a second time, Mr. William Dortch, and their son, Hon. W. T. Dortch, a half-brother of Captain Bunn's father, subsequently married Captain Bunn's first cousin on his mother's side, and there were intimate relations existing between the uncle and nephew, and Mr. Dortch admirably prepared him for the bar. Receiving his license in 1866, he began to practise at Rocky Mount

the next year, and soon made his impress on his community as a fine and competent lawyer.

When his business was thoroughly established he had the good fortune to be happily married to Miss Harriet A. Philips, a lady of very superior charms and accomplishments, and a daughter of Dr. James A. Philips, a prominent physician of that section.

The loss of his two older brothers threw much responsibility upon him and led to unusual exertions to perform his duties and to win a high position in life. A strong and practised speaker, he was appointed as a sub-electoral in the Seymour and Blair campaign of 1868, and he has engaged in every political campaign since then. In 1875 he was elected a member of the Constitutional Convention, and rendered conspicuous service as Secretary of the Committee on Privileges and Elections of that body, whose work was most important in preventing the control of the convention from passing into the hands of those who were not favorable to any constitutional reform. Captain Bunn was also instrumental in having important legislation adopted, being one of those who regulated the calendar of work and arranged the same before the convention each day, the convention being almost a tie and all matters being passed by the vote of the presiding officer.

In 1880 he was a delegate to the National Convention that nominated General Hancock, and he made a strong campaign in behalf of that distinguished Federal general, whose troops he had fought on many a battlefield. He represented Nash County in the General Assembly in 1883, and upon the appointment of a joint committee on The Code, the usual rule was varied and the compliment of being chairman was conferred on him, although only a member of the House, while several very distinguished lawyers represented the Senate on that committee, which was composed of twenty-two members.

The next year he served as Presidential elector, and for six years, beginning in 1888, he represented his district in the Congress of the United States and was very close to the Speaker of the House of Representatives, who conferred upon him the chairmanship of one of the important committees, the Committee on

Claims. On this committee he performed arduous legislative service, examining into many claims and drawing up reports for the action of Congress. As an illustration of his exhaustive work, in his report on the bill for the relief of J. M. Lanston, he set forth the whole sum expended for expenses in every contested election since the organization of Congress. His report in the 52nd Congress on the French Spoliation Claims was also exhaustive. While he made many fine addresses in the House, his speech on the Federal Election Bill was probably his highest and crowning effort, and brought him merited distinction. In it he gave full expression to Southern thought on the relations of the sections under the Constitution, and ably discussed the causes of dissension between the North and the South. This speech was extensively circulated, and portions of it were incorporated into the Democratic handbook for the next campaign. Indeed as a Representative in Congress he performed his duties with great efficiency and to the entire satisfaction of his constituents and maintained a high position among his associates. He retired from public life at the end of the 53rd Congress, having thus far filled every position to which he has aspired.

As a lawyer Captain Bunn has been very successful, excelling as an advocate and as a manager of jury cases, while equalled by but few in legal learning. He has appeared in nearly every capital case which has been tried in Nash County in thirty years, and in every important civil suit since he has been at the bar; and he has been the attorney for the Atlantic Coast Line Railroad Company and for Nash County almost continuously for thirty years.

His motto in life has been, "To live so that the world will say of me after I am dead that 'Here lies an honest man.'" He suggests that any man who is honest and energetic will succeed, and he has never been able to conceal his contempt for deceit in any form.

*S. A. Ashe.*



## HUTCHINS GORDON BURTON

**I**N his day and generation Hutchins Gordon Burton was a leader of the bar in North Carolina, was governor of the State, was a representative in Congress, and filled other offices of honor and trust, as this sketch will show later on. He was a native of Virginia. When three years old his father, John Burton, died. The maiden name of John Burton's wife was Mary Gordon. On the death of his father young Hutchins was left to the care of Colonel Robert Burton, a North Carolina statesman, who was his uncle and then resided in Granville County.

On coming of age Hutchins G. Burton settled in Mecklenburg County, North Carolina. Probably his first appearance in public office was in 1809, when he was elected to represent his adopted county of Mecklenburg in the North Carolina House of Commons. He served in a similar capacity at the session of 1810, and during the sitting of this assembly he was elected (November 28th) to the office of attorney general of North Carolina. This office he held until 1816, when he resigned—his resignation being accepted by the Legislature on the 21st of November in the year last mentioned. Taking up his abode in the town of Halifax, Mr. Burton represented that borough in the North Carolina House of Commons at the session of 1817. Having later been elected to represent his district in the Congress of the United States, he ap-

peared in the House of Representatives at Washington on December 6, 1819, and was duly sworn in as a member. He served until the 23rd of March, 1824, when he resigned. When the next General Assembly met it elected Mr. Burton to the office of governor of North Carolina on December 3, 1824, and four days later, on December 7th, he was duly inaugurated. His term of office ended on December 8, 1827, when his successor, Governor James Iredell, was sworn in. During the time that Governor Burton was in office he was a great social favorite as well as a Chief Magistrate of wisdom and discretion. Possessing oratorical gifts of a high order, he was frequently in demand at the Fourth of July celebrations which were then conducted in Raleigh, as well as elsewhere, on such a grand scale and with so much ceremony and enthusiasm. It was Governor Burton's fortune also to extend an official welcome to the illustrious "guest of the nation," General Lafayette, when that great soldier passed on his triumphal journey through North Carolina in 1825. Chief Justice Taylor and other distinguished citizens were sent as a committee to meet America's great friend when he entered the State from the northward at the end of February, and, after various entertainments at Halifax and elsewhere, the party reached the State Capital on March 2d. On that day a formal speech of welcome was made by Governor Burton and replied to by Lafayette. Both speeches are printed in the *Raleigh Register* of March 8, 1825. In opening his remarks Lafayette said :

"On the first moment of my return to the blessed shores of America I anticipated the pleasure to revisit this State, and here to witness the prosperous result of that independence and self-government the cry for which had been heard from North Carolina long before it was reëchoed in a Continental Congress."

In the same newspaper we find a toast, offered by Lafayette at the entertainment in his honor, which was as follows :

"The State of North Carolina, its metropolis, and the 20th of May, 1775, when a generous people called for independence and freedom, of which may they more and more forever cherish the principles and enjoy the blessings."

In toasting General Lafayette, Governor Burton offered the following sentiment :

"The man who estimated as but dust in the balance all the blessings of this life when in the opposite scale were placed liberty and independence."

Among the numerous other toasts offered at this entertainment were the following :

By Colonel William Polk, who presided :

"Lafayette, the last of the Revolutionary general officers—may the evening of his life be as happy and serene as the meridian of his days has been great and glorious."

By Chief Justice John Louis Taylor :

"George Washington Lafayette, worthy of the great name he bears—alike for his military knowledge, public services and private worth."

By George Washington Lafayette :

"The new ship of the line, *North Carolina*, a source of pride to her friends—may she ever prove a scourge to her enemies."

By State Treasurer John Haywood :

"The battle of Brandywine—that epoch in the history of the war of the Revolution when French and American blood first flowed together in the same brotherly current and was offered a rich oblation on the altar of Liberty."

By Judge Henry Potter :

"Our venerated guest—may the immense temple of freedom which he, as a master workman, contributed to erect, ever stand as a lesson to oppressors, an example to the oppressed, a sanctuary for the rights of mankind."

Part of this toast, said Judge Potter, he had adopted from the language of Lafayette's farewell address to Congress.



By Editor Joseph Gales, of the *Raleigh Register*:

"The people, the source of all political power—may the time soon arrive when their influence shall have its wholesome effects on the governments of the Old World."

When Lafayette proceeded southward on his tour, an escort of honor, both civil and military, again accompanied him, and at Fayetteville—a place named after him—he was again the recipient of a patriotic demonstration before being turned over to the hospitalities of South Carolina.

On the 6th of December, 1825, Governor Burton was elected Grand Master of the Masonic Grand Lodge of North Carolina, and served in that capacity till the 6th of December, 1827. A handsome oil portrait of him is now owned by the Grand Lodge.

Under the old State Constitution the Governor's term of office was one year, with the provision that he could not serve more than three terms in six years. Governor Burton served three terms; and about the end of his last, when he was not eligible for reëlection, President John Quincy Adams nominated him Governor of the Territory of Arkansas; but, for political reasons, this nomination was not confirmed by the United States Senate.

Governor Burton died on the 21st of April, 1836, probably while on a visit to relatives in Lincoln County, as his death occurred in that vicinity. He was interred in the burial ground of Unity Church at Beatty's Ford, in Lincoln. His wife was Sarah Wales Jones, a daughter of the Honorable Willie Jones of Halifax, so celebrated as a Revolutionary statesman. Many descendants of Governor Burton are now living. His widow married Colonel Andrew Joyner, to whom reference will be found in a separate sketch.

*Marshall De Lancey Haywood.*





## ROBERT FISHBURNE CAMPBELL



ROBERT FISHBURNE CAMPBELL was born at Lexington, Virginia, December 12, 1858. His parents were of Scotch-Irish extraction. His father, John Lyle Campbell, A. M., LL.D., occupied with distinction for thirty-five years the Chair of Chemistry and Geology in Washington College, afterwards Washington and Lee University. Professor Campbell's grandfather, Alexander Campbell, who came from the North of Ireland to the Valley of Virginia, was one of the original trustees of Liberty Hall Academy, the germ of Washington and Lee University.

Professor Campbell married Harriet Hatch Bailey, who was born in Pittsfield, Mass., where her father, the Rev. Rufus W. Bailey, D. D., was pastor of prominent Presbyterian churches, founded what is now known as the Mary Baldwin Seminary, in Staunton, Virginia, and was at the time of his death, in 1863, President of Austin College, Texas.

Robert Campbell, the subject of this sketch, became a student of Washington and Lee University in 1873, and was graduated in 1879 with the degree of Master of Arts. He was the winner of two prize medals, one for the highest standing in the schools of Moral Philosophy, English Literature and Modern Languages; the other for the best essay in the University Magazine.



*R. F. Campbell*

After his graduation he taught for three years at Charlestown, West Virginia, Tinkling Spring, Virginia, and Richmond, Virginia, after which he entered the Union Theological Seminary at Hampden-Sidney, Virginia.

He was pastor of the Millboro and Windy Cove churches, Bath County, Virginia, 1885-1889; of Davidson College Church, North Carolina, 1889-1890; of the church at Buena Vista, Va., 1890-1892. In the Fall of 1892 he accepted a call to the pastorate of the First Presbyterian Church, Asheville, N. C., where he has labored for thirteen years with marked success and growing distinction. In 1893 he received the degree of Doctor of Divinity from Davidson College.

Dr. Campbell is a man of broad culture, his range of reading and study having been unusually wide in the fields of science, theology and the humanities. He is an accomplished amateur botanist, having begun the study of plants at the age of eleven in rambles with his father, who was a devoted student of natural science, and having found his chief recreation from the indoor studies of his manhood in excursions to the broad fields and pathless woods in search of some rare plant, or in cultivating closer acquaintance with old friends in the vegetable world. His study of nature is not a mere matter of scientific dissection and analysis. He is one of those "who, in the love of Nature, hold communion with her visible forms," to whom "she speaks a various language." He is a sympathetic student of the poets, especially of such as stoop tenderly over the

"Wee, modest, crimson-tippit flower,"

to whom

"The meanest flower that blows can give  
Thoughts that do often lie too deep for tears."

A few years ago Dr. Campbell presented to the Asheville High School a collection of 160 dried plants, beautifully mounted, with the view of promoting the study of nature, and in the hope that this limited herbarium would constitute the nucleus for a larger collection in the future.

Dr. Campbell is a man of fine executive ability, as is shown by the thorough and effective organization of the large church of which he is pastor, and by the aggressive work of the Home Missions Committee of Asheville Presbytery, of which he has been chairman since the creation of the committee in 1896. But his greatest success has been in the pulpit. He excels in expository preaching, especially in making clear and simple the difficult doctrinal teachings of God's Word. His sermons are closely logical, his style simple and chaste, and his illustrations always illustrate. He never touches a subject without illuminating it. He is mighty in the Scriptures, his quotations and proofs from the Word of God being the aptest, the most appropriate and the most convincing the writer ever heard from any man. He is strictly orthodox according to the standards of the Westminster Confession, the Shorter Catechism and the Epistles of St. Paul; but he does not condemn as heterodox those who do not agree with him in his theological, political and scientific views. He is strict with himself and liberal with other people, because in theory and practice he allows others the same liberty which he demands for himself. The Old Testament prophet says: "What doth the Lord require of thee, O man, but to do justly and to love mercy and to walk humbly with thy God?" St. James, the apostle of common sense, says: "Pure religion and undefiled before God and the Father is this, to visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction, and to keep himself unspotted from the world." Dr. Campbell lives very closely up to this combined standard.

In the Greek Church the officiating priest speaks from behind a screen so as not to be seen by the people lest God's message to them be obscured by the presence and personality of the messenger. This is a fine and impressive ideal, and Dr. Campbell fills this ideal. He is God's messenger delivering God's message to the people, himself invisible, and this unconsciousness of himself, this absorption of his personality in his message, is one of the chief factors in his unusual power as a preacher.

As a presbyter he is one of the most distinguished in the South-

ern Presbyterian Church. He is the chiefest force and power in the Presbytery of Asheville and the founder and mainspring of its home missionary work among the mountaineers, which is the most successful and the most germinant domestic work in the Southern Presbyterian Church.

His paper on the classification of the Mountain Whites, published in the *Southern Workman* and reproduced in pamphlet form, is the ablest, most just and sympathetic statement which has yet appeared of these strong, patriotic and pure-blooded Anglo-Saxon people and of their claims on the country at large for their victories at Cowpens and King's Mountain, for their crippling of Cornwallis at Guilford Court House, for their forming a very large proportion of our army in Mexico, for their splendid bravery in Lee's army, and for the fact that of the 2800 men called for from North Carolina for the Spanish War, 2500 of them came from within fifty miles of Asheville.

Dr. Campbell's activities, though occupied chiefly with his duties as pastor of the First Church of Asheville, are not confined to it alone. His interest in and work for the so-called Mountain Whites has already been referred to. He has taken a deep and intelligent interest also in the Southern blacks. When a boy of only thirteen, in 1871, the college servants of Washington and Lee University, in which his father was professor of science, asked him to teach them to read and write, and he opened a night school, which was attended for several years by many of the most intelligent negroes in and around Lexington. This was with the entire approval of the professors and students of the university; and it was an earnest of the only solution of the negro problem, which is that, if the negroes are to be uplifted, it must be done by their being taught by white teachers of the ex-slave-holding class. "If the blind lead the blind, both shall fall into the ditch." The negro is blind about himself because he cannot see, the Northern white man and white woman are blind about him because they will not see, and neither the one nor the other has followed the Scripture injunction, "Anoint thine eyes with eye-salve that thou mayest see." And so the result of the nation's dealing with the

negro since 1865 (in spite of our having divided our educational bread between his children and ours to the extent of one hundred and thirty million dollars of tax money, in our poverty, since the surrender), is convincing the Northern people that in dealing with the negro the nation has made a mistake in some way and this mistake must be corrected somehow. Dr. Campbell's effort to correct this mistake in his paper on "Some Aspects of the Race Problem in the South" has given him a national reputation. The genesis of this paper was a sermon urging the Asheville Presbyterian Church in particular, and the Southern Presbyterian Church in general, to engage earnestly in giving the Gospel to the Africans among us as well as the Africans in the Dark Continent, as the only "eye salve" through which a man or a race can be enabled to say, "Whereas I was blind, now I see." The publication of this sermon was demanded by all classes in Asheville, Northern and Southern, white and black. Revised and expanded, it was printed in pamphlet form and an edition of 3,000 was soon exhausted. A second edition of 10,000 must soon be followed by another issue. This very able paper has gone to almost every State in the Union and has been most favorably commented on by such papers as the *Springfield Republican*, the *New York Evening Post*, the *New York Nation*, the *Philadelphia Press*, the *Pittsburg Dispatch*, and other leading papers of both North and South. Hundreds of letters were received, many of them from distinguished Northern men, thanking the author for having treated the subject with so much intelligence and breadth of view and in a spirit so fair and kindly. Dr. Campbell is also the author of a sermon on the church fair, published by the Presbyterian Committee of Publication, Richmond, Virginia, which has had a wide circulation and a wholesome influence in correcting erroneous views and harmful practices in the line of Christian benevolence.

Dr. Campbell's paper read before the chief literary club of Asheville on "The Dog in Literature and Life" was most highly commended for its style, its humor, its learning, its culture and its broad sympathy. Some said that Charles Lamb did no better

in the Essays of Elia, and some that Addison did no better in the Spectator.

Dr. Campbell has been in Asheville for thirteen years, and though he has had calls to wider fields with much larger salaries, he has declined to leave the Asheville church, the Asheville climate and the home missionary work of the Asheville Presbytery. If we had more preachers with Dr. Campbell's brains, piety, zeal, culture, liberality, patriotic citizenship and sanctified common sense the Church would soon have the "world for her parish."

Dr. Campbell was married October 8, 1885, to Sally Montgomery Ruffner, youngest daughter of William Henry Ruffner, LL. D., the most distinguished educational leader Virginia has produced since Thomas Jefferson's day. In every church served by her husband she has been universally honored and beloved as the model pastor's wife, prudent, tactful, sympathetic and abounding in good works.

Dr. and Mrs. Campbell have one son, William Henry Ruffner Campbell, born December 17, 1889.

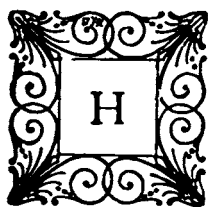
*Robert Bingham.*







## HENRY WELLINGTON COBB



ENRY WELLINGTON COBB was born in Caswell County, North Carolina, on the 21st day of January, 1866, and is therefore just forty years of age. He was the youngest child of Henry Wellington Cobb and Mary Blackwell Howard, and is descended from old English stock. In 1613 Joseph Cobb emigrated from England to Virginia. Just before the Revolution three of the Cobb brothers settled in North Carolina, and one in Georgia: while the oldest brother moved North. One of his maternal ancestors, Henry Howard, was a Revolutionary soldier and took part in the battle of Guilford Court House.

Until the subject of this sketch had reached the age of fourteen years he remained at home upon the farm in Caswell County, doing light farm work during the summer months, and thus early formed those habits of industry which have had such a marked influence upon his career. During the winter months he attended such public schools as the country afforded, and from time to time, subscription schools supported by the more substantial farmers in his neighborhood. Before he had reached his eleventh year his father died, and at the tender age of fourteen years this country lad left the parental roof in order that he might lighten the burden of a widowed mother and began his battle with the realities of life. He secured a position in a retail dry-goods store in Danville, Virginia, and while there, even at this early age, when it would



John W. Cobb, President of the Board of Directors, 1911

*John W. Cobb*

seem that questions of a serious nature could find no lodgment in the mind of one so young, realized his need of a more liberal education, and notwithstanding the fact that his employment kept him engaged from early dawn until dark, by attending night schools, enlisting the aid of private tutors, and burning the midnight oil he acquired a sound English education, studied the higher branches of mathematics, read in the original tongue some of the masterpieces of the great Latin poets, and thus laid broad and deep the foundation of his future success.

The life of a business man always appealed to him, and in the year 1883, being then just seventeen years old, he entered Eastman College, Poughkeepsie, New York, from which he afterwards graduated in its business course. Returning from Eastman College to Danville, he started in business for himself as a tobacco buyer, and in the year 1885 moved to Greensboro, North Carolina, and continued in the same business. It was while he was engaged in this occupation in Greensboro that his capacity as a business man and his pre-eminence as a judge of leaf tobacco attracted the attention of the officers of the American Tobacco Company and he was offered the position of manager and buyer for this company in Greensboro, North Carolina.

During his residence in that city Mr. Cobb took a lively interest in public affairs, was chairman of the most important committee of the Board of Aldermen, and organized and became the first president of the Industrial and Immigration Association; and to him in a large degree is attributed the remarkable growth and prosperity this city has had during the past few years, and the citizens of Greensboro have watched his career with exceeding gratification, while he, in turn, has never failed to take a keen interest in all that pertains to its welfare and upbuilding, and he still remains one of the contributing members of its Chamber of Commerce.

After a residence in Greensboro of a few years Mr. Cobb was made manager and buyer of the American Tobacco Company and the Continental Tobacco Company with headquarters in Danville,

Virginia. From that point he was transferred to the city of Richmond, Virginia, and again promoted, and after a residence of a few months at this last named city, was once more promoted and made manager of the leaf department of the American Cigar Company with headquarters in New York City. Since that time he has been advanced from manager of the leaf department to second vice-president, then to first vice-president, and to-day occupies the position of first vice-president and manager of the selling department of the American Cigar Company, also vice-president and director of the American Stogie Company, first vice-president and director of the International Cigar Machinery Company, director of the Havana Tobacco Company, Havana Commercial Company, Cuban Leaf Company, Havana American Company, and Porto Rican Leaf Tobacco Company.

On the 25th day of January, 1887, Mr. Cobb led to the altar Miss Jennie Bethell Scales, a daughter of Colonel and Mrs. J. I. Scales, of Greensboro, North Carolina, and two children were born of this union, both of whom, since the death of their mother, live with their father, who has never remarried.

Thoroughness in whatever is undertaken is perhaps the most prominent trait of character of the subject of this sketch. No question which engages his attention is ever laid aside by him until he has mastered its minutest detail. At the time he was first appointed manager of the leaf department of the American Cigar Company, although he was recognized as one of the foremost authorities in this country upon American leaf for plug and smoking purposes, he was nevertheless to a large extent unacquainted with the merits of cigar tobacco and Havana leaf. To the end that he might be thoroughly cognizant of all the details of the onerous duties imposed upon him by his advancement he studied Havana leaf, not only upon the floors of the different warehouses of the country, but also went direct to the Cuban fields and there remained until he was so familiar with the growth, cultivation and treatment of Havana tobacco that he is to-day the successful manager and director of the largest cigar manufacturing corporation in the world.

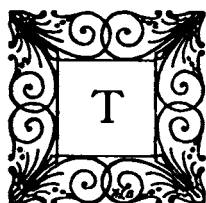
Among those things to which he attributes the success he has attained he places, above all, the influence of his mother, and after that, industry and uncompromising honesty, study and extensive reading, and the habit of thinking deeply upon any question which engages him. Asked the question what suggestion from his experience and observation would he offer to young Americans as to principles, methods and habits which he thought would contribute most to attain true success in life, his businesslike reply was: "Be industrious, honest, and absolutely thorough in whatever is undertaken." These principles he has made a part of his life.

*Zebulon V. Taylor.*





## MICHAEL J. CORBETT



HE life of M. J. Corbett is another striking illustration of the oft repeated statement that, in this country, the door of opportunity stands ajar and that any man who will may enter therein and achieve abundant success, if only he be a *man*; one possessing high integrity, energy, industry, prudence and sound sense; that family influence, fortune and friends are not essential to an honorable career, the only essential being character—manhood.

Mr. Corbett was born in Lismore, County Waterford, Ireland, on the 4th day of August, 1856. His parents were of good social position but of limited means, his father, John Corbett, being a small farmer and contractor. He was sent to the National Schools, then, as now, under the charge of the Christian Brothers, until his eighteenth year, when he stopped school for the purpose of assisting his father in the work of the farm; but this soon proved insupportable to the bright lad whose ambition had been stirred by the tales of the success of his countrymen in the great Republic beyond the sea, and receiving encouragement from an uncle, the late Mr. James Corbett, then a resident of Wilmington, he determined to try his fortune in the same fair land.

With the blessings and prayers of his parents, who had reluctantly consented, Mr. Corbett left his home and arrived in the city of Wilmington, N. C. on the 28th day of March, 1878, and immediately set to work to obtain employment.



*M J Corbett*

The fates seemed propitious, and he at once secured a temporary position with the firm of Preston Cumming & Company, supplying the place of a clerk on vacation. On the return of the latter he passed into the employ of B. F. Mitchell & Company, at a nominal salary, but so alert and attentive to duty was he that the firm, apprehensive of losing his services, gave him a substantial increase of salary. At the end of the year he secured more remunerative employment with Mr. J. B. Worth, who was just starting in the peanut business; but the venture was not satisfactory, and Mr. Worth decided to move to Petersburg, Virginia, and requested young Corbett to go with him; but the offer was declined, and he went into the service of a well known firm, which, to the astonishment of the community, soon failed, leaving Mr. Corbett again without employment.

This was a great disappointment, but it did not daunt his ardent spirit. He decided to go to New York, and went on the first steamer.

During his connection with B. F. Mitchell & Company and Mr. Worth he had, by diligence, obtained a more competent knowledge of the peanut business, the methods of cultivation, the sources of supply and the best markets, and also some acquaintance with the largest dealers in New York and throughout the country.

Before he left for New York, Mr. W. I. Gore, knowing his thorough reliability, informed him that he had a large supply of peanuts and requested him to take samples and try to sell some of them on commission. His efforts were successful beyond his fondest expectations.

In the meantime he had received several inquiries from Wilmington as to his return. Having felt the fascination of the life of that goodly city, being drawn by the most potent of earthly attractions, and encouraged by his previous success and by numerous letters, Mr. Corbett again set sail for Wilmington. He was met at the dock by Albert Gore, son of Mr. W. I. Gore, with a message from his father to make no business engagements until he could have an interview with him.

At that interview, held the next morning, Mr. Gore offered to



furnish the capital to enable Mr. Corbett to start in business for himself; but fearful of debt and apprehensive of the result, Mr. Corbett asked for time to consider the proposition.

Pending its consideration several persons had offered him employment, and he returned to Mr. Gore almost persuaded to decline his generous offer. But Mr. Gore, kindly, large hearted, sagacious man that he was, saw that the root of success was in this young man and strongly urged the venture. To this kindly insistence on the part of Mr. Gore the city of Wilmington is probably indebted for one of its most progressive and useful citizens.

The result of this business venture was thus simply and modestly told by Mr. Corbett many years afterwards:

"I started out, rented a store and decided to handle some goods on commission, as the risk of losing money would be less in that than in any other kind of business. As my good friend predicted, the first year's business showed a profit, and the second year made a still better showing. In the meantime Mr. Gore had taken his son Albert into his business as partner, and at the end of the second year they proposed to combine my business with theirs and form a general partnership, to which I agreed. This partnership continued and prospered until 1888, when Albert Gore withdrew.

"In 1892 Mr. W. I. Gore decided to give up active business and withdrew, Albert taking his place. As I was then the senior partner, the style of the firm was changed from W. I. Gore & Co. to Corbett & Gore. In 1894, on account of failing health Albert Gore was forced to give up active business and withdraw, leaving me sole proprietor of the business. In 1901 I had the business incorporated under the style of 'The Corbett Company.'"

This meagre statement fails to give the impression that, by this time, Mr. Corbett had amassed a considerable fortune and was one of the most potent factors in the industrial life of the community.

In addition to the successful conduct of his regular business Mr. Corbett has been largely instrumental in the promotion, organization and management of many important and flourishing enterprises in the city of Wilmington.

He is vice-president and one of the original directors of the People's Saving Bank, one of the original directors of the Murchi-

son National Bank, president of the Wilmington, Southport and Little River Company, member of the firm of Stone & Company, and one of the board of managers of the James Walker Memorial Hospital.

While not a politician in the ordinary acceptance of the term, Mr. Corbett has always taken a lively interest in public affairs and has always been quick to respond on occasions, such as the splendid movement for decent government in 1898, to calls upon his purse or person; and his aid and counsel have generally been sought in emergencies and never refused.

He is also prominently identified with the social life of the city, being a member of all the oldest and most exclusive social organizations, having been on the board of managers of the Cape Fear Club for many years, a member of the Carolina Yacht Club and of the Cape Fear Golf Club.

In 1884 Mr. Corbett was married to Miss Mary Josephine Deans, and to her inspiration and counsel he has always attributed in large measure the credit for his success in life. Their union has been signally blessed; ten children have been born to them, nine of whom are still living, and although Mr. Corbett, possessing much of the social charm for which the sons of Erin are justly noted, is much sought after, he is distinctly a family man, and it is in his home circle surrounded by family and troops of friends that he is seen at his best.

He has paid three visits to his parents and to the scenes of his childhood; one in 1887, again in 1892, and finally in 1903 he took over his oldest two daughters.

Mr. Corbett is a member of the Roman Catholic Church and firm in his adherence to its principles. He takes an active interest in church affairs and without ostentation is very liberal in the support of the church and her charities.

*George Rountree.*



## JOSEPH JOHN COX

**J**OSEPH JOHN COX was the second child of Jonathan E. and Elizabeth Hare Cox, and was born in Northampton County in 1845. His parents were prominent members of the Society of Friends, and in 1859 were employed to take charge of the school at New Garden as superintendents, which position they filled for many years with great satisfaction to the board of trustees.

In consequence of this event, the education of Mr. Cox was obtained at New Garden Boarding School under the thoughtful religious care of his parents. As a student he was distinguished for diligence in study, sterling integrity of character, great kindness, and purity of life. These traits that marked his youth by Christian grace were developed and strengthened from year to year until in business, in church affairs, and in family life he was known as a man of wide sympathies, of remarkable strength and symmetry of character, tender-heartedness, and modesty of pretension.

Dr. Cox made good use of the excellent instruction at New Garden School, and became well prepared for the study of medicine, which he pursued first in Cincinnati, and later at the Jefferson Medical College, in Philadelphia, where he graduated in 1871.

As a physician he was successful and greatly beloved, administering to physical suffering in the spirit of the Great Healer.

On account of the strain on his bodily strength he gave up, in later years, the practice of medicine, and engaged with energy and great ability in manufacturing enterprises in the city of High Point. In this, as in every other undertaking of his life, he achieved success, and was esteemed as the leading citizen of his city. He served many years as mayor, and was such at the time of his death.

Dr. Cox manifested an enthusiastic interest in public charities and enterprises of all sorts, and coöperated by personal effort and by donations with Christian philanthropists, and was a leading member of the church to which he belonged, the Society of Friends, in all matters pertaining to its welfare. His ability and interest were recognized by North Carolina Yearly Meeting; and his service for twenty years as a member of the board of trustees of Guilford College was greatly appreciated, he having served for several years as chairman of this body, occupying this position at the time of his death. He had at heart the deepest interest in the growth and usefulness of the college, subscribed to its endowment, and in every way possible sought to promote its influence for good in North Carolina. Every phase of Christian activity appealed to him, and his sympathy was not circumscribed by any narrow bounds of sect or of country. His interest was world-wide.

At the time of his death, which occurred in his fifty-eighth year, Dr. Cox was superintendent of a Bible school, an elder in the Friends' Church, in which capacity he had served for several years, treasurer of the Foreign Missionary Board of North Carolina Yearly Meeting, treasurer of the largest factory in High Point, director of one of the banks, mayor of his city, and chairman of the board of trustees of Guilford College, in all of which places of trust he was conspicuous for ability and fidelity.

While possessing superior ability, Dr. Cox was a modest man. He did not advertise himself; he did not seek the upper seat in public assemblies. There was no self-display in his nature. He sought the golden mean between extremes, and there found the path of duty and followed it to the end. No man had the con-

fidence of the people in a higher degree than he. His counsel was sought in business, in the affairs of the church and in the private life of those who needed the advice of a sympathizing friend. From whatever point of view he was beheld, Dr. Cox stood forth as the upright man, conservative, yet progressive, and, although self-depreciative rather than over-confident, possessing that quiet dignity and strength of character which, coupled with his untiring energy, brought to pass great results.

Although rich in men of noble character and great achievements, our State may well take a just pride in the pure and lofty soul that animated Dr. Cox throughout his life; for an example of self-control, serenity of spirit, and spotless character, such as he exhibited, is a rich and noble heritage which deserves to be handed down to posterity, that in it all the sons and daughters of our beloved State may be permitted to share.

*L. L. Hobbs.*





Yrs truly  
Edwood Cox



## JONATHAN ELWOOD COX



NO history of the industrial achievements in North Carolina during the last two decades would be complete without the name of J. Elwood Cox. It is to be noted that, in addition to the many successful enterprises and various movements projected in the industrial circles of this State with which he has been prominently and actively connected, his church and the great cause of education have found in him an ardent and generous supporter. A life which has so impressed itself as to win title to preëminence among those who have wrought so successfully for themselves and their communities in the strenuous life of the past twenty-five years must, of necessity, furnish some lessons worthy of study.

He is of sturdy English lineage. Joseph Cox, who came from England and built a home in the county of Perquimans, was his earliest known ancestor in this State. This godly man was both a teacher and a preacher. He held the faith of the humble Quakers of that day, and was one of the pioneers in the promulgation of its simple tenets in that and the neighboring counties of the tide-water section of North Carolina. He was the great-grandfather of the subject of this sketch.

Another great-grandfather was William Rogerson, who early enlisted in the Revolutionary War, and was a gallant soldier. He was with Arnold in his celebrated and desperate move-

ment on Canada in 1775, and was wounded in the assault on Quebec.

In the neighboring county of Northampton J. Elwood Cox was born on the 1st day of November, 1856. His father, Jonathan E. Cox, was likewise a teacher and an adherent of the Quaker faith. In 1858 he quit his Northampton farm to accept the position of superintendent of the Quaker school at New Garden, in Guilford County, which he successfully conducted for many years prior to its development and change into Guilford College. He was at the helm and was the main stay of this school in its darkest hours. From 1858 until his death he was a pillar of strength in his church and contributed generously of his time, labor and means to the cause of education throughout the entire State. His was the simple life of the farm, on which he reared and trained his boys under the rigid regulations of farm government. But the school and the church were the field in which were displayed the purity and the strength of his real character and the lofty ideals of his life. In private and in public place he stood for the things that are pure, true, just, honest, lovely and of good report. His character was the embodiment of the virtues of the model citizen. He wore, in the language of Tennyson, "the white flower of a blameless life." The alumni, students and friends of Guilford College should yet cut and hew from the enduring granite of his native State a monument and place it on the beautiful campus of the college in honor of his good name and sainted memory.

The son, Elwood, was less than two years of age when he was transplanted from Northampton to the Guilford County farm, on which he was reared and trained in the habits of a simple and industrious life. The habits of steady, systematic work and the robust health there acquired were the groundwork of his successful career. The farm was the athletic field on which were developed his physical powers.

During these years he completed the course of study at Guilford College (then New Garden), after which he pursued for a year a business course in a business college of Baltimore. While attending the Baltimore college, he felt for the first time the touch



and pulse of the outside world and realized the necessity of a better and higher education. After this he spent one year in teaching and study. During the years of 1874-75 he attended Earlham College, at Richmond, Ind., where he completed his collegiate course. In 1876 he entered into the serious battle of life, starting as a travelling salesman for one of the Guilford County nurseries, and by frugal habits and strenuous work soon succeeded in the accumulation of several thousand dollars. On the 23d day of October, 1878, he was married to Miss Bertha E. Snow, the only daughter of Captain William H. Snow, the founder and father of the real High Point, to which place he moved in the year of 1880. The issue of this marriage is one daughter. This union proved to be a most important and fortunate turning-point in his life. It led him into contact with that sterling, aggressive and progressive citizen, Captain Snow, who was the original pioneer in the hardwood industry of North Carolina. His quick eye was not slow in foreseeing the future in this line of manufacturing. Shortly after his removal to High Point Mr. Cox erected a small factory for the manufacture of shuttle blocks and bobbin heads. It was at that time a new industry. Prior to this the farmer of the Piedmont belt had attached no value whatever to the persimmon, dogwood, the hickory, the oak and other growing timber, and had annually destroyed them by fire in order to put them out of his way. It is no wonder now that his business from the beginning was a success beyond his most sanguine anticipations, and has largely assisted in bringing to High Point the second largest pay-roll in the State. He extended his operations as his business developed and increased, and step by step laid the foundations of the great business which has grown and expanded until it covers, through its branch plants, nearly every State of the South, and until its finished product reaches nearly every country of Europe. This great work of Mr. Cox was so quietly done that it had brought him a fortune before the public had recognized or appreciated the size or significance of this great industry. So firmly has he established his business and so wisely has he extended its operations that he now supplies the demand

of nearly the entire world for shuttle blocks. This demand long ago exceeded the capacity of his plant at High Point and made necessary the establishment of a number of plants throughout the Southern States. The successful operation of these plants and the handling of their products has not only given Mr. Cox a reputation at home and abroad, but it has brought a large amount of money to his immediate section of the State.

The remarkable success of Mr. Cox in this one great industry has enabled him to be of great service to his community and his State in other fields of activity. Scarcely less important has been his work along other lines. It was in the latter part of the year '88 and in the early part of the year '89 that he, in conjunction with less than half a dozen citizens of his own town, and with a few leading citizens of Randolph, resolved to secure the location and construction of a railroad from High Point to Asheboro. There was no more active spirit in that enterprise than Mr. Cox. The result of that movement was a charter and the creation and organization of the High Point, Randleman, Asheboro & Southern Railway Company, and the construction of that railroad, which was put into operation in July, 1889. Mr. Cox was one of the first directors of that railroad company, and has been a director of the same continuously since its organization. For years he has served as one of the executive committee of this company.

In 1891, when the new life and the constantly expanding business of High Point demanded greater banking facilities, Mr. Cox was the leading spirit in the organization and establishment of the Commercial National Bank of that place, and in recognition of his public spirit and fine business qualifications the stockholders thereof, at their first meeting, elected him president of the same, which position he has held continuously for fourteen years. Under his directing genius the Commercial has grown into one of the safest, strongest and most successful financial institutions of the country.

Mr. Cox was also one of those who originated and launched the Home Furniture Company—one of the first and most successful furniture plants of his town. He was also a charter shareholder

in the creation and organization of the Globe Furniture Company—another large plant established for the manufacture of the higher grades of furniture. The conception of the idea of a consolidation of the Home and the Globe into one company—the Globe-Home Furniture Company—making it the largest furniture plant in the South, with a paid-up cash capital of \$175,000.00, originated in his fertile brain. He is and has been, since the said consolidation, president of this company, and has contributed much to its great success.

Mr. Cox is also a director of the Greensboro Loan and Trust Company, one of the strongest financial institutions of Greensboro, whose deposits now approach the two million mark, and likewise president of the Southern Car Works of High Point, and several other industrial and manufacturing companies in his own and other towns.

This crude sketch conveys but a vague idea of his busy life, and is the merest outline of that part of his life-work with which the public is more or less familiar. Separately and alone he has invested much of his accumulations along lines which are telling in the uplifting and upbuilding of his town. The Elwood Hotel of High Point—one of the handsomest structures, and one of the most attractive and creditable hotels of this State—is a striking proof of his public spirit. A beautiful home and numerous other handsome edifices bear witness to the fact that his money is not idle, and in numberless ways has contributed to the substantial growth and extension of his home town.

Aside from these monuments which line the way of his strenuous business life, his left hand has not known what his right hand has done along more modest lines for the real weal and betterment of his fellow-men. He is the executive head of the local school board, and has led in all movements having for their object the increase of school facilities and the extension of educational advantages to every child of his town. Outside of his own community his efforts have been equally noteworthy in generous contributions to the great educational awakening in North Carolina. As chairman of the board of trustees of Guilford College,

and as treasurer of the Guilford College Endowment Fund, he has rendered invaluable aid in the financial support of that institution. No man in or out of his church has labored more diligently or more effectively for an ample endowment of his Alma Mater. In the affairs of that institution his wise counsel and generous hand respond to every emergency. In all plans for its enlargement and improvement he invests the same energy of thought and diligent tenacity of purpose that he does in looking for dividends from his own private affairs. It is no secret, or, if it is, it need not longer be, that through his diplomacy and tactful efforts large accessions to the endowment fund have been secured. His colleagues on the board are authority for the statement that he is never too busy to meet any draft which this institution, endeared by the memories of his boyhood and hallowed by the sacrifices of his sainted father, draws upon his time or his purse.

But the money value of the life of J. Elwood Cox is not its only value. There is another side to this busy life, so prolific in results. It has assets other than the dollars coined through strenuous toil. It is paying dividends other than those covered by the semi-annual check. It is floating bonds other than those whose coupons are clipped and counted on the cold deposit slip. Its earliest investment was under the guidance of parental love. Its sheet anchor is that of the church of the father and the mother who were of the salt of the earth. The wayward steps of youth were shadowed by its tender benedictions. In the devious and unballasted ways of manhood, when lured by the siren haunts of lust and mammon, its pole-star is still the church. The real secret then of the success of Mr. Cox may be found in the simple, frugal habits of his life, moulded and patterned in conformity to the simple tenets of his church, and after the manner of the pure home life of his Christian parents.

It has fallen to the lot of this writer in the rapidly shifting vicissitudes of this life to know something of many men of this generation, and among the uncounted number he has never known a cleaner life than that of J. Elwood Cox. During a personal acquaintance covering more than a quarter of a century, and ap-

proaching intimacy in many things wherein there was no need for veil, there never fell from his lips anywhere or at any time a syllable which could not have been uttered in the presence of his devoted wife. His deeds, too, are as chaste as his language. In thought, in word and in daily walk his life is as pure as that of a woman. It is neither marked nor marred by the taint of tobacco or the use of any stimulant. This is so rare in the average life of the commercial world, where men grow wild and reckless in the mad pursuit of filthy lucre, that it needs to be told and preserved on record. It is not to be claimed that the life of J. Elwood Cox is perfect, but among the many portraits which adorn the pages of these interesting volumes there is not one which will hold its own longer under the white light of inspection than this imperfect portraiture.

*G. S. Bradshaw.*





## DAVID IRVIN CRAIG

**T**HE Reverend David Irvin Craig was born in Orange County, North Carolina, February 11, 1849. His ancestors on both sides were of the sturdy Scotch-Irish stock. They emigrated to this country in 1747, after the disastrous battle of Culloden. Landing at Philadelphia, they located and lived for a short time in Pennsylvania, and were under the ministry of the Reverend James Campbell. They left Pennsylvania about the year 1749 and came direct to North Carolina, refusing to stop in Virginia, because, as they said, "We have had enough of Popery and Churches established by law." They first located in the old "Haw Fields," in Orange County, but finding that the titles to the lands were in dispute, they removed to the waters of "New Hope," in Orange County, and permanently located between Hillsboro and Chapel-Hill, about the year 1752; and to this day portions of the lands purchased from the Earl of Granville, under the reign of King George, together with the deeds, are still in the possession of the family. One of their first acts was the erection, about 1760, of a Presbyterian church, which they called "New Hope." This church still lives in a fairly prosperous condition, and the building now occupied is the fourth since 1760.

The first known ancestor of the subject of this sketch was William Craig, who was born in Scotland, but emigrated to



*D. I. Craig-*

America from Ireland. His wife was the "widow Long," whose maiden name was Margaret Logan. They had four sons and one daughter, all of whom were born in the "Old Country." The names of the sons were John, David, Samuel and James. David was an officer in the Revolutionary War and died in 1785. He has many descendants in Tennessee and in the Western States. His wife and children settled on lands in Maury County, Tennessee, received as pay for his Revolutionary services. His brother, James Craig, was a private soldier in the Revolutionary War, and was the great-grandfather of Reverend D. I. Craig. This man, James Craig, married Rebecca Beall. They had four sons and four daughters. The name of one of these four sons was David Wilson Craig, who married Isabel Nelson, of the "Haw Fields;" and these were the parents of James Newton Craig, the father of Reverend D. I. Craig.

Mr. James Newton Craig was a farmer, mechanic and magistrate, a man of influence in his community, of strong mind and high spirit, methodical in his habits, and of a lofty sense of honor. His wife was Mary Emiline Strayhorn, a daughter of Major Samuel Strayhorn and Mary Moore, and a granddaughter of William Strayhorn, son of Gilbert, who was severely wounded in the battle of the Cowpens. This lady, the mother of Reverend D. I. Craig, is still living at the ripe old age of eighty-two, and her influence upon the intellectual, and especially upon the moral and spiritual, life of her children has been very marked.

In his country home young Craig learned industry and self-dependence by hard manual labor, working on the farm with the slaves during the Civil War. Books were the delight of his leisure moments, the love of learning developing early and inspiring him to overcome the difficulties arising from the disastrous results of the Civil War in the way of securing an education. In 1867 he entered Hughes' Academy, at Cedar Grove, N. C., and after several enforced interruptions completed in 1874 a four years' course of study under the careful instruction of the then well-known educator in Middle North Carolina, Samuel W. Hughes.

In 1874-5 he was a student at Davidson College, and in 1878



graduated from the Theological Seminary of Columbia, S. C. On May 31st of the same year he was licensed to preach the Gospel by Orange Presbytery in Greensboro, N. C.

On July, 6, 1878, he began his ministry at Reidsville, N. C., soon after the death of his lamented predecessor, the Reverend Jacob Doll. The Reidsville Presbyterian Church at that time numbered only thirty-five members, and Bethsaida and Oak Forest Churches were grouped with it in one pastorate. On June 1, 1879, Mr. Craig was formally ordained pastor at Reidsville, and for nearly twenty-seven years he has served this church. During this time he has received and declined a number of calls and overtures to other fields of labor. Though greatly bereaved by death and afflicted financially, the church has enjoyed a steady and healthy growth under his long pastorate, there having been added to its roll nearly 400 names, an average of more than fourteen per year.

On September 7, 1881, Mr. Craig was most happily married to Miss Isabel Gertrude Newman, of Columbia, S. C. She was born in the city of Baltimore, Md., and is a daughter of Joseph Newman and Joanna Burke, who being ardent Southerners, removed from Baltimore to Columbia at the beginning of the Civil War. Beautiful in person and character, of a sunny spirit and in fullest sympathy with his ministerial work, she has been to him an ideal helpmate. Their home, blessed with four children, is a most happy and hospitable one.

As a preacher and theologian Mr. Craig is well equipped, conservative, and thoroughly orthodox. He believes with all his heart that the whole Bible is the Word of God, and preaches it with an authority and assurance born of absolute conviction. His sermons are richly instructive and evangelical, well arranged, and clearly expressed. His delivery is earnest and animated, his prayers humble and fervent. His whole bearing in the pulpit is characterized by that persuasive blending of solemnity and tenderness which marks the true ambassador of Jesus Christ, which we can explain and describe only by that sacred but much abused word, unction. With a cautious and conservative temper, a horror of the sensational, and a deep aversion to controversy, Mr. Craig

combines high spirit, warm feelings, and strong convictions, which on proper occasions he never hesitates to declare and defend.

His popularity and usefulness have not been confined to one town or congregation. For many years he was the efficient agent of Home Missions in Orange Presbytery, and a member also of the Home Mission Committee of the North Carolina Synod. By the Synod he was elected sixteen years ago one of the original ten Regents of the Synod's Orphans' Home, which office he still holds. In the eminent success of this noble institution Mr. Craig's administrative fidelity and wisdom have been a continuous factor. For ten years he has been the Stated Clerk of Orange Presbytery, and for five years the Stated Clerk of the Synod of North Carolina. His industry and courtesy, his mastery of ecclesiastical forms and precedents, his habits of neatness, accuracy and method, combine to make him in both these responsible positions the ideal clerk.

In 1891 he published in pamphlet form a "History of New Hope Church," containing the fruit of much careful research into the early family history of Orange County, and constituting a work which the future historian of the county and the State will prize. A few years later, by request of Orange Presbytery, he prepared, as Chairman of a Revision Committee, an elaborate Manual of Orange Presbytery, embodying a vast amount of information and eliciting the warm commendation of his fellow-Presbyters. On July 1, 1902, he delivered as an address before the Biblical and Evangelistic Institute at Davidson College a "Summary of Presbyterianism in North Carolina." This was published in the *Presbyterian Standard* of July 9 and 16, 1902, and is a most valuable historical treatise, clear in arrangement, accurate in detail, and showing, especially in the earlier portions, Mr. Craig's marked taste and aptitude for historical research.

But it is probably as a man and a pastor that Mr. Craig has done his greatest work in the world, a work that in the nature of the case cannot be tabulated. He is such a golden-hearted Christian gentleman, so modest, so true, so brave and brotherly and

unselfish, so devoted to whatsoever things are honest and lovely and of good report, so consecrated to his Master, that his influence on all around him, though like the sunlight, silent, has yet been like it, powerful, fructifying, blessed. Though a wise and experienced counsellor in the courts of his church, yet his highest usefulness even there has been perhaps the unconscious influence upon his brethren of his courtesy and fairness in debate, his nobility and gentleness of spirit, his charity in judging others, his freedom from self-seeking, his loyalty to his convictions of truth and duty.

In the homes of his congregation, and of numberless families of other or no ecclesiastical connections, he has been the faithful pastor, the welcome friend, the loving comforter and guide.

On July 5, 1903, the twenty-fifth anniversary of his pastorate was celebrated in Reidsville. His devoted friend and fellow-Presbyter, the Reverend Egbert W. Smith, D.D., pastor of the First Presbyterian Church of Greensboro, N. C., presided and delivered the address. Notwithstanding the chairs that lined the aisles, and were placed in every available spot to add to the seating capacity of the church, numbers had to remain outside unable to enter. Services in other churches were suspended, and nearly all Reidsville turned out, regardless of age, sex, or denomination, to testify its love and admiration. After Dr. Smith had spoken with warmest appreciation of Mr. Craig's character and work, an experience meeting was held, and from ministers and members of his own and other denominations came spontaneous and most loving tributes to his worth. In telling of the good he had done to them strong men faltered and broke down, overcome with emotion. It was a memorable and touching scene, honorable alike to the good people of Reidsville and to their eminent fellow-citizen. For twenty-five years he had borne among them the white flower of a blameless life, and how many homes and hearts its fragrance had sweetened and blessed eternity alone can reveal. If the spirits of the saints in glory are permitted to revisit the scenes and friends of their earthly life, then surely the house that day was bright with the presence of those who had gone up thence, and who from beholding the King in His beauty had re-

turned to look again upon the face of that beloved pastor, whose ministrations had been their guide in life, their comfort in death, and are to-day their grateful memory in heaven.

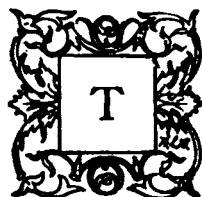
Mr. Craig is yet in the mellow prime of life, with possibly his best work yet before him. Long may it be before the Master calls him to that upper realm where instant vision shall be perfect joy and immortal labor shall be immortal rest.

*Egbert W. Smith.*





## BRAXTON CRAVEN



HE life of Braxton Craven is an emphatic denial of the oft-repeated sentiment that North Carolina is not favorable to the growth of self-made men. That this distinguished educator and preacher was a man in the highest sense of the word is a fact recognized by thousands. That he was "self-made" cannot be doubted by any who are acquainted with his life-struggle, which lifted him from the plane of an obscure farmer boy, without ancestral prestige and social advantages, to that of a masterful educational and religious leader.

Every man who rises into an enviable prominence must be an apt student in one of two schools. He must study nature in its physical aspects, or study what is called human nature. Hence the farm and the schoolroom are the principal arenas in which the elements of greatness are born and nurtured.

Braxton Craven enjoyed rare and ample opportunities in both schools. As a boy on the farm he came in inspiring contact with nature, and during a life of over threescore years he never lost the thrill of that inspiration with which every inhabitant of God's "out-of-doors" is well acquainted. As a teacher from his seventeenth year he studied all the suggestive intricacies and problems of human nature, heeding all its warnings and obeying all its suggestions.

He was born August 22, 1822, among the bold and picturesque



Yours truly  
W. H. O. L. S.

hills of Randolph County. It is fortunate that he found himself in his earliest years an inmate of the home of that honest, God-fearing farmer, Nathan Cox, whose type impressed itself strongly on that whole section.

In this home young Braxton played the part of an obedient son, never shirking work, but ever striving to make himself useful. There was one yearly occasion which carried the eager, inquisitive boy out of his little circumscribed world, and that was when he went with the wagons to Fayetteville, then one of the most prosperous towns in the State. On one of these trips he came into possession of his first book, an ordinary spelling-book. He found it full of voices calling him onward. An intense mental thirst seized him. To change the figure, it was as if a spark had dropped into the boy's magazine. It is not strange that, shortly afterward, he became an avid pupil in the neighborhood school. He drank in facts as the flower drinks in the dew. No amount of physical labor during the day could destroy the charm of mental exercise at night in the glow of the lightwood knot. The elementary branches of an English education were to him a Sybarite's feast.

It was not long before the masterful element in the mind-hungry boy asserted itself in the determination to become a teacher. At the age of sixteen he began to teach a small subscription school in the neighborhood. He so thoroughly mastered Pike's Arithmetic that he made a manuscript which contained the solution of every problem in the book. And he was only a boy of sixteen! While he taught his pupils the elementary branches he himself was climbing high on the hills of knowledge, drinking of every fountain. About this time he was converted and became an active and zealous member of the Methodist Episcopal Church. In 1840 he was licensed to preach. The "boy preacher" became the wonder of the community.

It was not long before he became a pupil in the Quaker school at New Garden. He attended two sessions of nine months each. Here he studied Latin and Greek and Philosophy. He actually memorized the whole of Abercrombie's Philosophy, and wrote

out Latin translations and the solutions of problems in higher mathematics. Having completed the course at New Garden, he accepted a position as assistant teacher in Union Institute. This school was taught in a small house near the site of the present college buildings at "Old Trinity." After working as assistant for two years he succeeded Dr. Brantley York as principal.

On September 26, 1844, he was united in marriage to Miss Irene Leach, of Randolph County, and their union proved most happy. There were four children: Emma, James L., William and Kate. All except the last named are dead.

In January, 1851, the institution was rechartered by the Legislature and became the Normal College. Its work was the preparation of high-grade teachers. The year before the young principal had stood a thorough examination, and had received his diploma from Randolph Macon College. To show that he deserved this diploma, it is sufficient to state that he got into a dispute with the professor of mathematics over the correct solution of a problem in calculus, and won the victory over the professor. In 1852 he received the degree of A. M. from the University of North Carolina. Later he received the degree of D. D. from Andrew College, Tennessee, and LL. D. from the University of Missouri, the chancellorship of which was offered to him in later years.

When Union Institute became the Normal College, Braxton Craven climbed another round on the ladder of his life's purpose. The ascension gave him sincere pleasure, yet it was then that the iron began to enter his soul. Against the most fearful odds, but with a sublime faith, he had begun to make an institution which should measure up to the requirements of a great State and to the stern, vigorous demands of his own high ideal. Having commenced such a task, he must pay the price. He must meet indifference, face prejudice, combat opposition, struggle with poverty, and, at the same time, wear that smile which is worn only by the great soul working to the consummation of a grand purpose.

The history of Trinity College is the history of Braxton Craven. His life-blood flows through every vein and artery of the institu-



tion. It began to flow away back in the days of Union Institute. Trinity is a great college now, the wealthiest and most influential south of the Potomac. Who will say that those currents are not flowing still? Since that dark November day when Craven ceased from his earthly labors great minds and hearts have emptied their richest resources into the life of the college. Yet, after all, the institution represents the life of its great founder. Through classroom and campus his presence is felt; over towers and dome his spirit seems to brood; and in all the endeavors and achievements of the institution his influence still abides.

The first connection between the college and the North Carolina Conference was effected in the latter part of 1851, when the Conference endorsed the college with the understanding that ministerial students should be educated free of charge. The institution was still connected with the State. The amended charter of 1853 directed the Literary Board of the State to lend the Trustees \$10,000 upon the execution of a suitable bond. In procuring securities Craven experienced considerable difficulty, but his determination triumphed, and he had the satisfaction of seeing a handsome brick building erected.

In 1859, by an act of the Legislature, the college became the property of the North Carolina Conference. There was no longer any connection with the State, and the name was changed to Trinity. From 1859 to 1861 the institution enjoyed great prosperity. During these years Dr. Craven battered down much of the opposition to himself and the college. Current expenses were fully met and the prospects for a handsome endowment were very bright—a fact based on the strong personality and commanding influence of the president.

Dr. Craven had a pronounced military spirit. He was well acquainted with the details of Napoleon's battles. He was able to describe minutely the various stages of each battle. So it is not strange that when the Civil War began he took an active part in it. The Confederate archives show that Captain B. Craven was in command of the post at Salisbury, December 20, 1861, and that he was relieved in January, 1862. During this time he was

still connected with the college as president. In 1863 he resigned, and was for two years pastor of the Edenton Street, Raleigh. In the fall of 1865 he was reëlected president, and the doors were opened in the following January with only a few students. He had with his own money liquidated the debt to the Literary Board, before referred to, and, while he held the bond against the corporation, he refused to press his claim and demanded no interest. There was in him nothing mercenary. He spared neither himself nor his money in advancing the interests of the college. He very often supplemented the professors' salaries with money out of his own pocket.

In 1875 the large wing of the building was completed. It contains still an auditorium, which is considered the best in the whole State. The plans and specifications were drawn up by Dr. Craven, and worked out on higher mathematical principles. In the construction of the new wing a considerable debt was incurred and this drove the iron still deeper into Dr. Craven's soul. Until his death this debt was a great burden. It is no compliment to the Methodists of North Carolina that they compelled this heroic man to run the college without an endowment fund, keep up repairs, pay the salaries of professors and all contingent expenses. In 1875 the Treasurer's report showed that the president was underpaid, while three of the professors were overpaid. Yet in 1878 the Conference Committee on Education reported that "over and above all liabilities the property of the college is, at cost value, worth over \$30,000, and yet not more than \$5,000 from all sources has been received by the college in donations. Hence the institution has not only paid the faculty and all current expenses, but has in some way contributed largely to the real property. This is not only unusual, but it is unique in the history of male colleges, and is perhaps the only instance of the kind among American institutions." This is quoted in order to emphasize the administrative ability of Dr. Craven.

From a physical and mental standpoint Dr. Craven was an unusual man. Nature had bestowed on him an ample largess. The body was short and stocky, with a tremendous width of

shoulders. The head was large, with very high forehead; the eyes were dark and deep set; the jaw was square; the lips were thin, and the mouth broad. Every part of his face denoted great strength and firmness. On his chin he wore a square-cut beard. He would command attention in any crowd, and the first thought suggested was that of strength. His eyes could be soft and benignant, or flash like half-hidden fires. His health up to the last year of his life was perfect, and the family say that he never missed a meal in his life on account of sickness. He never had a headache in his life, and he never had a dream. He was capable of great labor. He rarely retired before one o'clock in the morning. Long after the lights were out in the students' rooms the light burned in the president's office. He was able to do with a minimum of sleep, which was always deep and restful.

Upon such a strong physical basis was reared a strong intellectual structure. A mere glance at the brow, mouth and contour of the head would tell at once of a large amount of gray matter. A mind which could drink in the substance of the elementary branches of an English education by the light of the pine-knot at the close of the day of strenuous physical labor, and which enabled the boy only sixteen years old to meet the demands of a school usually taught by a man of mature years, certainly gave promise of high intellectual exploit. And the promise was fulfilled. The writer of this sketch conscientiously feels that in all his experience with men he never met one with such intellectual power as Braxton Craven. He was thoroughly conversant with all the leading events of the day. He was well versed in history. He read every worthy new book of fiction. He was able to read fluently four different languages. He was well read in law and medicine, having taken a course in each. He was able in his examination for a diploma at Randolph Macon College to vanquish the professor of mathematics in a dispute over a problem in integral and differential calculus. He made astronomical calculations. He forced a prominent astronomer in Washington City to change his figures with reference to the points from which the famous solar eclipse of 1869 would be visible.

He applied the principles of calculus to the construction of the roof of the auditorium finished in 1875. Every year he reviewed the senior class in the branches taught in the three preceding years. He could turn from the exposition of great principles in international law to the solution of the most intricate problem in mathematical astronomy or the translation of the most difficult passages in Juvenal or Thucydides. He seemed perfectly at home in every branch of study contained in the college curriculum, which even then in some departments, especially higher mathematics, was as high as any collegiate institution in the South. In knowledge of the classics, the sciences, history and literature he was truly a master. He was no specialist. His mind was omnivorous. Professor Doub said that he was a man of "encyclopædic knowledge."

Dr. Craven's duties as president of Trinity College were mainly administrative, yet he abundantly exercised himself as teacher. In this capacity he evinced preëminent ability. Teaching with him was an art, and that art was born in him. He cared very little for superficial details. He held strategic principles with a very firm mental grip, and it was his effort to enable the pupil to have the same grip. One of the first lessons he taught was the high value and pressing necessity of self-reliance in intellectual development and research. He had a contempt for mere scholastic mechanism. Consequently, he despised rules. He sought to impress on the pupil's mind the glory of being able to make his own rules and blaze an original path through every intellectual forest.

He constantly emphasized the truth that education is not mere acquisition of facts or simple mastery of contents, but that it is a development which reaches far above the mental domain into that higher spiritual atmosphere in which true greatness in God's sight is nurtured. He often said that his supreme object was to "make men." Arnold of Rugby never exerted a stronger and more salutary influence over his pupils than Braxton Craven over the boys and young men whom he taught. His influence was something wonderful. Scattered throughout North Carolina and the whole South are hundreds of men in all vocations whose

hearts give a quick, tender throb when the name of Braxton Craven is mentioned. They say that their strongest impulse toward a high, independent manhood was given by their revered preceptor and that his strong influence abides. The writer of this sketch once had occasion to go into the office of one of our prominent men to ask for a contribution to a fund devoted to the painting of an oil portrait of Dr. Craven. The gentleman responded with a liberal contribution and said, "Certainly I will give something to honor Dr. Craven. He expelled me from college, but I love him." This illustrates Craven's strong hold even upon recalcitrant pupils.

It can be truthfully said that Dr. Craven made men. In looking over the list of the alumni alone, the writer finds the following facts bearing upon living persons: There are nearly one hundred ministers of the Gospel, many of whom have attained to high prominence in North Carolina and other States. Nearly fifty are lawyers, two of whom (F. M. Simmons and L. S. Overman) are United States senators. Four are supreme court judges. One is a judge of the United States district court. Several are members of Congress. No less than twelve of the leading educational institutions have an alumnus of Trinity in the faculty. It is a remarkable fact that the Trinity alumni, with but few exceptions, have been successful in life.

There has never been the slightest difficulty in measuring the manhood and appraising the life-value of Braxton Craven. That he was one of the greatest sons of North Carolina is a fact acknowledged by all who knew him or knew of him. Hon. Josephus Daniels, editor of the *News and Observer*, says:

"About twenty years ago, I am told by a member of Congress, at a meeting of the North Carolina delegation in Washington, they were discussing the big men in North Carolina—the men of big brain and original power—and the consensus of opinion was that the two biggest men in North Carolina were Dr. Craven and Judge Schenck."

As a preacher Dr. Craven was strong and virile. There was nothing abstruse in his sermons. He applied the Gospel to the practical affairs of life. There was no mold upon his thought.

It was as fresh and inviting as a mountain daisy. His intellectual conscience compelled him to be severely logical. The wings of fancy were somewhat clipped. Hence he was not an orator in the popular sense. Yet he oftentimes possessed an eloquence which shook open the very gates of the heart. There was not in the Methodist Church any place of honor that he could not have reached had he been so inclined. He had many friends among other churches. There was a strong bond of friendship between him and Dr. Talmage. His was a broad catholic spirit whose intensity of vision as he looked at truth obliterated all creedal lines. While one of the strongest of Wesleyans, he managed to find something good in every evangelical creed. His was the spiritual nature which apprehended God concretely in human experience rather than in mystic abstractions and psychic visions. He was a man who was acquainted with God and His Son. He talked with the Divine One daily and bore the marks of the Crucified One.

In describing the latter days of Dr. Craven I cannot do better than to refer to the excellent biography of him written by Professor Jerome Dowd, an admiring pupil. Professor Dowd says:

"Soon after his return from General Conference (1882) he became low-spirited, and began to look worn and broken in health. Fifty years of incessant and severe mental and physical activity, together with the financial troubles at the college, had told on his constitution. He lost flesh and power of endurance. He found that his accustomed labors fatigued him more than ever, and that his sleep for the first time in his life was irregular and broken. His health continuing to fail, he went to Piedmont Springs, Stokes County, in July, remaining several weeks. But receiving no decided benefit from the water, he returned to his home, stopping en route to his home to see his friend, Colonel J. W. Alspaugh. Colonel Alspaugh urged him to go North and consult a specialist. To this Dr. Craven replied: 'I will go, but you are trying to cheat death of its victim.' In September, Dr. Craven, in company with his son, Will, made a trip to Baltimore, and consulted Dr. Opie. The physician prescribed certain medicine and diet, and giving such encouragement as he could, sent the patient back home. The physician communicated the fact to Will that the worst might happen at any moment. However, the patient enjoyed his trip North, as he had always enjoyed others, and came back in hopeful and buoyant spirits."

But the iron was piercing to its length. In November, Dr. Craven was compelled to give up his active duties as president. While flesh and blood showed the deadly strain, the spirit was strong and buoyant. There was no abatement of his interest in the usual affairs. It was on the night of November 7, 1882, while he was in the bosom of his beloved family, that the final summons came, and without a word or struggle the great soul went to its God. He was buried in the little cemetery near the college. A plain shaft stands at the head of his grave, and upon it is this inscription:

"Braxton Craven, D.D., LL.D., born August 26, 1822. Died November 7, 1882."

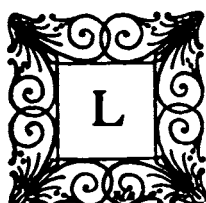
In later years a splendid building was erected by loving pupils and friends on the campus of Trinity College, Durham, and it is called "Braxton Craven Memorial Hall." A more imposing monument it is than the simple marble shaft which stands in the little graveyard at Trinity; yet his true monument is unseen. It is a Voice, unshushed by death, which, while rivers run and seasons come and go, will speak to the generations of the old North State and call them to the high places of manhood and womanhood.

*Thomas N. Ivey.*





## LEONIDAS WAKEFIELD CRAWFORD



LEONIDAS WAKEFIELD, fifth son of William Dunlop and Christina Elizabeth Crawford, was born near Salisbury, Rowan County, on April 5, 1842. His father, who had been a brilliant student and a first-honor graduate of the University of North Carolina, was an able lawyer and political leader. He served his State in both branches of its Legislature, introducing the bill that created Davie County, and afterward representing Davie and Rowan in the Senate. He married the attractive and accomplished daughter of Major Thomas Mull, and after the death of the latter moved his family to his wife's girlhood home. On his old colonial estate, part of the original lands purchased by the Scotchman, Dunn, Mrs. Crawford's great-grandfather, extensive farming operations were carried on through an overseer, while Mr. Crawford gave most of his own time to his law-office; and here the brothers, attending day school in Salisbury and engaging heartily out of school hours in the varied work and amusements abundantly afforded by forest, field and stream, received their daily training and laid the foundation of a sturdy manhood.

Unfortunately, Mrs. Crawford was left a widow when Leonidas was two years old. With much strength of will and force of character she managed the estate, and successfully performed the duties of both parents to her sons. When after some ten year:





*L. M. Crawford*

she was married to Peter M. Brown, Esq., a man of wealth and unusual business enterprise, Leonidas became a resident of Charlotte. A favorite with his step-father, he was used by him outside of school hours in such a way that he gained a rather extensive industrial education and learned to know well many different classes of men. This experience was an invaluable part of his preparation for after life.

When among the first volunteers from this State to the Confederate Army were three of the Crawford brothers, the anxious mother sent her youngest son to Olin high school, in Iredell County, hoping to prevent his volunteering; but six months later, with his mother's blessing, he went out as junior second lieutenant of the Forty-second regiment of infantry. He soon became senior second lieutenant, and was a capable, fearless officer. One who knew the four brothers well said years afterward:

"Their Christian mother sent them out with tears and prayers, and her protecting spirit surely went with them, for they fought like devils and yet never got a scratch."

The first hard fighting of the Forty-second infantry was near Bermuda Hundreds, when after a long and dangerous charge the enemy was routed. Lieutenant Crawford and two other gallant officers were the first to cross the breastworks. Having been entrusted by General Martin with the delivery of an important despatch to General Beauregard, he braved perilous exposure to shot and shell and successfully executed his commission. In the second battle of Cold Harbor the conflict on June 3d was especially fearful, and the Confederate lines were broken at several points. In order to retake these lines a desperate charge was made that night. Lieutenant Crawford, in command of the left wing, reached and crossed the breastworks, but being almost without support, was forced to surrender. At the headquarters of General Hancock he was closely interrogated as to the movements of Lee's army, but as he told even less than he knew they gained nothing. Later he was strongly advised by General Kilpatrick to escape the horrors of imprisonment by taking the oath

of allegiance and going North—advice that appealed in vain to the proud Confederate. He was sent to Point Lookout, and later to Fort Delaware, where he remained until after Lee's surrender. This year of hard prison life, crowded with stern lessons and solemn experiences, was made memorable by more than one thrilling episode.

Released from prison June 23, 1865, Mr. Crawford returned as soon as possible to Charlotte. Pitiful indeed were the changes wrought by the war, and vain seemed the hope of completing his long-interrupted education. Being deeply impressed that his work was that of the ministry, his friends advised that he enter upon it at once. Determined, however, to have better preparation, he reentered the academy in Olin, and a year later entered the University of Virginia. At that time the University of North Carolina was closed and that of Virginia was unequalled in the South. Having neither time nor money to take the full university course leading to a degree, Mr. Crawford applied himself to well-selected subjects, and in two years graduated in the schools of English and Moral Philosophy. During his university course he was active in Christian work. He had been licensed to preach by his home church, and in 1867, while visiting Baltimore, he was called to serve as assistant pastor to Dr. Williams, of Chatsworth Methodist Church. He declined this call and took instead a post-graduate course in Moral Philosophy in the university. Twice afterward he was offered a pastorate in the city of Baltimore, but loyalty to native State and home church induced him to cast his lot with the itinerants of the North Carolina Conference.

In 1868 he was formally received into this Conference, and during a period of twenty years served five churches, completing a four years' term, first at Hillsboro, then at Salisbury, Fayetteville, West Market Street, Greensboro and New-Bern. By untiring energy, studious habits, strong and impressive sermons, faithful pastoral work, and the gracious bearing of a polished gentleman, he endeared himself not only to the members of his own denomination, but to the best citizens in all these places, and it was only the time-limit imposed by Methodist polity that sev-

ered his connection with any people. Both at Fayetteville and at New-Bern efforts were made, though vainly, to engage his services in educational work.

In 1890 he was elected by the unanimous vote of the Board of Trustees to the Chair of Theology in Trinity College. He had just closed the first year of his second pastorate at West Market Street Church, Greensboro, and was reluctant to give up the work of the ministry. At a sacrifice, however, in obedience to the call of the church, he accepted the trust, and throwing his whole heart into the work of his department faithfully served the college for four years. When in 1895, for lack of funds, the trustees were forced to abolish the schools of Theology and of Law, he gladly retired and resumed the work of the pastorate.

During his second year at Reidsville, where he did a fine work, he was elected editor of the *North Carolina Christian Advocate*, then the official organ of the two Conferences in the State. His term of editorship covers a storm period, the true history of which will some day make a most interesting page in the story of North Carolina Methodism. When strong pressure was brought to bear to draw the paper into a movement antagonistic to the State schools, Dr. Crawford, believing this policy to be narrow, unwise, and entirely out of harmony with the true spirit of Methodism, stood true to his convictions, regardless of cost, and though he thus became a target for the opposition, never did he lose his dignity or self-respect nor swerve in the slightest from his position. His high aim was to hold the church in the right relation to the State and State institutions, and so to improve the *Advocate* in its spiritual and intellectual tone that it might be worthy of a place in every Methodist home. Despite serious obstacles, he succeeded in increasing its circulation and making it rank with the best Southern Methodist organs. At the end of six years, in the belief that his purpose was accomplished, he retired from the paper voluntarily.

Always alive to the interests of his denomination, while editing the *Advocate* he bought a lot on Lithia and Spring Garden Streets, Greensboro, near the State Normal College, and with a little finan-

cial aid built a comfortable house of worship, in which he organized a Sunday school and a church, which he served as volunteer pastor. Desirous of making this chapel a self-sustaining charge and of recuperating his own health, on retirement from the *Advocate* he was glad to be appointed the regular pastor, and he continued to serve on a meagre salary for four years. Spring Garden Street Church, well organized in every department, stands a monument to his ability to build from the ground by sheer power to attract and to hold. In 1904 he was appointed to Main Street Church, Reidsville, where the community was as enthusiastic in receiving as the people of Greensboro were sad in losing him.

Dr. Crawford has ever been a friend of education. During his first pastorate in Greensboro, in 1883, when Greensboro Female College was about to be sold at auction to satisfy a heavy mortgage, he determined, if possible, to save it to the church. To this end he visited at his own expense several prominent towns and succeeded in interesting a sufficient number of friends to form a joint stock company to buy the property and continue the Methodist school. For several years he was one of its directors and a large factor in its successful management. In the establishment of the State Normal and Industrial College he saw the fulfillment of a long-felt need of the women of the State. In securing the donation of a site for its location he was a factor, and he has always been one of its staunchest upholders. On his leaving Greensboro strong resolutions were passed by the faculty, and an affectionate letter written by the Young Women's Christian Association, all expressive of the highest appreciation of his pastoral service to the college during his residence in the city. Largely through his efforts the secondary schools of his Conference were freed from debt and established upon a firmer basis. He is a trustee of Weaverville and Rutherford Colleges, and of Davenport College for Young Women. For fourteen years treasurer of his Conference, he has successfully managed its financial interests. He is chairman of its Sunday School board. He is chairman of the board of managers of the Greensboro City library,

and has long been the beloved chaplain of the Greensboro camp of Confederate Veterans.

Dr. Crawford has always felt that he sustained an irreparable loss in the interruption of his education by the Civil War. He also realizes that the life of an itinerant Methodist minister, with its frequent changes from place to place, is not favorable to broad scholarship and accurate learning. But he has economized time, studied seriously both men and books, and thus reached a high standard. Central College, Missouri, and Weaver-ville College, North Carolina, conferred upon him the degree of D. D. In May, 1901, the College of Bishops of his church appointed him a member of the second Ecumenical Conference of world-wide Methodism, which was held in Washington City, his only colleague being General Robert B. Vance.

Dr. Crawford has often said that the essentials to success are a high and definite aim, industry, self-reliance, temperance in all things, and abiding faith in God. These, together with an intimate knowledge of human nature and rare tact in dealing with people, are characteristic of the man himself. By the intelligent and influential he is recognized as a strong preacher and a safe leader. His manner of presenting the truth is peculiarly his own, having a directness and subtle power which make it appeal both to the heart and the intellect of his hearers. As a man of affairs his judgment is clear and discriminating. As a pastor he is unexcelled, and his influence on a community is wide and lasting. Those who know him best believe him equal to any position in the gift of his church.

Among the strongest influences over his life have been the perfect companionship and intelligent sympathy of a devoted wife. On December 12, 1872, he was married to Miss Marianna Pullen, of Raleigh, a woman of thorough education and refinement, deep piety, great executive ability and much personal charm. From this union there are six living children.

A character so positive as Dr. Crawford's must at times clash with the views of others, but no man of his type has, perhaps, fewer enemies and a larger circle of friends. One's contem-

poraries rarely see the whole man in just the right proportions, but when, years later, his faults and virtues have been accurately weighed, the deliberate, final judgment of true history, whose ears are deaf alike to enmity and flattery, will be :

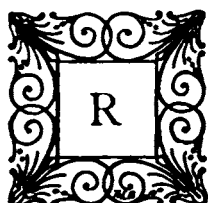
Leonidas Wakefield Crawford— a true man.

*Bertha Marvin Lee.*





## RICHARD BENBURY CREECY



RICHARD BENBURY CREECY, long distinguished as one of the able editors of North Carolina, was born on Drummond's Point, lying on Albemarle Sound, in Chowan County, on the 19th of December, 1813.

In the latter years of the seventeenth century, about 1680, five Huguenot brothers sailed from France to seek an asylum from persecution in the wilds of America, and eventually settled in the counties adjacent to Albemarle Sound. One of these, Job Creecy, was the first American progenitor of the subject of this sketch. Colonel Creecy is also descended from General Thomas Benbury, one of the leading statesmen of the Revolution, who was Speaker of the House of Commons during the Revolutionary War, fought at the Battle of Great Bridge, and also rendered much other service to the cause of his country in the struggle for independence. On the formation of the new government of the United States, with Washington as president, General Washington appointed him collector of the port of Edenton.

Colonel Creecy is also descended from General William Skinner, who was the treasurer of the eastern district of North Carolina before the passage of the act appointing one treasurer for the whole State, and he was also a general of the Albemarle militia during the Revolutionary War and rendered important service to the State in that capacity.



The father of Colonel Creecy was Joshua Skinner Creecy, a business man and planter who did not enter into public life, but inheriting a military inclination was colonel of the militia. His character was of good report; he was kind, genial and generous, esteemed and admired by his friends; his death at the early age of twenty-nine was much lamented. He married Mary Benbury, a lady of large family connections, whose natural graces were enhanced by the feminine accomplishments of her day. While the family home was on the farm, they lived also in Edenton, and enjoyed the excellent society for which that town has long been so famous.

In early youth the physical condition of the subject of this sketch was frail and unpromising, but the careful attention that was bestowed on him eventually resulted in strengthening his weak constitution, and after many vicissitudes and trying experiences in life he has attained an age not often reached by men. In youth he was studious and fond of reading, but diffident of his powers to do all things well. He was a pupil at the Edenton Academy, where so many of the young men and women of the first circles of eastern North Carolina were taught. Afterward, he received at Warrenton private instruction from Reverend J. H. Saunders, the learned father of the late Colonel William L. Saunders; and then in 1831 he entered the University of North Carolina, graduating in 1835. He studied law and obtained his license in 1842, and began the practice at Edenton at once, but after three years he was led to abandon his professional career and devote himself to agricultural pursuits. The war left him in reduced circumstances, and in 1870 he founded the *Elizabeth City Economist* which he has continued to publish without intermission for a period of thirty-five years, and even now at the advanced age of ninety-two he goes to his office every day and writes his editorials with all the vigor and dash that characterized his productions in early manhood. In 1901 he prepared and published "Grandfather's Tales of North Carolina History," and he has in contemplation, notwithstanding his advanced years, the preparation of a second volume on the same lines. Colonel Creecy

has always been a *belle lettre* scholar, fond of literature, and that flavor has permeated his life. It led him after the war, when he was broken in fortune, to turn to the editorial profession as a means of livelihood, and his editorial productions have had much literary merit, blending humor with philosophy, and pleasing both in style and manner. Another of their characteristics has been their historical features. Fond of books early in life, Colonel Creecy read much of the local history of the Albemarle section and of the State, and he became very familiar with the public characters who had played an interesting part on the stage of action.

Before the war, when he had ample means and leisure, he wrote a "Child's History for the Fireside," and when he became editor, not unnaturally, he gave his readers the benefit and advantage of his own explorations into historical lore, and the *Economist* has been distinguished among all the other papers of the State by its historical and reminiscent articles that are greatly enjoyed by its readers.

In 1831 it was Colonel Creecy's good fortune, in passing through Raleigh on his way to the university, to hear Judge Gaston deliver two great speeches. The Legislature at that time was being held in the Governor's mansion at the foot of Fayetteville Street, the capitol building having been burned down, and a proposition was under consideration to move the State capital to Fayetteville. Judge Gaston opposed the proposition and by his address aided in defeating it. He afterwards heard Judge Gaston and other famous orators in the Convention of 1835, and his account of the giants of those days, and his reminiscences and anecdotes of the public men who have adorned the annals of the State, have contributed to make the columns of the *Economist* widely appreciated and of great value to the younger generation who were not familiar with the former statesmen of North Carolina. Loving his State and having an affection for the University of North Carolina, and an interest in all of the men who were students with him or who were afterwards connected with his *alma mater*, his editorials have been permeated with a spirit of patriotism, and

he has striven to upbuild the State and to promote the welfare of the people.

Enamored of his professional work, Mr. Creecy has not sought political preferment. In early life he was a Whig, like most of the other gentlemen of his section, and in 1842, just as he received his license to practice law, he was almost by accident and without any expectation or desire on his part nominated as a Whig candidate to represent the counties of Chowan and Gates in the Senate; but, as he has always contended, he was fortunately defeated. He was a magistrate and sat as a member of the Court of Quarter Sessions for Chowan County while he was farming before he received his license; and after his retirement from the practice he performed the same duties in Pasquotank County. During the first administration of President Cleveland he served as collector of the port of Elizabeth City, but other than this he has held no public station.

As a member of the Press Association of North Carolina, it has been a pleasure to his editorial brethren to have him participate in their meetings, and he has been president of the Association. Twenty-five years ago he met with an accident which has required him to use crutches and has confined him largely to his own home. This physical infirmity has tended somewhat to aid Colonel Creecy in his editorial and literary work, and doubtless led to the publication of his "Grandfather's Tales," a volume that abounds in the fine humor which is characteristic of all Colonel Creecy's writings. It also contains his reminiscences of many of the distinguished men of the State, and is a loving tribute offered by an affectionate son to North Carolina, with the hope that it would interest the young people of the State in the study of their local history. It is well calculated to entertain both young and old, and there is a vein of philosophy running through it that imparts a value, as well as its historical basis and agreeable humor.

In his life Colonel Creecy has been influenced by three men who became his ideals; first, Reverend Joseph H. Saunders, who was his preceptor at the academy at Edenton and afterwards his

private instructor at Warrenton, and who was his friend in after years; next, Judge Gaston, several of whose great speeches Colonel Creecy listened to with admiration, and whose personal acquaintance he enjoyed; and lastly, his own father, whose memory has been his constant inspiration through life. And when we consider the particular characteristics of these ideals, one is inclined to say of Colonel Creecy, *noscitur a sociis*, for he unites amiability with culture, purity of character with intellectual power, and moderation and temperance with decided purpose and strength of understanding; while his longevity and unimpaired faculties at his great age may be attributed in large measure to his even, cheerful and hopeful disposition and to his admirable Christian philosophy.

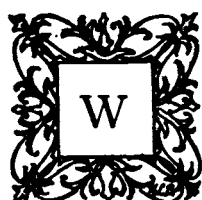
Colonel Creecy is a member of the Protestant Episcopal Church, and has for years been a vestryman of Christ Church at Elizabeth City. Speaking of his long and varied experience in life, he says that he sometimes thinks that every life has in it some element of failure and that his own is not an exception: "Money I failed to accumulate; the world's blazonry I have failed to win; but health, home and friends I have had, and I am content." After all, a contented mind and a life passed amid pleasant surroundings and in the full enjoyment of the appreciation of cultivated friends are much more to be desired than wealth with its anxieties and the disappointments of ungratified ambitions. Being asked for some suggestion that might be helpful to young people, Colonel Creecy suggests: "Honesty, integrity, friendliness, timeliness, godliness, benevolence, cheerfulness, firmness in the right, modest assurance, and a careful study of great speeches by great men."

On November 5, 1844, Colonel Creecy was happily wedded to Miss Mary B. Perkins, by whom he had ten children; eight of them still survive.

S. A. Ashe.



## WILLIAM LEE DAVIDSON



WILLIAM LEE DAVIDSON was born in 1746 in Lancaster County, Pennsylvania, and was killed February 1, 1781, at Cowan's Ford, North Carolina, while disputing the passage of the Catawba River at that place by the British. He was the youngest son of George Davidson. When he was four years old he came to North Carolina with his father, who settled in Iredell County, then Rowan, within the bounds of Centre Church. He was educated in the schools of the neighborhood and at the Academy established at Charlotte, which was at that time in a flourishing condition, and the training ground for many patriots of that section.

In early life he married Mary, the eldest daughter of John Brevard, who "had eight sons in the rebel army," and sister of Ephraim Brevard, the author of the Mecklenburg Declaration of Independence. The young couple settled on the Western bank of Davidson's Creek, about two miles west of Centre Church, and on the southern side of the public road. There were born to them four sons: George, John Alexander, Ephraim Brevard and William Lee; and three daughters; Jean, Pamela and Margaret. Some of the children remained in North Carolina and now have descendants in Iredell County, but most of the family moved westward, and their descendants are now to be found in Missouri, Arkansas and adjoining States, in which

they have reflected additional honor upon their illustrious name.

General Davidson frequently omitted his middle name in his signature, and this fact has led to some question as to his having a middle name. Many documents are in existence, however, bearing his signature, in which his middle name is used—among them his last will and testament, which is on file in Salisbury, and these leave no room for doubt.

During the critical period preceding the Revolution, committees of safety were organized throughout the colony, which were composed of the ablest of the patriots of each section. In the membership from Rowan we find William Lee Davidson, along with John Brevard, Griffith Rutherford, Matthew Locke and others, who added fame to that community. His bearing as well as his sagacity is shown by his selection as captain of the "up-river" company of militia.

When the Provincial Congress, in session at Halifax, in April, 1776, determined to raise four regiments additional to the first and second which were already in the field, Davidson was appointed major of the Fourth of which Thomas Polk was colonel and James Thackston lieutenant-colonel. Under the command of General Francis Nash his regiment at once marched to the North to join the army of Washington which at that time was feeble and very despondent. His regiment participated with credit in the battles of Princeton and Brandywine and in the bloody encounter at Germantown on October 4, 1777, in which Nash was killed, its valor was conspicuously proven. On this field Major Davidson was promoted for gallantry to be a lieutenant-colonel. He was in the Battle of Monmouth and the other battles of the North until 1779, when he was ordered South to reinforce Lincoln at Charleston.

In passing through North Carolina, Lieutenant-Colonel Davidson received permission to visit his family after an absence of three years, and upon his approach to Charleston he found it impossible to join his regiment, as the city was surrounded by British. In consequence of this he avoided capture. He returned

at once to Mecklenburg and became active in subduing Tory insurrections, which had become numerous since the recent success of British arms. In one of these encounters at Coulson's Mills, on the Yadkin, about July 1, 1780, Davidson received a wound which kept him from the field for two months and came near ending his life. The capture of Rutherford at Camden left the militia of the Salisbury District without a brigadier-general to command them. To this position the General Assembly by act of August 31, 1780, commissioned Lieutenant-Colonel Davidson. Zealous endeavors were made by him for the reinforcement of General Greene, who was protecting Morgan as he made his way across the State to Virginia with the prisoners taken at Cowpens. When Cornwallis reached the Catawba on January 28, 1781, in his pursuit of Morgan, he found it much swollen by recent rains which delayed his passage for three days. Davidson's small force was detailed to guard Tool's, Sherrill's, Beatties' and Cowan's fords. Davidson himself took direct command at the latter ford. Being a difficult and rarely used ford, it was not guarded at all until late on the 31st, when some movement of the British doubtless led Davidson to suspect that they would probably attempt to effect a passage there. It was perhaps this which induced him to take direct command at that place. When the British arrived on the morning of February 1, 1781, in the midst of a drizzling rain, they were surprised to see the camp fires of the Americans, as they had thought the ford unguarded. Upon the first fire from the Americans, the Tory guide deserted in the middle of the stream, and the British thus left to their own devices, came straight across instead of following the usual line of travel which would have brought them out several hundred yards below. The obliquity of the direction of the fire and the darkness of the early morning diminished the effectiveness of the resistance by the Americans. Upon realizing the condition of affairs Davidson, who was at the main ford below, rallied his little band of three hundred, and while bravely leading them was pierced by a fatal bullet and fell dead from his horse. By this time many of the British had crossed. The handful of Americans, with camp fires in the rear to give the

British a better view, and with a vastly superior force in front, was forced to retreat and leave the body of the beloved commander upon the field.

After dark, however, his body was recovered by Richard Barry and David Wilson, who were in the battle that morning, and was carried by them upon horseback to the home of Samuel Wilson, Sr., where it was prepared for burial. The widow was brought by George Templeton, who was her nearest neighbor, and the body was buried that night at Hopewell Church, in a grave which is now unmarked except by a pile of bricks. Although his career was terminated when he was but thirty-five, he lived long enough to serve his country well and to be honored by the General Assembly of his adopted State, by the Continental Congress, and his fellow patriots in arms.

On September 20, 1781, upon motion of Mr. Sharpe, the Continental Congress passed a resolution, requesting the Governor and Council of State of North Carolina to erect a monument to General Davidson at the expense of the United States— an honor which was bestowed only a few times. But during those iron times the cause of life and liberty was so engrossing that there was little time or money that could be given to the dead, and the monument was not erected during the existence of the Continental Congress. During the first century after the death of this patriot, the matter was taken up in Congress in 1803, 1824-5, and 1841-2, but without favorable consideration, although in 1842 (July 19th) the Senate passed a bill making an appropriation for the monument. This bill was introduced by Senator Graham, whose father, General Joseph Graham, was in the battle of Cowan's Ford, serving as Captain under General Davidson. From 1842 until January 4, 1888, there is no record that any consideration was given the matter by Congress. Then, at the instance of the writer, Senator Vance introduced a bill, passed by the Senate on April 11, 1888, making an appropriation of \$10,000 for this monument, but this bill never secured favorable consideration by the House of Representatives. With this encouragement, however, the subject was before Congress almost continuously,



until January 30, 1903, when through the efforts of Hon. W. W. Kitchin a joint resolution introduced by him became a law, making an appropriation for the erection of the monument originally contemplated by the Continental Congress. This monument has now been erected upon the Guilford Court House battleground, an honor to General Davidson, to the Congress which authorized it and to the friends through whose efforts the law was enacted.

But Davidson's name has had other honors bestowed upon it and with less tardiness. When Davidson County was established in 1822, the General Assembly named it in honor of this patriot. In 1835, when the Presbyterians determined to establish a college, they named it in honor of William Lee Davidson, whose sword was subsequently presented to it and now hangs in the Library. Perhaps no better estimate of the man can be given than that by his friend and fellow patriot, "Light Horse Harry" Lee, who said of him with whom he served long: "The loss of General Davidson would have always been felt at any stage of the war. It was particularly detrimental in its effect at this period, as he was the chief instrument relied upon by General Greene for assembling the militia. A promising soldier was lost to the country in the meridian of life, at a moment when his services would have been highly beneficial to us. He was a man of popular manners, pleasing address, active and indefatigable."

*W. A. Withers.*





1892. A. 10. 11. 12.

Yours very truly,  
R. A. Dougherty



## RUFUS ALEXANDER DOUGHTON



HONORABLE RUFUS ALEXANDER DOUGHTON, one of the strongest public men of the northwestern section of the State, was born at Laurel Springs, Alleghany County, on the 10th of January, 1857.

The earliest of his name to come to America was Joseph Doughton, who came to this country from England.

The father of the subject of this sketch was J. Horton Doughton, a farmer of Alleghany County, whose energy and sterling integrity brought him the entire respect of the people of his county, and for some years he was a county commissioner. His practical judgment and acquaintance with the law and with the public concerns of his county gave him such prominence that he also served as chairman of the Inferior Court of Alleghany.

In his youth the subject of this sketch was robust, and living on a farm he was required to do regular farm-work, and he learned at an early age the advantage of energy and of economy from the precepts and example of his father, while the influence of his mother, whose maiden name was Rebecca Jones, was particularly strong on his moral life. Few counties of the State are generally more prosperous than those of Alleghany and Ashe, where the farms are small and grass grows to advantage and stock is reared in numbers, nearly all of the inhabitants being in comfortable circumstances and having a high appreciation of the

benefits of education. After attending the local schools, Mr. Doughton received the basis of his education at Independence Academy in Virginia, and then spent two years at the University of North Carolina. His inclinations were for a professional career, and he chose the law as being in accord with his disposition and talents and as opening up the best avenues to success; and so, in 1880, he took a course in Law at the University of North Carolina, and having obtained his license, opened his office at Sparta in the Fall of that year and soon became one of the leading attorneys of his section.

Intelligent, energetic and patriotic, Mr. Doughton was always active in public matters, and in 1887 he was nominated by the Democrats to represent his county in the House, and after a strong campaign—for the parties in his county were about evenly divided—he was elected. Intimately acquainted with the matters that affected the welfare of his constituents, he discharged his duties as a legislator to their satisfaction, and he was elected without opposition their representative again in 1889 and in 1891. Becoming a good parliamentarian, quick in apprehension, careful and painstaking, he was considered, at the session of 1891, the strongest member of the House, and he was elected Speaker of that body. In the Speaker's chair he wisely exerted his influence and power for those measures that tended to the advancement of the people and of the State, and he established himself thoroughly in the confidence of the public men associated with him.

For some years the Farmers' Alliance had been powerful within the Democratic Party, and in nearly every section its control was felt in determining the careers of the public men. But in Alleghany County Mr. Doughton's influence was a restraining force, and the Democratic people did not swerve from their party allegiance. He remained a straight-out Democrat, and wisely and prudently sought to safeguard his party from the insidious undermining of the Populist leaders.

In 1892 his personal popularity and the strong hold he had gained on the respect and good-will of the people led to his nomination as Lieutenant-Governor, and he entered into the cam-

paign with vigor, and largely increased his reputation as a public speaker. Being elected Lieutenant-Governor, he became *ex officio* the presiding officer of the Senate, and in performing his duties in that capacity he exhibited so much courtesy and such parliamentary skill as to win the commendation of even his political opponents. At the session of 1895 the Democrats were in a minority in that body, and his position was the more delicate on that account, but still his fairness and impartiality received the praise of all.

He participated in the various campaigns that have since been made in the State, and has exerted all of his influence for the preservation of the Democratic organization. As a speaker he is deliberate, but forceful; clear in his ideas, he expresses them in an agreeable manner, and is very successful in carrying his audience along with him to his own conclusions. Indeed, mingling freely with the people and conversant with their modes of thought, he is skillful and happy in presenting his views so that they can be readily understood and appeal to the judgment of the people. For some years after his retirement from the office of Lieutenant-Governor he devoted himself more particularly to his private affairs, but in 1903 he was again a member of the House, and was recognized as a leader of that body, being one of the ablest and wisest among the experienced public men who were members of that session of the Legislature. His long acquaintance with the financial affairs of the State led to his being chairman of the Finance Committee, having supervision of the tax laws and requiring estimates of the probable receipts of public funds as a basis for the appropriations; he was a leading member of the Judiciary Committee, and indeed in many respects he was regarded as a leader of the House. He led the fight for an issue of State bonds to cover the deficit in the public funds, and after an arduous contest he was able to secure the passage of the measure. He also supported the Watts Bill, which limited the manufacture of spirituous liquors to incorporated towns and left it to be decided by vote of the people whether whiskey should be sold in saloons or through dispensaries or its sale be entirely

forbidden. This temperance legislation was intended more particularly to arrest the debauching effects of the small distilleries that had sprung up in the country, where there could be no police supervision, and Mr. Doughton in the interest of the country people eagerly pressed the passage of the bill, which was regarded as one of the most important and progressive measures yet proposed by the Democratic leaders. His course in this matter well illustrates his general action as a public man. With strong common sense, he knows the needs of the people, and he boldly seeks to promote those measures which he believes will be to their advantage and will benefit the public welfare. When he feels that he is right, no consideration can sway him from his path, but he goes forward with a strength of purpose that brooks no opposition.

Beginning life as a hand on his father's farm, Mr. Doughton became a lawyer and then combined agriculture with his professional work. As he grew in prosperity he became concerned in some milling enterprises, and his good judgment and attention to business having been rewarded with gratifying success, more lately he has become interested in banking. He is now attorney of the North Carolina Railroad.

Mr. Doughton is a member of the Masonic Order, and is Senior Warden of Sparta Lodge 423 at this time. He is a member of the Methodist Church.

On January 10, 1883, he was married to Miss Sue B. Parks, and two children have blessed their wedded life.

*S. A. Ashe.*





## JESSE FRANKLIN



THE old English word "franklin" denoted a free man. When we peruse the personal history of Jesse Franklin we may reasonably conclude that there is something in a name, after all. He was a free man, belonged to a family warmly attached to the cause of freedom, and valiantly fought to make others free. He was a native of Orange County, Virginia, born on the 24th of March, 1760. His father was Bernard Franklin, and his mother's maiden name was Mary Cleveland. The lady just mentioned was a sister of that fierce and relentless mountaineer, Colonel Benjamin Cleveland, whose very name spread consternation throughout the ranks of the Tories in our War for Independence.

The first service of Jesse Franklin in the Revolution was when he was still a resident of Virginia. When about seventeen years old he enlisted, and returned to his home after his term of service had expired. Bernard Franklin having determined to remove to North Carolina, sent his son Jesse to spy out the land. The latter's choice fell upon a location on the head waters of Mitchell's River in Surry County. To this place later came Bernard Franklin with his household, one of his sons being Meshach Franklin (then a child) who afterwards represented his district in the Congress of the United States.

The lot of the Franklin family was not a tranquil one in its new home. The neighborhood was infested with Tories of the worst

stripe—house-burners, horse-thieves, and desperadoes of every class, who usually made their incursions upon the defenceless settlements while the men of the families were absent in the army. But woe unto the marauders who were caught! The Whigs (usually led by Colonel Cleveland) were often addicted to the old Scotch practice called Jedwood justice—to hang in haste and try at leisure. Not only in their own neighborhood, but many miles away on the far eastern confines of the Piedmont section, these hardy mountaineers often turned up when the Tories least expected them. One instance will suffice, as related by a Whig officer, Colonel Ransom Sutherland, in a letter written many years after the war (April 10, 1821,) and published in the *North Carolina University Magazine* for September, 1854. Sutherland says, speaking of the Tories who escaped from the battle of Moore's Creek:

"Those of the old Regulators, now Tories, that got home betook themselves to the woods like outlaws (I mean their leaders), and continued to commit depredations on the lives and properties of those who had been active against them. I myself was the first who fell a victim to their malice as to property. In a few days after the battle of the Bridge, a party assembled in the night at my residence, then in the midst of them, set fire to my houses and burned them down. One of these was a well-finished dwelling house; another a storehouse, with about \$3,000 worth of goods and upwards of \$1,000 in cash, and all my books and papers for upwards of seven years' dealing. This stroke threw me into a state of complete bankruptcy. But Colonel Cleveland from the mountains came down with a party of men, scoured the country, picked up some of the outlaws, and hung several of them to trees in the woods. One of them—a Captain Jackson as he called himself—was hung within half a mile of the place on which my houses had stood that he caused to be burnt. I do not recollect to have heard much more of those wretches after Cleveland had done with them."

At the time of the Revolution Colonel Sutherland lived in Caswell County (until 1777 a part of Orange), but later removed to Wake. We have quoted his reference to the above incident concerning Colonel Cleveland because Franklin was Adjutant of Cleveland's regiment.



At the bloody battle of King's Mountain, October 7, 1780, Adjutant Franklin greatly distinguished himself. Captain Samuel Ryerson, a brave loyalist who had fought with the foremost on his side, and had been wounded more than once, surrendered to Franklin when he saw that further resistance was fruitless. In tendering his sword, Ryerson remarked: "You deserve it, sir." In the work entitled "King's Mountain and its Heroes," by Lyman C. Draper, this circumstance is recorded, and in another part of the volume is a sketch of Franklin, from which we make the following extract:

"On one occasion a Tory party under Jo Lasefield captured him and had him ready to swing off, when he said: 'You have me completely in your power! But if you hang me, it will prove the dearest days work you ever performed, for Uncle Ben Cleveland will pursue you like a bloodhound, and he will never cease the chase while a solitary one of you survives.' Though they hung him, the bridle with which they did it broke, and he fortunately dropped into the saddle of his horse, bounded away, and escaped. Besides his service at King's Mountain, he participated in Guilford Battle, and attained the rank of Major before the close of the war."

One of the descendants of Jesse Franklin was the late Judge Jesse Franklin Graves, of Surry County, a gentleman in every way worthy of his descent, who wrote two sketches of his ancestor. The first appeared (1856) in the second series of "The Old North State," a volume by E. W. Caruthers, who described the sketch's author as "a young lawyer residing at Mount Airy." The second production was put forth when this young lawyer had passed the meridian of life and retired from the bench with high honors. He was, in the latter instance, called upon for an address at Guilford battleground when a monument had been erected by Governor Thomas M. Holt, bearing the names of Joseph Winston, Jesse Franklin, and Richard Talliaferro. Of Franklin, Judge Graves said in part: "I am proud of North Carolina and all that her sons have done; but I am before you with peculiar pride for the reason that Jesse Franklin, my grandfather, was in the bloody contest on this battlefield, and I admit that I am proud to see his name inscribed on the beautiful monument which is dedi-

cated to the memory of the heroes who here turned back the proud invaders. . . . Jesse Franklin's mother was a sister of the noted Whig leader, Benjamin Cleveland, and the brave old Colonel put great confidence in his nephew, and placed him in many positions where his courage and discretion were severely taxed. He always came up to his uncle's high expectations." The full text of the address last quoted will be found in the memorial volume of the Guilford Battleground Company, published in 1893.

After the return of peace, Jesse Franklin received many high honors from his grateful countrymen.

In 1793 and 1794 he was a member of the North Carolina House of Commons. From December 7, 1795, till March 3, 1797, he served as a member of the House of Representatives of the United States.

After his retirement from Congress he again became a State Legislator, serving in the House of Commons at Raleigh in 1797 and 1798. On December 12, 1798, the General Assembly elected him United States Senator in place of Alexander Martin, for the term ending March 3, 1805. Before Calhoun became Vice-President the Vice-Presidents did not usually preside over the Senate, but the Senate elected Presidents *pro tempore* who were the presiding officers. In March, 1804, Jesse Franklin was thus elected to preside over the Senate, and he performed that duty until the end of his term. At the same time Nathaniel Macon was the Speaker of the House; so during that year both Houses of Congress were presided over by North Carolinians. Probably no other State ever enjoyed the same honor.

A few months after his return home, Mr. Franklin was elected State Senator from Surry County and served as such in 1805 and also in 1806. While the latter session was in progress he was again elected to the United States Senate, December, 1806, succeeding David Stone, who, however, defeated him at the session of December, 1812.

Mr. Franklin was an ultra-democrat, and in the war of 1812-1815 he advocated vigorous measures by the administration.

After his second retirement from the United States Senate, Major Franklin acted as one of the Commissioners to sell lands which had recently been acquired by the treaty from the Cherokee Indians. The territory thus acquired was 679,189 acres in all, and the sales by the State opened up the country in question for the use of settlers. He was also on a commission to treat with the Chicasaw Indians, one of his colleagues being Andrew Jackson.

On the 5th of December, 1820, Major Franklin was elected Governor of North Carolina; and on the 7th of December he took the oath of office. He served until December 7, 1821. In his message of November 20, 1821, to the General Assembly, he declined a reëlection. He was succeeded by Gabriel Holmes.

Governor Franklin did not long survive his retirement from office. His death occurred in Surry County on August 31, 1823. In its issue of September 30th following, the *Western Carolinian*, a paper published at Salisbury, said:

"Died.—At his residence in Surry County, after nine months' suffering with the dropsy, Jesse Franklin, Esq., late Governor of this State. Both as a politician and as a private man, Governor Franklin enjoyed, perhaps, as great a share of the public confidence and private esteem of his fellow-citizens as any contemporary individual in the State. Various public trusts had been confided to him prior to his election, in December, 1820, as Governor of the State. For many years he was Senator in the State Legislature; was a commissioner with General Jackson and General Meriwether, who concluded a treaty of cession with the Chicasaw Indians; was also one of the commissioners who effected a treaty and the purchase of a large section of country from the Cherokees. He was but a lad during the Revolutionary War, yet he shared largely in the toils and privations of the struggle for our independence. By his activity in the cause of the Whigs he became peculiarly obnoxious to the Tories. They took him prisoner, treated him with great rigor, and were about hanging him when a party of Whigs rescued him and saved his life."

The maiden name of the wife of Governor Franklin was Meckey Perkins. Of his posterity, Judge Graves said, in his Battleground address: "He left three sons and five daughters. His descen-

dants are numerous—some in North Carolina, some in Tennessee, and some in Mississippi. Many of them fell in the Confederate Armies.”

The widow of Governor Franklin survived him some years and died on February 20, 1834. In chronicling her demise, the *Raleigh Register* of March 14th following contained this notice:

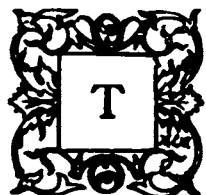
“Died.—At her residence in Surry County on the 20th of February, after a very short indisposition, in about the 69th year of her age, the much-lamented Mrs. Meckey Franklin, widow and relict of Jesse Franklin, deceased, late Governor of this State. She has left eight children, a long train of connections, and a large circle of acquaintances to deplore her irreparable loss. Of her it may be truly said, one of the brightest ornaments of society is gone. She was one of those rare characters who, in her many deeds of charity and benevolence, acted from disinterested motives. The poor of her neighborhood can well testify to this amiable trait of her character. Without dissimulation she extended the hand of friendship—envy had no dominion over her—she never detracted from the character of others. ‘Do unto others as you would have them do unto you,’ was her golden rule of conduct. In all the various relations of mother, mistress, and neighbor she was an excellent pattern for imitation; and in all the social obligations of life she was truly exemplary in the discharge of her duty.”

In his political tenets, habits of life, and dress, Governor Franklin was ultra-democratic. He would never allow his portrait to be painted. The biographical sketch of him in Caruthers gives an incident which also shows that he was not a disciple of Beau Brummel in the matter of apparel. It seems that while attending a session of the Legislature at Hillsboro he found it necessary to get some new shirts. The seamstress who made them followed the fashion of the day by fitting them up with ruffles and frills. These, he thought, did not become the representative of a plain people like his constituents, so he altered the garments to suit himself by ripping off these unnecessary adornments with a pocket knife.

*Marshall De Lancey Haywood.*



## ISAAC GREGORY



HOUGH his services were of too conspicuous a nature to be entirely lost sight of, very few of the present generation are acquainted with the career of Isaac Gregory, a brigadier-general of North Carolina troops in the Army of the Revolution. All efforts on the part of the present writer to obtain the dates of his birth and death and other important matters connected with his personal history have been futile; yet our information concerning his public life—both civil and military—is full and satisfactory.

When the second independent Provincial Congress of North Carolina met at New-Bern on the 3d of April, 1775, Mr. Gregory was a delegate from Pasquotank County to that body. In August, 1775, another Provincial Congress was convened, and held its sessions at Hillsboro, not adjourning till September 10th. On September 9th this body elected Mr. Gregory lieutenant-colonel of the Pasquotank Regiment of North Carolina militia. On the same day he was also elected a member of the Committee of Safety for the Edenton District.

Prior to 1777, when the County of Camden was erected out of a portion of Pasquotank, the latter county was divided into two sections by the broad expanse of Pasquotank River. On account of the difficult communication between these sections, two regiments of militia were organized in Pasquotank; and, on the 22d

of April, 1776, Lieutenant-Colonel Gregory was promoted to the rank of colonel and placed in command of the second regiment of Pasquotank militia, Thomas Boyd being at the same time made colonel of the first Pasquotank regiment. On the same day that Gregory was elected colonel (April 22, 1776) he was also placed on a committee charged with the duty of procuring arms and ammunition for the Continental troops. Colonel Gregory was a member of the Provincial Congress which sat at Halifax in 1776 during the months of November and December; and on December 23d that body elected him a justice of the court of Pleas and Quarter Sessions for the county of Pasquotank.

To do away with the inconvenience caused by the division of Pasquotank County by the river, the General Assembly of North Carolina decided to erect a new county out of that portion of its territory on the northeastern side of Pasquotank River. Accordingly, on the 19th of April, 1777, Senator Joseph Jones obtained leave of the Assembly, then in session at New-Bern, to prepare and introduce a bill for that purpose. It was accordingly introduced into the Senate and passed by that body on the 21st of April, being sent to the House of Commons on the same day. Having been passed by the House of Commons also, it was ratified on the 9th of May and became Chapter 18 of the Laws of 1777, first session. The new county was called Camden, as a compliment to Charles Pratt, first Earl of Camden, an English statesman who had befriended the American colonies. By the above enactment Isaac Gregory, Joseph Jones, Lemuel Sawyer, Demsey Burgess and Caleb Grandy were appointed commissioners to fix upon a county-seat and erect a court house, jail, etc. Gregory was the first State Senator from Camden County, serving continuously from 1778 till 1788, and again at two sessions in 1795 and 1796.

On May 15, 1779, Colonel Gregory was promoted to the rank of brigadier-general of his district, being the Edenton District, in which Pasquotank and Camden Counties were included.

After the fall of Charleston, Governor Caswell was appointed major-general by the Legislature to command the militia forces

of the State; and he concentrated the militia first on Deep River, where the regiments of Exum and of Jarvis were encamped, and these with some other regiments formed a brigade, the command of which was conferred on General Gregory, who joined General Caswell, took command of the brigade, and led it at the battle of Camden, South Carolina, on the 16th of August, 1780. Though this battle reflected little glory on the Americans as a whole, it is the "concurrent testimony of friend and foe," as Schenck puts it, that Gregory's North Carolina brigade won for itself imperishable renown; nor was there a soldier in that brigade braver than its leader, who received two bayonet wounds and had a horse killed under him in the action.

In speaking of the affair at Camden, Roger Lamb (a Loyalist historian quoted by Schenck) says: "The Continental troops behaved well, but some of the militia were soon broken. In justice to the North Carolina militia it should be remarked that part of the brigade commanded by General Gregory acquitted themselves well. They were formed immediately on the left of the Continentals, and kept the field while they had a cartridge to fire; Gregory himself was twice wounded by a bayonet in bringing off his men. Several of his regiment and many of his brigade, who were made prisoners, had no wound except from bayonets."

In commenting on the above account by Lamb, and similar statements from other sources, Judge David Schenck, in his work entitled "North Carolina, 1780-1781," says:

"The bayonet wounds received by General Gregory, of North Carolina, and the men of his brigade attest the fact that the militia of North Carolina stood before this terrible weapon in the hands of the disciplined regulars of the British army, and grappled with their adversaries in deadly conflict. But few instances in military history occur where the cross of bayonets is recorded; but, when so, the weapons were in the hands of veterans who had been 'mechanized' into unflinching soldiers. I venture to assert that history does not record another instance where native courage and a sense of duty enabled untrained militia to engage regular

troops with the bayonet and 'force them back.' This peculiar glory belongs to North Carolina, by the concurrent testimony of friend and foe."

After the rout at Camden many wild rumors were afloat, and some histories (possibly on the authority of letters written shortly after the battle) state that General Gregory was there taken prisoner. In a despatch dated August 21st and addressed to Lord George Germain, Cornwallis stated that General Gregory was among the killed. As a matter of fact, Gregory escaped, though Griffith Rutherford, another brigadier-general of North Carolina militia, was wounded and captured. Less than a month after the battle the General Assembly passed a joint resolution (September 11th) providing "that Brigadier-General Gregory be furnished, at the expense of the State, for immediate service, with a gelding of the first price in consideration of the one by him lost in the late action near Camden."

Gregory, no doubt, put his gelding to "immediate service" by riding him back to the front in October, for he was with the remains of Jarvis's and Exum's regiments, aggregating but 200 men, operating with General Sumner in front of Cornwallis, then at Charlotte; and later guarding the northern frontier against incursions from Virginia. In the Fall there was sharp skirmishing where he was stationed, with some loss of life. The British seized Norfolk in January, 1781, and began their efforts to subjugate eastern Virginia and the Albemarle region from that point, as they did the Cape Fear region from Wilmington as their central stronghold. General Gregory was again quickly in service on the Virginia boundary; and met the enemy on the threshold. It was during this campaign that a circumstance occurred which for a time placed him under a cloud, though he later was fully vindicated. Concerning this affair, McRee, in his *Life and Correspondence of James Iredell*, says: "About this time a scandalous attempt was made to destroy the character of General Gregory, who, at the head of a portion of his brigade, was guarding the northeastern frontier of the State against hostile incursions, and especially against predatory parties from Portsmouth.



It was cunningly contrived that the following letters should fall into the hands of the Americans:

"'G. G.—Your well formed plan of delivering those people now under your command into the hands of the British General at Portsmouth gives me much pleasure. Your next I hope will mention the place of ambuscade, and the manner you wish to fall into my hands, etc., etc., etc.

"'And am, Dr. Gregory,

"'Yours with esteem.'

"'Gen. Gregory:—A Mr. Ventriss was last night made prisoner by three or four of your people. I only wish to inform you that Ventriss could not help doing what he did in helping to destroy the logs. I myself delivered him the orders from Col. Simcoe. I have the honor of your acquaintance.'"

"These notes," continues McRee, "produced a degree of excitement and alarm in the American camp nearly equal to what would have occurred had as many fire-balls exploded their magazines. For a time universal distrust prevailed. The General a traitor! Who, then, could be trusted? The unfortunate victim of this foul conspiracy was arrested and confined by his own men, and subjected to the degradation of a trial before a court-martial. The proofs of his innocence, soon collected, were overwhelming; and he was restored to his rank and the public confidence. His high spirit had been, however, incurably wounded, and the memory of the transaction cast a saddening shadow upon his after life. This was not of the nature of those stratagems that are sanctioned by military laws and countenanced by men of honor: a base and covert attempt to blast the name of a patriot and soldier, it rivalled in infamy the turpitude of a blow dealt a woman by a coward. It is referred to by Simcoe in his volume recording the services of the Queen's Rangers."

In the above account, McRee says that copies of these spurious notes were found among the papers of Judge Iredell, but that this account of the affair from Simcoe's work (McRee's own copy being lost) is given from memory. He, therefore, advises his readers to consult Simcoe. By doing this, we are led to view the matter in a light equally favorable to General Gregory; and it

gives us a better opinion of the British, for the affair was not a studied conspiracy on their part, as Simcoe's account will show. He says, in his work on the Queen's Rangers: "About this time a singular event took place. The passage from the Great Bridge on Elizabeth River had hitherto been secure; but a party of the enemy from its banks fired upon a gunboat that was returning with the baggage of the detachment that had been relieved, and, having wounded some of the people in it, took the boat. Captain Stevenson, who had commanded at the Great Bridge, lost his baggage; and, among his papers was found a fictitious letter which he had written by way of amusement and of passing his time to General Gregory, who commanded the North Carolina militia at the west landing, detailing a plan which that officer was to follow to surrender his troops to Lieutenant-Colonel Simcoe—the whole plausibly written and bearing with it every appearance of being concerted. The manner of its falling into the enemy's hands strengthened these appearances. At first it served for laughter for the officers of the Rangers; but, when it was understood that General Gregory was put in arrest, Captain Stevenson's humanity was alarmed, and the letters which are in the appendix passed between Lieutenant-Colonel Simcoe and Colonel Parker, who had taken the boat. They prevented all further bad consequences." In transmitting to Colonel Parker, of the American forces, the explanation by Captain Stevenson, Simcoe wrote (March 4, 1781) as follows: "Ties of humanity summon me to declare that Captain Stevenson mentioned to me, some hours before it was known that the gunboat was taken, the fictitious letters you found among his papers. At a distance the matter appeared in a ludicrous light: as it may otherwise lead to serious consequences, I solemnly confirm the truth of Captain Stevenson's explanation of the affair; and add upon the sacred honor of a soldier and a gentleman, that I have no reason to believe or suspect that Mr. Gregory is otherwise than a firm adherent of the French King and of the Congress." To this letter Colonel Parker (on March 5th) replied: "The honor of a soldier I ever hold sacred, and am happy that you are called upon by motives of humanity to acquit General

Gregory. As to my own opinion, I believe you, but, as the management of this delicate matter is left to my superiors, I have forwarded the letter to Baron Steuben, who I trust will view it in the same manner I do."

Though restored to his rank and the confidence of his associates, it was natural that the feelings of General Gregory should be "incurably wounded" by the knowledge that his long, faithful and valiant services should not have rendered him safe from suspicion of treachery. And yet the Americans who suspected him are not so much blameworthy for believing evil of any one when it is remembered that Arnold, one of their bravest generals, had turned traitor only a few months before, and was even then fighting in the ranks of his country's enemies in the very vicinity where the Virginia-Carolina campaign was being carried on.

One of the American privateers fitted out in North Carolina toward the close of the war was called the General Gregory. While lying in the Port of Edenton a mutiny occurred on board this vessel, and several of its officers were murdered.

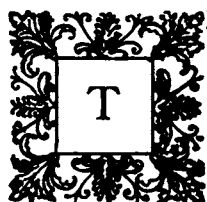
General Gregory survived the Revolution some years. In 1790 he was living on his plantation in Camden County, and is recorded as owning twenty-three slaves. At that time the census shows that at least two persons were living in the same vicinity who bore the name Isaac Gregory.

General Gregory has numerous descendants now living, chiefly in eastern North Carolina. One of his sons was General William Gregory of Elizabeth City.

*Marshall De Lancey Haywood.*



## THOMAS JEFFERSON HADLEY



THOMAS JEFFERSON HADLEY is a descendant of a line of strong, forceful and useful ancestors. The founder of the Hadley family in North Carolina was Thomas Hadley, of Scotch-Irish ancestry, who, near the middle of the eighteenth century, settled on the Cape Fear River in Cumberland County. Characterized by that thrift and industry for which the Scotch-Irish are noted, he soon acquired considerable property and won a leading position in the life of the community. Strong in his convictions, dauntless in spirit, independent in thought, and devoted to liberty, he espoused the American cause in the great contest with the mother country, serving his adopted State faithfully both in the halls of Congress and on the field of battle. In 1776 he was chosen to represent the town of Campbellton, now Fayetteville, in the Provincial Congress which convened at Halifax, November 12th of that year. This was the fifth and last, as it was the most important, of those remarkable provincial conventions which inaugurated the Revolution in the colony of North Carolina and organized the government of the independent State. On December 18th the Congress adopted the first Constitution of the State of North Carolina, and two days later elected Richard Caswell governor. After his term in Congress Thomas Hadley entered the provincial army, served with credit, attained the rank of captain, and, while at



Yours Truly  
J. J. Hadley

home on leave of absence, was murdered by a marauding band of Tories.

On his mother's side, too, Mr. Hadley comes from a worthy ancestry. His maternal grandfather, Joseph Richardson, represented Johnston County in the General Assembly of North Carolina, for three terms in the House of Representatives, and for two terms in the Senate. His record in the Assembly was satisfactory to his constituents and creditable to himself.

Mr. Hadley's father was Thomas Hadley, a lifelong and successful farmer. Like his grandfather of the Revolution, he was a man of energetic, forceful mind and character; of firm convictions, not hastily conceived nor easily abandoned; an uncompromising Whig, and an ardent Prohibitionist. His wife was Millicent, daughter of Joseph Richardson. She was a woman of great force, morally and spiritually, and her influence on the development of the character of her son was very strong.

These characteristics of thrift, industry, and sturdy independence of mind which marked Mr. Hadley's forefathers reappear in a larger degree in their descendant, the subject of this sketch. He was born in Wayne County, North Carolina, July 9, 1838. His early life was spent on the farm. He was a strong, robust boy, fond of sports and not averse to work. Early put to school, he received such mental training as the elementary schools of the day could give. In spite of the traditions that have come down to us, and are still kept feebly alive by those who live only in the past and find nothing in the present worthy of praise, those "old field" schools were poor institutions of learning, both in equipment and in methods of instruction. Mr. Hadley's early education was consequently very defective. His success has come in spite of his faulty training. "The greatest obstacle to my success in life," he wrote on one occasion, "has arisen from want of thorough training at school. The cramming method then—as I fear is too prevalent now—instead of expanding and *educating*, served only to cramp, enfeeble and dwarf the mind. This, like all other bad habits, became deeply rooted, so that all through life I have realized the mistake of my school-days. I am sure nothing

more important can be impressed on the student than the absolute necessity of *thoroughness* in whatever is undertaken. Anything short of this is of little value, if indeed it is not altogether useless and harmful." At the age of eighteen Mr. Hadley left the country school and entered the Male Academy of Wilson, where he spent one year under the instruction of Mr. D. S. Richardson, one of the ablest teachers in North Carolina. In the fall of 1858 he entered the University of North Carolina, and was duly graduated as Bachelor of Arts. Immediately upon graduation Mr. Hadley, like his ancestor of 1776, obeyed the call of his State to take up arms in her defence.

With the modesty which has always been one of the most noticeable, as it is one of the most attractive, elements of his character, he did not seek promotion of personal ambition in offering his services to his State. Had he sought high rank in the army he could easily have attained it. Possessing many of the qualities of character necessary for leadership, as well as the mental and moral training which fitted him for it, he could also have had, had he wished it, the influence which would have obtained for him a commission from the first. But mistrusting his own abilities, with an eye single to the welfare of the land he loved, he offered his services in the ranks, enlisting in 1862 as a private in Company A from Wilson County. This company became a part of the Fifty-fifth North Carolina Regiment. The regiment was organized at Camp Mangum, near Raleigh in the Spring of 1862, Colonel John Kerr Connelly in command. Two months later Mr. Hadley's comrades elected him one of their lieutenants. His subsequent career fully justified their judgment; by his courage and gallantry on the field of battle Lieutenant Hadley won his way to the command of his company.

The first fighting in which Lieutenant Hadley participated was as a volunteer in the attack on Washington, N. C., September 6, 1862. From this time until the close of the war, except during an interval when he languished in a Federal prison, he was constantly in active service. In the battle of Suffolk, April 30, 1862, the officers of the Fifty-fifth North Carolina won "cordial words

of commendation" for the admirable way in which they handled their men. Two months later the regiment joined General Lee in his invasion of Pennsylvania. During the battle of Gettysburg Lieutenant Hadley was in the thickest of the fight. Those troops killed "farthest to the front" were of the Fifty-fifth North Carolina. During the retreat from Gettysburg the regiment formed a part of the rear-guard of the Confederate Army. At Falling Water they repulsed a determined attack during which Lieutenant Hadley was wounded. Throughout the campaign he had borne himself with conspicuous bravery and ability. But the fighting even at Gettysburg was almost tame in comparison with that in which his regiment took part in the Wilderness in May, 1864. It was called upon to bear the brunt of perhaps the severest attacks made on the Confederate lines during the battle, but repulsed them with great damage to the enemy and severe loss in its own ranks. A second time a fearful wound, which disabled him for several weeks, bore testimony to Lieutenant Hadley's gallantry. His services won for him well-deserved promotion, so that when he was able to take the field again he did so as captain of his company. During the closing days of the year Captain Hadley was engaged in the struggles around Petersburg; and then came the inevitable but none the less sad end. After Appomattox the men returned to their desolated States to achieve greater victories in peace than they had won in war. Throughout the struggle no man, whether in high command or in the ranks, had borne himself more gallantly than had Captain Hadley. As "the bravest are the tenderest," so they are the most modest. Conscious of having done his duty well, he returned quietly to his home, took up the broken threads of his career, and since then has sought constantly and unostentatiously to build up that country in whose defence he had fought so well.

The call to arms had interrupted Mr. Hadley's studies. Immediately upon the close of the war, therefore, he resumed them at the University, received the degree of Master of Arts, read law under Judge William H. Battle, and was admitted to the bar in 1866. It was a dreary outlook which the young lawyer faced.



The State lay prostrate under the conqueror's sword; millions of dollars worth of property had been destroyed, cities and towns desolated, highly cultivated farms turned into waste lands. His own property had shared in the general ruin, and necessity forced him to devote his splendid talents, which would have ornamented his profession, to other fields of labor. The year after his admission to the bar he devoted to teaching in Kinston, North Carolina. In its results his work was successful; but financially school-teaching in North Carolina has never been an attractive profession, and in 1867 it was at low tide. The stern and ever-present problem of earning a livelihood drove Mr. Hadley, as it has driven other able men—to North Carolina's irreparable loss—from the schoolroom to the store and farm.

Since then those talents which might have been devoted to the training of the undeveloped mental resources of the State have been devoted to the development of her material resources. To him, and to dozens of other such men, North Carolina owes it that her industries have awaked from sleep; that her hamlets have grown into thriving towns, and her towns into busy cities; that her waste fields have been cultivated into garden spots. To this great work Mr. Hadley brought an industry which never failed, a thrift which never wasted, an energy which never slept, a public spirit which looked beyond the bounds of private advantage, and a fairness and integrity in all his dealings which won for him not merely the wealth of gold, but a greater wealth in the respect and confidence of his fellow-men.

In 1867 Mr. Hadley was happily married to Miss Sallie Sanders, of Wilson. From this union eight children have sprung, five of whom are living.

Among the most important services Mr. Hadley has rendered his community, and indeed the entire State, was the establishment and organization of the first system of public schools in the town of Wilson. Looking far into the future, he caught a vision years ago of the great possibilities which lay before the people of the New South. He saw too that they could reach their full development and realize the richness of their inheritance only through

universal education at public expense. He therefore put himself at the head of a movement in his own community to establish a system of public graded schools, and became the first chairman of the board of trustees. These schools were among the very first schools of this character established in this State, and from them as a radiating centre has gone out an influence the greatness and extent of which none can measure.

Among the characteristics which Mr. Hadley inherited from his Scotch-Irish ancestors his independence of thought is one of the most striking. Throughout all his relations in life, in business, in politics, in society, in religion, he has been his own intellectual master. One instance is an illustration of this. Though he has generally allied himself with the Democratic Party in politics, he does not do so after the fashion of the blindly-devoted partisan. On all great public questions and political issues he has decided convictions, arrived at only after careful study and thought. These convictions he expresses as nearly as possible at the polls. Such consideration led him, for instance, to support Mr. McKinley on the money issue in 1896. He follows this line of action without ostentation and without seeking to influence the opinions of others. He has never sought and never held political office. His has been the life of a quiet citizen who has chosen to influence his generation and subsequent generations by the force of example. Such a life is a striking illustration of the success which ever attends a strict and conscientious adherence to honesty, truth, and justice. Within the bounds of these a strong independence of thought and action has marked his career. These qualities, coupled with temperance and industry, are the secrets of his success.

Though engrossed in the complicated affairs of large business relations, Mr. Hadley has found time to indulge a taste for good literature. He is a man of scholarly inclinations, has read much, and has a retentive memory. With an easy flow of language, he is never at loss for words to express his ideas and is an interesting conversationalist. In him is found a rare combination of the experience of the man of business and the tastes and culture of the

student and scholar. His success is a vindication of the contention that a collegiate and scholarly training is an advantage to the man of business, so called.

In person Mr. Hadley is tall, erect, and without stiffness. He is approachable without encouraging familiarity, pleasant and easy in manner without compromising his natural dignity.

For nearly forty years he has labored among the people of eastern North Carolina. His life has been spent in times of danger, in times of poverty, in times of gloom and despondency. But with a splendid faith in the destiny of his country and her people, he has never despaired of their final success. He has seen the community to which he has devoted his life grow from a cross-roads store to a village, from a village to a thriving town; he has seen the people of his State rally nobly after a destructive war, and from dire poverty and ruin advance to prosperity and wealth, from ignorance and illiteracy to a high degree of learning and intelligence. In this wonderful transformation he has borne no small part. By his industry, his counsel and his success he has set an example of encouragement to others. The influence of such men grows with the growth of the State and expands with the expansion of her prosperity.

*R. D. W. Connor.*





*Leo Haid, O.S.B.*



## LEO HAID



FEW men in North Carolina are better known than the Rt. Rev. Leo Haid, O. S. B., D. D., Abbot of Maryhelp Abbey at Belmont in Gaston County, President of St. Mary's College at the same place, Vicar Apostolic of North Carolina, and titular Bishop of Messene in Greece. This eminent prelate and educator is a native of Pennsylvania, born at Latrobe in Westmoreland County, on the 15th of July, 1849. His father, John Haid, followed the vocation of nurseryman, and was a man of character, industry and firmness. The maiden name of the Bishop's mother was Mary A. Stader.

Bishop Haid received his preparatory education in the common schools at his home, and afterwards entered St. Vincent College in Westmoreland County, graduating therefrom in June, 1868. Having determined to study for the priesthood, he matriculated at St. Vincent Theological Seminary, and there pursued his studies under the Benedictine Fathers. He graduated in 1872, and also took a course in Duff's Business College at Pittsburg. His first active work was previous to his graduation from the Theological Seminary, when in 1869 he taught in St. Vincent College. He holds the degree of Master of Arts from Duff's Business College, and the degree of Doctor of Divinity was conferred upon him by Rome. In addition to his duties as Professor, he was Secre-

tary of St. Vincent College, and Chaplain from January 6, 1873, to July, 1885. He was elected Abbot of the Benedictine Order in North Carolina on July 14, 1885, and was consecrated as a Mitred Abbot by Bishop Northrop of Charleston on November 26, 1885. On December 7, 1887, he was made Vicar Apostolic (de facto Bishop of North Carolina) and titular Bishop of Messene and was consecrated by Cardinal Gibbons on July 1, 1888. Bishop Haid was for six years President of the American Cassinese congregation of the Benedictine Order, and is President of the Southern Benedictine Society of North Carolina. He presided over the Council of the Benedictine Abbots of the world at Rome in 1893.

In the *Magazine of American History* for February, 1895, is an interesting article by Dr. John Spencer Bassett, entitled "A North Carolina Monastery," which speaks of the early work of the Benedictine Fathers at Belmont, in Gaston County. In this article it is stated that when Bishop Haid was consecrated Vicar Apostolic and Bishop, "he refused to resign his abbatial position, and by a special arrangement common in ancient times, but never before employed in the United States, he was allowed to fulfill his new duties and still to retain his office as abbot." The Benedictine Order in which Bishop Haid holds so conspicuous a place, was founded at Monte Cassino, in Italy, about the year 529 by St. Benedict of Nursia. Its great service to the cause of religion and educational enlightenment in Europe during the Middle Ages is a matter of history. It still flourishes in Europe, especially in Austria, and year by year is gaining a stronger foothold in the United States, where its work is pursued with unabated vigor.

On the arrival of Bishop Haid and his companions at Belmont, then called Garibaldi, towards the end of July, 1885, they found almost a wilderness. The farm, once good, had been neglected during and since the war; the buildings, nearly all wooden structures, were unfit for their purposes and altogether inadequate for their wants. Undaunted by difficulties, the little community set to work. Instead of repining or begging for aid, they took upon themselves the most menial tasks, and soon the scrubbing brush,

whitewash and paint gave a more inviting appearance to their surroundings. The religious routine, observed for nearly 1400 years in Benedictine Monasteries in Europe, was introduced at Maryhelp Abbey, and has not been neglected for a single day since.

The Bishop and the young Benedictines who accompanied him to North Carolina were all graduates from St. Vincent College, Pa., thoroughly trained teachers, and the following September found them in charge of some fifty students from many States—some from the North who would not part company with their former instructors. From the very beginning the solid foundations were laid for a thorough commercial, classical or theological education, as the students might select. Special care was given to the education of priests for North Carolina. The Bishop found only five or six priests in the State at his consecration in 1888; he has since ordained no less than thirty-seven. More than twenty Catholic churches have been erected since his advent. Two orphan asylums, hospitals, parochial schools and female academies testify to the untiring activity of the Bishop and his co-laborers.

While solicitous for the religious, educational, and charitable departments, the material welfare of the institution was not neglected. The college buildings are among the most spacious and comfortable in the State. Electric lighting, steam heating, sanitary plumbing, etc., add to health and comfort. The grand Abbey Church challenges the admiration of all visitors; its Munich stained-glass windows are not excelled in beauty by any in America.

The industrial influence for good has not been lost on the vicinity. The farm is in excellent condition; choice orchards and large vineyards are a source of real pleasure and also add to the income of the community. A fine herd of blooded cattle is comfortably housed in the great Pennsylvania barn which attracts so much notice. The land in the neighborhood has doubled or trebled in price since the Benedictine Monks have made this their home. Not satisfied with working in North Carolina, a very beautiful site was secured on Clear Lake, Pasco County, Florida,

in 1889, upon which was erected St. Leo's College, since elevated to the dignity of an independent Abbey by Pope Leo Thirteenth. Situated in a most charming and healthy part of Florida, the College has a large attendance from the North, and many of the best families in Cuba send their sons to St. Leo's.

An industrial school was established some years later on a large tract of land six miles south of Manassas, Prince William County, Va. In this, now a flourishing institution, a thorough commercial education is given, almost gratis, by the Benedictine Fathers from North Carolina. The large farm affords a splendid opportunity to instruct the older boys practically in agricultural pursuits. Indefatigable in his zeal, the Bishop in 1902 opened a Benedictine College in Savannah, Ga. For many reasons the military feature was introduced, and the "Benedictine Cadets" have already gained an enviable reputation. The Governor of Georgia acknowledged their military standing by sending commissions to the officers. Though in its infancy, this military college promises to become one of the leading educational institutions in Georgia. It will be evident from what is here only mentioned that Bishop Haid and the young Benedictines working with him are true to the noble traditions of their illustrious order. North Carolina is certainly very fortunate in having such a body of able, energetic, conscientious men in its boundaries. Their motto is "In omnibus glorificetur Deus," which they received in the religious rule written by St. Benedict at Monte Cassino, Italy, 1400 years ago.

As a matter of course, Bishop Haid is precluded by his sacred calling from an active participation in the politics of the day, but he exercises his right of suffrage, as every good citizen should. In so doing he has identified himself with the Democratic Party, and still holds to the principles of that organization.

Though no longer to be classed as a young man, Bishop Haid is still in the prime vigor of life; and, in all human probability, has many years of religious activity yet before him.

His life's work has been, to a great extent, merged in that of the order of which he is the head in North Carolina, but his person-



ality is one which must appeal to any one even apart from his position or calling.

The seriousness of speech and action which might be expected from his German ancestry is mingled with a ready wit and keen sense of humor.

Of slightly more than medium height, slender and erect, with long brown beard and dark curly hair, both liberally sprinkled with gray, and quick, sparkling eyes, Bishop Haid surely attracts attention and quickly wins friends.

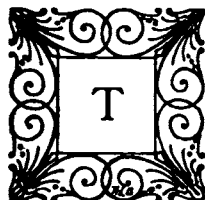
As an orator his reputation is, perhaps, as great as an administrator, but what stands forth more prominently than either is the genuine democracy of the American citizen going hand in hand with the dignity of the ecclesiastic.

*Robert Dick Douglas.*





## HENRY WILLIAM HARRINGTON



HE most noted patriot of the Pedee section of North Carolina during the war of the Revolution was Brigadier-General Henry William Harrington, of the County of Richmond, which was a part of Anson County when he first settled there. This gentleman was born about the year 1748. Like many of the most active partisans on the American side in our War for Independence, he was a native of England. From that country he emigrated to the West Indian island of Jamaica, but did not long remain there. On coming to the British Colonies from the West Indies, he first made his home in the northern part of South Carolina on the Pedee River. While there he married Rosana Auld. This lady was a daughter of Major James Auld, and her home was Anson County, North Carolina. The latter circumstance doubtless influenced her husband to take up his residence in this State. His removal to Anson County occurred in 1776, shortly after the beginning of the war in which he was destined to bear an important part.

Harrington's first military commission in the war was issued to him before he removed from South Carolina, he being appointed Captain of a Volunteer Company of Foot in St. David's Parish, Craven County, on the 3d of August, 1775, by the Provincial Council of Safety. About this time he also became Chairman of the Committee of Observation of St. David's Parish. In June,

1776, Captain Harrington marched his company to Haddrell's Point, and there took part in the operations against Sir Henry Clinton.

As heretofore noted, Captain Harrington removed to Anson County, North Carolina, in 1776. When Richmond was severed from Anson in 1779, and erected into a separate county, he was commissioned colonel (November 25, 1779) and placed in command of the militia forces in Richmond County. In the spring of 1780 he led his regiment to aid in the coast defences of South Carolina, there being under the command of General Benjamin Lincoln.

Immediately, on the capture of General Rutherford, Colonel Harrington was promoted to the rank of Brigadier-General of North Carolina militia to succeed Rutherford. During the same year he sat as a member of the House of Commons of the State, representing Richmond County. The Tories became very active at the South, but Harrington was an efficient officer and successfully suppressed them. Early in September he had a force of 500 militia, embracing companies from the Albemarle and Cape Fear counties, at Cross Creek. He drove the Tories before him and marched into South Carolina to gather supplies. At length, however, the General Assembly appointed Colonel Davidson to be Brigadier-General of the Salisbury District, and Harrington thereupon offered his resignation when he had suppressed the enemy. That being done in the Fall of 1781, he seems to have retired from the service, but appears to have been again active in 1782. He was a very excellent officer and had the full confidence of his soldiers. Like nearly all brave men, he was generous and merciful to a fallen foe, as well as tender and affectionate in his home life.

During the war Tories burned General Harrington's dwelling to the ground, robbed him at the same time of much personal property, destroyed a valuable library he had collected, and kidnapped many of his slaves. One of the persons largely concerned in this outrage settled in North Carolina after the war and Harrington brought suit against him for the loss he had sustained,

finally succeeding in his suit after a varied and complex course of litigation. This reduced the Tory to poverty; but Harrington on witnessing the distress of female members of his enemy's family at the prospect of being turned out of doors, stifled the recollection of past injuries and gave them a deed for their home.

Another instance is recorded to show the generosity of General Harrington. He was riding with two of his aide-de-camps along a country road, and directed those officers to push forward to a neighboring inn, while he turned from the main thoroughfare to spend the night with a friend. On the General's return, unattended, he was accosted by a highwayman, who presented a gun at his breast before he could reach for his pistols, and ordered him to deliver his valuables. Seeing himself at the mercy of the robber, Harrington dismounted and handed over his purse containing five guineas. Much to his astonishment the highwayman took two and considerably returned the other three guineas, remarking that the traveller might need this money for the expenses of his journey. General Harrington was then ordered to walk about a hundred yards away from his holster pistols while the robber disappeared into the forest. At a subsequent period this latter-day Robin Hood was captured, together with other Tory marauders, and sentenced to death. On recognizing his old acquaintance, Harrington took him aside and questioned him concerning his past life and the reason why he—a man apparently of good impulses—had fallen into evil ways. Being favorably impressed with replies to these inquiries, he offered the prisoner a pardon on condition that he enlist under the American banner. This offer was accepted, and the former Tory became a faithful soldier of Harrington's brigade and one devoted to his generous commander.

The above facts concerning General Harrington we have gathered from a South Carolina work called the *History of the Old Cherokees*, by the Right Reverend Alexander Gregg, Bishop of Texas. That work also says:

"In person, General Harrington was small, but well formed and handsome. His education was good and his mind highly cultivated. After a life of eminent public service and private virtue, he died at his seat in Richmond County, on the 31st of March, 1809, in the sixty-second year of his age."

As heretofore mentioned, General Harrington married Rosana Auld. To this union were born four children: Rosana, who married Robert Troy; Henry William, Junior; James Auld, who married Eleanor Wilson; and Harriet, who married Belah Strong.

In his domestic relations General Harrington was especially blessed. Of his home-life Bishop Gregg says:

"After the war General Harrington was elected a member of the Legislature of North Carolina, and in that and other positions of trust served his adopted State with unswerving fidelity. Strongly inclined, however, to retirement, he rather avoided than sought the excitements and distinctions of public life, and gave his latter years to the peaceful pursuits of agriculture, the cultivation of the social relations, and the sweets of domestic life. Happily constituted for contributing to the endearing pleasures of home, he was peculiarly blessed in having to share with him in those delights one who was not more admired for her understanding and excellence of character than beloved universally for those beautiful traits by which the life of woman in every relation is adorned.

General Harrington is recorded in the Census of 1790 as owning sixty slaves. He was an indulgent master; and many of his negroes, who were kidnapped by Tories during the Revolution, found means to return to him after the war.

In 1791 the Legislature of North Carolina elected General Harrington one of the commissioners to fix the seat of government, and a street in the capital city of the State is named in his honor. In his 1892 Centennial address on Raleigh, Dr. Battle describes Harrington as "a planter of immense estates and baronial style of living."

In 1789, when the first election of trustees of the University of North Carolina took place, General Harrington was elected a member of the Board and served until 1795.

As already stated, General Harrington's death occurred on the 31st of March, 1809. Both the *Raleigh Register* and the *Ral-*

eight *Star* of April 13th, in that year, contained the following obituary:

"Died:—At his seat in Richmond County, on the 31st ultimo, in the sixty-second year of his age, General Henry W. Harrington. He was an active and useful officer, and acquired honor in the Revolution which secured to this country its independence. In private life he exercised all the virtues that recommend a man to our confidence and regard. The nicest sense of honor and strictest principles of justice marked every transaction of his life. In his more domestic relations he was eminently amiable—the most tender and affectionate husband, the kindest and most indulgent father, a sincere and zealous friend. His memory will ever be cherished by all the virtuous and good of his acquaintance."

A word in conclusion concerning the two sons of General Harrington may be of interest. His elder son and namesake, Henry William Harrington, served a short while in the Navy. His plantation in Richmond County contained 13,000 acres. He did not marry. He represented his county in the North Carolina House of Commons; also in the Constitutional Convention of 1835, and was among those in the latter body who were active in their efforts to secure the repeal of the constitutional provision aimed at Roman Catholics. In the course of the debates he said that twelve years before the Convention met, he had begun his efforts for the removal of this "stain on the escutcheon of North Carolina." James Auld Harrington, younger son of General Harrington, graduated from the University of North Carolina in 1808, and became a planter. He was a citizen of South Carolina and died in 1835. His elder brother, above mentioned, survived him many years.

*Marshall De Lancey Haywood.*



## JOHN HARVEY



THE origin of the Harvey family in North Carolina has been the subject of much speculation and has been accounted for in various ways. The traditional accounts credit Virginia with furnishing this distinguished family to North Carolina, but whatever may be true of the other branches of the family, this is not true of the branch from which John Harvey sprung. During the middle of the seventeenth century the first John Harvey of whom we have any record, and his wife Mary, lived "at ye Heath in Snetterfield Parish in Warwick Sheare in Ould England." One of their sons, Thomas Harvey, came to North Carolina some time about 1680 as private secretary to Governor John Jenkins. He himself afterwards served as Deputy Governor during the absence of Governor Archdale. Upon his arrival here he found others of his name who were already prominent in the official life of the Province. They had settled in Perquimans County of Albemarle Sound, occupying a strip of land between the Yawpim and Perquimans rivers known to this day as Harvey's Neck. Governor Jenkins died December 17, 1681. Within less than four months Thomas Harvey showed his devotion to the memory of his patron by marrying the bereaved widow Johannah. In those early days in North Carolina, when the number of men in the Province greatly exceeded the number of women, it was probably regarded as contrary to public policy for a spright-

ly woman to hide her charms behind a widow's veil. Six years after her second marriage Mrs. Harvey died. Thomas Harvey bore his loss with becoming fortitude and within less than six months resigned his sorrows into the keeping of Sarah Laker, the daughter of a prominent colonial official, Benjamin Laker, and his wife Jane Dey. By her Thomas Harvey had three children. The second son, a Thomas also, married Elizabeth Cole, daughter of Colonel James Cole of Nansemond County, Virginia. This union continued only a few years, Thomas Harvey dying during the winter of 1729. He left four sons, Thomas, John, Benjamin and Miles. In his will he made provisions and left directions for the education of these boys; another legacy in this will was one of a hundred pounds proclamation money for the poor of Perquimans County.

The second of these four boys was destined to become the most illustrious of the Harvey family. John Harvey was born some time about 1725. He married Mary Bonner, daughter of Thomas and Abigail Bonner of Beaufort County, by whom he became the father of ten children.

We know nothing about John Harvey's early life. As soon as he was old enough to understand such things he manifested a lively interest in provincial politics; the traditions of his family, no less than his own inclinations, would lead him to do so. Such a promising young man, supported by family influence, wealth, and education, could not fail to attract the attention of the local politicians of the popular party. He had scarcely laid aside his childish ways before they brought him forward as a candidate for a seat in the General Assembly.

John Harvey's first service in the Assembly began with the June session of 1746. He took his seat on the thirteenth day of the month. From that day to the day of his death the Assembly was to be the arena where he was to win fame for himself and help to win liberty for his country. He arrived one day after the organization of the House which was effected by the election of Samuel Swann as Speaker. The session was a short one, lasting but sixteen days, and Harvey had only to listen and learn.



Harvey had entered the Assembly, however, just in time to become involved in one of the bitterest contests connected with our colonial history. The early North Carolina charters had given to the counties of Chowan, Perquimans, Pasquotank, Currituck, Bertie, and Tyrrell the privilege of sending five members each to the Assembly, and had allotted to all the other counties only two each. As these latter counties grew in wealth and population they looked with jealous eyes on the extra privilege of the older counties. Rivalries and friction enhanced by local prejudices arose out of this inequality. By having five members each the northern counties had a majority of the Assembly, and of course controlled legislation. The southern counties could do nothing but patiently await their opportunity to strike a more nearly even balance. It happened that just at the time John Harvey entered the Assembly the Governor, Gabriel Johnston, a hard-headed Scotchman, threw himself into the controversy on the side of the southern counties. In November, 1746, he called the Assembly to meet at Wilmington. On account of the difficulties in reaching Wilmington at that season of the year, the northern members had declared that they would not attend an Assembly held at that place. Relying upon the fact that they composed a majority of the members, they expected, of course, that no session could be held without them. In this they reckoned without their host. Little did John Harvey and his colleagues think that Samuel Swann and his colleagues, for the sake of a petty sectional advantage, would surrender one of the most cherished constitutional principles for which the colonists had ever contended—that no number less than a majority of the Assembly ought to be considered a quorum. But this is just what the southern members did, for at the bidding of a Royal Governor they formed a house composed of less than a majority, and proceeded to business. Only two bills were passed at this session—one to make New-Bern the capital of the province, the other to reduce the representation of the northern counties to two members each. After this had been done the Governor with many honeyed words sent them home. His management had been successful, but he raised a storm he could not quiet.

Of course the northern counties refused to recognize the validity of laws passed by this rump Assembly. So when the Governor issued his writs for a new election, commanding them to choose two members each, they refused obedience, and chose five each as usual. John Harvey was one of those elected for Perquimans. But the Governor declared the elections void. Thereupon the northern counties appealed to the King. The controversy was long and bitter. Eight years passed before a decision was reached on the appeal, and during these years the northern counties, refusing to send only two members each—the only number the Governor would recognize—were not represented in the Assembly of the Province. It was not until March 14, 1754, that the Board of Trade filed its report with the King; the decision was in favor of the northern counties.

Governor Johnston, dying in 1752, did not live to see the end of the controversy he had helped to fasten on the colony. His successor was Arthur Dobbs. He arrived in North Carolina in October, 1754, bringing instructions to call a new Assembly in which the representation was to be distributed as it had been prior to 1746. This Assembly met in New-Bern, December 12th. John Harvey was returned at the head of the Perquimans delegation. John Campbell was there from Bertie, leader of the northern forces; Samuel Swann from Onslow, leader of the southern faction. The northern faction was of course hostile to Swann, and for the first time in fourteen years an opponent for the speakership appeared. A most interesting contest resulted between Campbell and Swann in which the former was elected.

With his return to the Assembly John Harvey began his long, uninterrupted career of service which was to end only with his death. He gradually won his way forward in the councils of the province to a place second to none. As early as 1756 he became the recognized leader of the northern party. When the Assembly met in September of that year, John Campbell was too ill to attend and so sent in his resignation as Speaker. The northern members at once nominated Harvey to succeed him. It so happened however that, as Campbell's resignation was unexpected and no

one looked for a contest for the speakership, several of the northern party did not arrive in time to take part in the election. Their absence gave the southern members the majority and they elected Swann. This was the last attempt to defeat Swann. Events soon occurred which welded the two parties together for united resistance to the encroachments of the Governor, and harmony being the first essential for success, Swann was allowed to preside over the Assembly without opposition until he voluntarily resigned the honor.

The great event of Governor Dobbs's administration was the French and Indian War. No man was more British in his enmity to the French or more Protestant in his hostility to their religion than was Arthur Dobbs. He made the wringing of money out of the Province for the prosecution of the war the paramount object of his administration. The Assembly met his demands as liberally as they thought the situation and circumstances of the Province justified, but they could not satisfy the Governor. Greater demands pressed in impolitic language gave birth to sharp controversies over the limits of the prerogatives of the Crown and the extent of the privileges of the Assembly. In these John Harvey was one of the leaders in stoutly maintaining that the only authority on earth that could legally levy taxes on the people was their General Assembly.

While the war occupied public attention little else occurred to attract general interest. The time and attention of the Assembly were largely given to schemes for internal improvements. John Harvey was concerned in much of this uninterestingly necessary work. He served on most of the important committees, and was frequently called upon to preside over the House while in committee of the whole. This was the school in which he received the training that was to enable him to lead the House in the darker days to come.

Governor Dobbs died in March, 1765, and was succeeded by William Tryon. Tryon's first Assembly met at New-Bern, May 3, 1765. He laid before the House some correspondence relative to the establishment of a postal route through the Province, and

recommended that an appropriation be made for the purpose. This was of course a matter of the first importance, and the Assembly, desiring more information than was then available, resolved to postpone final action until the needed data could be collected. However, "desirous that a matter of such public utility should take effect" at once, the House appointed a committee to arrange with the postmaster-general for a temporary route until more definite action could be taken. The chairman of this committee was John Harvey. The work was pushed with vigor and success, and a route was laid out from Suffolk in Virginia to the South Carolina boundary line, a distance of two hundred and ninety-seven miles. In a letter to Governor Bull of South Carolina urging him to have the route continued to Charleston, Governor Tryon says, evidently referring to the committee, that the route was established through North Carolina "by the assiduity of some gentlemen" of this Province. It is scarcely necessary to add that the route proved of the greatest advantage to North Carolina in the great struggle to which the country was approaching, but in a way little relished by William Tryon.

In December Tryon dissolved the old Assembly and issued writs for the election of a new one. Nearly a year passed, however, before he allowed the members to come together, and the Assembly did not meet until November 3, 1766. On that day Richard Caswell, representing Dobbs County, "moved that John Harvey, Esquire, be chosen Speaker; and (he) was unanimously chosen Speaker and placed in the chair accordingly." And so John Harvey had at last come to his own. The place now assumed as leader of the Province he never lost, though once temporarily laid aside on account of ill-health. It is, of course, impossible from the bare records that have come down to us to estimate accurately the exact share which John Harvey had in the stirring scenes enacted in the Province from now until his death. But we do know that his position as leader of the Assembly carried with it the leadership of the popular party in the Province. How he bore himself in that exalted and responsible position the success of that revolution guided by him in its inception bears witness.

Grave matters awaited the attention of Mr. Speaker Harvey and the North Carolina Assembly. The Massachusetts Assembly in February, 1766, and the Virginia Assembly in the following May, issued their famous circular letters to the colonies inviting their coöperation in resisting taxation by the British Parliament. They protested against the acts aimed at the regulation of the internal policy of the colony, and urged the evident necessity that in their remonstrances and petitions to the King against these acts "the representations of the several Assemblies should harmonize with each other." In November John Harvey laid copies of these letters before the North Carolina Assembly. The members seem to have missed the real significance of the proposal they contained—united action, the thing most dreaded by the British Ministry—declined to join with the other colonies in their protests, and gave John Harvey merely verbal directions to reply to the letters. A committee was appointed, however, consisting of John Harvey, Joseph Montfort, Samuel Johnston, Joseph Hewes, and Edward Vail, to draw up an address to the King for the North Carolina Assembly. Henry Eustace McCulloh, through Harvey's influence, was named agent to present the address. Both Johnston and Hewes disapproved of these proceedings and declined to act on the committee; the other three members drew up an address and sent it to McCulloh, who duly presented it to His Majesty. In his letter of instructions to McCulloh, Harvey improved upon the action of the Assembly by directing him to act with the agents of the other colonies.

A new Assembly met in October, and Harvey was again unanimously elected Speaker. The Assembly and the Governor met on good terms, and at first the business of the session proceeded as smoothly as a ship on the glassy bosom of a tranquil lake. But as beneath the smoothest surface often dangerous reefs lie hid on which the unsuspecting vessel goes to wreck, so beneath the surface of smooth words with which the Governor greeted the House lay the rocks of disaster. In the preceding May the Virginia Assembly had passed a series of resolutions denying the right of parliament to levy taxes on the colonies and maintaining the right

of the people peaceably to assemble for the redress of grievances. These resolutions were sent to the Speakers of the several Assemblies as the circular letters had been sent. Harvey laid them before the North Carolina Assembly November 2d. This time the members redeemed themselves by spreading on their journal similar resolutions as expressive of the sentiments of North Carolina. When Tryon learned of these treasonable resolutions he declared that they "sapped the foundation of confidence and gratitude," and therefore dissolved the Assembly.

When the new Assembly met at New-Bern in December, 1770, Richard Caswell was elected Speaker. It has been frequently stated that the Assembly took this step because they were anxious to placate Tryon, and John Harvey on account of his bold stand for the privileges of the people was not acceptable to the Governor. Such a statement is not only erroneous, but does a great injustice to all the persons concerned. It is an insinuation that the Assembly could stoop to the sacrifice of their leader in order to please a Royal Governor; it is an insinuation that Tryon had no better sense than to bite at the bribe; it is an insinuation that Richard Caswell was not true to the interests of the people and was willing to lend himself as a peace offering at the expense of his leader; it is an insinuation that John Harvey was willing to show the white feather after having so arrogantly waved the red flag. There is no need to seek such a complicated explanation of such a simple event; the plain truth is that John Harvey was at home sick when the Assembly convened and so a substitute had to be found. What better substitute could be found for bold John Harvey than the versatile Richard Caswell? It may as well be said here that John Harvey's relations with Tryon were of the most friendly, and even confidential, nature. In that event in Tryon's career for which he has been most blamed, the Regulator War, he received the sympathy and support of John Harvey. The Regulator disorders reached their climax at Alamance, after which Tryon went to New York, and Josiah Martin came to North Carolina.

Martin met his first Assembly at New-Bern November 19, 1771.

Not many days passed before he quarrelled with the House over a measure which he denounced as "a monstrous usurpation of authority that proves irrefragably the propensity of this people to democracy." He little dreamed that the time was near at hand when the proudest boast of "this people" would be this very "propensity to democracy."

The Assembly did not meet again until January, 1773. Richard Caswell, whose bold conduct had been the cause of Martin's wrath, might very justly have demanded that the members endorse his conduct by reëlecting him Speaker. But realizing that it was an improper time for self-seeking, he deferred to the real leader of the Assembly, and himself nominated John Harvey. From this session till the end of royal rule in North Carolina John Harvey was continuously elected Speaker of the Assembly without opposition. This January session ended in confusion. During the preceding summer Governor Martin, acting under certain instructions from the King which the Assembly had positively declined to follow, had caused the boundary line between North Carolina and South Carolina to be run in such a way as to operate to the disadvantage of this province. He now called upon the Assembly to defray the expenses of this work and the House peremptorily and sharply refused. In order to give them an opportunity to reconsider their action, which, under the rules of the House, could not be done at that session, Martin prorogued the session from March 6th to March 9th. On the 9th when he was ready to meet the Assembly again, he found to his astonishment that the majority of the members had gone home. He therefore convened the remaining ones and commanded them to form a House. They refused unless a majority of the members should return. When Martin asked John Harvey if he expected a sufficient number to return to make a majority, Harvey replied that he had not "the least expectation" that any such event would occur. In an outburst of rage Martin declared that "the Assembly had deserted the business and interests of their constituents and flagrantly insulted the dignity and authority of government," and forthwith dissolved them.

It was now becoming apparent to all Americans that if they were to make a successful stand for their liberties they must stand together. So when John Harvey at the December session in 1773 laid before the House letters from Virginia proposing that each colony appoint a committee of correspondence to keep in touch with the committees of the other colonies, the idea found ready acceptance. The following were elected a committee for North Carolina: John Harvey, Robert Howe, Cornelius Harnett, William Hooper, Richard Caswell, Edward Vail, John Ashe, Joseph Hewes, and Samuel Johnston. Thus North Carolina took her first step towards union. The next step was the natural consequence of the first and was easy to take. This was the call that now went abroad throughout the country for a Continental Congress. When Martin learned that North Carolina was determined to join in this Congress he determined to prevent it by refusing to call the Assembly together until too late to elect delegates. Fortunately his private secretary communicated this intelligence to John Harvey. Harvey flew into a rage, and exclaimed angrily, "In that case the people will call one themselves!" "He was in a very violent mood," wrote Samuel Johnston to William Hooper, "and declared that he was for assembling a Convention independent of the Governor, and urged upon us to coöperate with him. He says he will lead the way, and will issue handbills under his own name, and that the committee of correspondence ought to go to work at once."

Harvey's bold and revolutionary proposition fell upon willing ears. The people rallied to his support; the Convention was called; and in defiance of Governor Martin's proclamation forbidding it, met at New-Bern, August 25, 1774. Seventy-one delegates were present, among them the ablest men in the colony. When they came to choose their presiding officer all eyes turned to one man, the father of the Convention, John Harvey. A series of resolutions was passed denouncing the acts of Parliament, stating the claims of the Americans, and expressing approval of the call for a Continental Congress to which delegates were elected. John Harvey was authorized to call another Convention whenever



he thought it necessary. No more significant step has ever been taken in North Carolina than the successful meeting of this Convention. It revealed the people to themselves; they now began to understand that there was no special magic in the writs and proclamations of a Royal Governor; they themselves could appoint delegates and organize legislatures without the intervention of a king's authority. This was a long step towards independence; John Harvey took it, the people followed.

Thwarted in his plans to hold North Carolina aloof from the Continental Congress, Martin made the best of a bad situation and summoned the Assembly to meet him at New-Bern, April 4, 1775. John Harvey immediately called a Convention to meet at the same place April 3d. It was intended that the members of the Assembly should also be delegates to the Convention. This plan was carefully carried out, though as the Convention was a larger body than the Assembly, there were members of the former who were not members of the latter. On April 3d, John Harvey was again unanimously elected Moderator of the Convention, and on the next day Speaker of the Assembly. The peculiar situation is therefore presented of one set of men forming two bodies—one legal, sitting by the authority of the Royal Governor and in obedience to his call; the other illegal, sitting in defiance of the Royal Governor's authority and in direct disobedience of his proclamation. We have the curious spectacle of the Governor calling on the former body in the strongest language at his command to join him in dispersing the latter body composed of the same men whose aid he solicited. "When the Governor's private secretary was announced at the door," wrote Colonel Saunders, "in an instant, in the twinkling of an eye, Mr. Moderator Harvey would become Mr. Speaker Harvey and . . . gravely receive His Excellency's message."

The Convention remained in session four days. Its work belongs to the general history of the State rather than to the biography of John Harvey. The last session came to order at nine o'clock in the morning of April 7. Harvey was again authorized to call a Convention whenever he deemed it necessary, but as he was in feeble health, the same authority was granted, in the event

of Harvey's death, to Samuel Johnston. After this one thing only remained to be done—to give expression of the grateful thanks of the convention to John Harvey (now about to retire forever from the contentions and worries of earthly conventions) for the "judicious and faithful" exercise of the duties of his office and the great services he thereby rendered his country.

The clock now pointed to the hour of ten and the provincial convention quietly transformed itself into the General Assembly. The Governor's opening message to the Assembly was as insulting a document as any minion of royalty ever wrote to the bold representatives of a free people, proud of their freedom. The House denounced it in a series of vigorous and radical resolutions which they instructed their committee to embody in their reply to the Governor's message. When these came before Martin's eyes his indignation and anger rose to white heat, and in words of wrath, April 8, 1775, he dissolved the Assembly and so put an end forever to British rule in North Carolina.

During the months of April and May the people of North Carolina saw many events of far-reaching significance. They saw the assembling and adjournment of the most revolutionary body ever held in North Carolina. They saw the convening and dissolution, after a stormy session of four days, of the last Assembly held here under royal rule. They saw the Governor of the Province openly defied in his palace at the capital, closely watched by armed men, and virtually besieged in his own house. They saw the guns he had set up for his own protection seized and carried off by the very men he had been sent to rule. And finally, they saw the flight of the terrified ruler from his palace at New-Bern to the protection of the guns of Fort Johnston at the mouth of the Cape Fear. The atmosphere was charged with the spirit of revolution. Men sucked it into their lungs with the very air they breathed and then showed it forth to the world in their acts. The Committees of Safety were everywhere active in the discharge of their various duties, legislating, judging, executing, combining within themselves all the different functions of government. The news of the battle of Lexington spread like wildfire through the Province

and men everywhere flew to arms. The committee of Mecklenburg met at Charlotte and immortalized the 31st of May. The proceedings of the second Continental Congress, which met amid all this excitement, were followed with the keenest interest. Deserted by their Governor, left without a legislative body or the legal means of convening one, totally without courts of justice, nothing was left for the people to do to save themselves from anarchy but to take the administration of their government into their own hands. This they did, and the people from subjects became sovereigns, from colonists became citizens, and their country from a Province became a State, in reality if not in name.

And so the destined revolution had come. No man had done more to produce it than John Harvey. No man watched its outcome with greater hopes. But it is one of the tragedies of human life that men often are not permitted to see and enjoy the fruits of their labors and sacrifices. So it was with John Harvey. On the last day of May in the year 1775, those three sterling patriots, Robert Howe, Cornelius Harnett, and John Ashe, who had fought so many battles for liberty by John Harvey's side and under his leadership, wrote to Samuel Johnston: "We sincerely condole with all the friends of American liberty in this Province on the death of our worthy friend Colonel Harvey. We regret it as a public loss, especially at this critical juncture." Few the words, but sincere the tribute, from those who knew his virtues and appreciated his worth.

*R. D. W. Connor.*





## WILLIAM H. HILL



HERE is a family tradition that at the time of the marriage of Judge Maurice Moore, his classmate at Harvard, William Hill, came from Boston to the Cape Fear to attend the marriage; at any rate, about that time, there being much communication and trade between Wilmington and Boston, and many of the Cape Fear youths being educated in New England, some very bright young men came from Boston to make their homes on the Cape Fear, and among them was William Hill.

This gentleman having graduated at Harvard in 1756, at first taught school on the Cape Fear, and then became a merchant at Brunswick. On September 29, 1757, he married Margaret Moore, a daughter of Nathaniel Moore, and a niece of "King" Roger Moore and of Colonel Maurice Moore; and thus he became closely allied with that large and influential family. He himself was always spoken of as an elegant and accomplished gentleman and a noble man. The first historical reference that is preserved of him is in the Journal of Josiah Quincy, who visited the Cape Fear in March, 1773, for the purpose of arranging to establish a Committee of Correspondence on Public Affairs. Mr. Quincy says:

"Lodged the last night in Brunswick, N. C., at the house of William Hill, Esquire, a most sensible, polite gentleman, and though a Crown officer, a man replete with sentiments of general liberty, and

warmly attached to the cause of American freedom." On March 28th Mr. Quincy's entry is: "I go to church this day at Brunswick—hear W. Hill read prayers."

Mr. Hill was a duly appointed lay reader for the church at Brunswick.

In 1774 the chief question between the Colonies and the Crown was as to paying the tax on tea. After a great deal of agitation and compromise, it was finally arranged that the Colonies might have the East India tea on such terms and conditions that it was thought all objection to paying the duty would be removed; and in the fall of that year some tea was imported into the Cape Fear in the brig Sally, owned by Mr. Hill, for himself and others. On November 23, 1774, the freeholders of the town of Wilmington met and appointed a committee the more effectually to carry into execution the resolutions of the Continental Congress; and the first matter brought before the committee for action was this importation of tea; and they asked Mr. Hill whether the tea might not be regularly despatched out of the Colony by the vessel it came in. Mr. Hill at once replied that he did not know what the collector and controller of the King's Customs might say about that, but he added: "The safety of the people is, or ought to be, the supreme law; the gentlemen of the committee will judge whether this law (the safety of the people) or an act of Parliament should at this particular time operate in North Carolina. I believe every tea importer will cheerfully submit to their determination. I can answer for, gentlemen, your most obedient."

From this it will appear that Mr. Hill at that early date enunciated the doctrine that the safety of the people, as determined on by themselves, was superior to an act of Parliament. At that time no one had gone farther in laying down principles for public action. During the course of the Revolutionary War Brunswick became so exposed that the merchants and gentlemen there abandoned their homes and removed to Wilmington. At the end of the war Mr. Hill had saved something out of the general impoverishment that was the fate of the Cape Fear gentlemen.

Mr. Hill left four sons: John, Nathaniel, William Henry and

Thomas. Nathaniel was sent to Scotland, was apprenticed to an apothecary and received his degree as a physician at the Medical College of Edinburgh, and was a celebrated physician of Wilmington. Thomas, the youngest son, was a planter, a man of fine culture and high standing, and was the father of Dr. John Hampden Hill, and others. The eldest son, John, in 1781, was an officer in the Continental Line, fought with Greene at Eutaw Springs and continued with him in the service until peace was declared and the army disbanded in 1783. He also left a numerous progeny, among his children being Dr. Frederick J. Hill, of Orton, who has been called "the father of the common school system in North Carolina."

The third son of Mr. William Hill, William Henry Hill, the subject of this sketch, was a lawyer and a planter. He studied law under Mr. Barrett in Boston. When North Carolina became a member of the Union in 1789, General Washington appointed him the first District Attorney of the United States for the District of North Carolina. He was a gentleman of brilliant parts and finely educated. When about 1794 parties began to rise, he adhered to the administration, which was under control of the Federalists. He represented his county in the State Senate in 1794 and he was a representative of his district in Congress for two terms from 1799 to 1803. Jefferson had been beaten for the presidency in 1796 and Mr. Hill was a strong opponent of Jefferson's election. At the next presidential election he also was active against the Virginia statesman, and indeed Jefferson lost three votes in North Carolina that year which he had carried four years before. The election was thrown into the House and Mr. Hill, along with Dickson, Grove and Henderson, voted for Aaron Burr in preference to Jefferson. At that time Burr was regarded as one of the finest characters and most admirable men in the United States. Mr. Hill warmly sustained the Adams administration, and one of the last acts of President Adams on the night his term expired was to appoint additional Federal Judges under an Act of Congress, known to history as the "Midnight Judges," and one of his appointees was the subject of this sketch. Jeffer-

son, however, ignored these appointments and they did not take effect. At the succeeding congressional elections the Republicans in North Carolina made great efforts to defeat Hill and Grove, and were successful, and Mr. Hill retired from public life. During his service in Congress party rancor rose to an unparalleled height; personal abuse and vituperation were commonly indulged in, while indeed during that formative period of our institutions there were those who honestly feared that Republicanism was only another name for anarchy, and that Federalism was inconsistent with the freedom of the people. So rancorous was the animosity engendered that the outgoing president, Adams, would lend no countenance to the inauguration of his successor, but left the Capitol and drove out of the city before Jefferson took the oath as President.

After his retirement, Mr. Hill continued to practice law, and was an eminent advocate; it is said that he had a fine voice, was fluent, eloquent and impressive.

He married first Elizabeth Moore; then Alice Starkey, both of whom died without issue; and finally he married Eliza Maria Ashe, a daughter of General John Ashe.

In May, 1784, Captain John Hill bought from Mary Harnett, the widow of Cornelius Harnett, an estate in the suburbs of Wilmington. The name the property bore at that time was "Maynard," and under that name it was conveyed to Captain John Hill; on December 9, 1788, Mr. Hill conveyed that property to his brother, William Henry Hill, who made his home there, and who called it "Hillton," the name which it has ever since borne. Dr. John Hampden Hill ascribes the origin of the name to Captain Hilton, who explored the Cape Fear in 1663, the river along there being called Hilton River; but the property does not appear to have been known as Hilton prior to its occupancy by the subject of this sketch.

Mr. Hill's circle of friends was among the most cultivated gentlemen of the State, and Hillton was the seat of that elegant entertainment for which the Cape Fear country was so justly famous. In December, 1799, Mrs. Hill accompanied her husband to

Philadelphia. There she met with her first loss—the death of her little girl. A letter from Philadelphia thus alludes to the incident:

“Mr. and Mrs. Hill have gone to Bordenton to pass the remainder of the summer. . . . Though it is a severe trial to their fortitude, it is one happy effect of their religion that it teaches them perfect resignation to the will of Heaven.”

The following children arrived at maturity: Anna, who became Mrs. Charles Wright, and whose son, William Henry Wright, graduated at the head of his class at West Point, and was a distinguished engineer officer; Mary, who became the wife of Dr. James F. McRee; Julia, who married Dr. Ezekiel Hall, and was the mother of Justice Samuel Hall of the Supreme Court of Georgia; William and Joseph Alston.

Mr. Hill's useful and brilliant career was brought to an untimely close by his death in 1809.

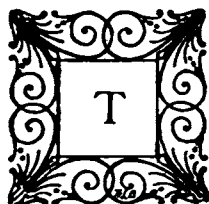
*S. A. Ashe.*







## JOSEPH ALSTON HILL



THE late Mr. James G. Burr, of Wilmington, has left his impressions of Joseph Alston Hill, a son of Mr. William H. Hill and his wife, Eliza Ashe, and named for his cousin, Joseph Alston, of South Carolina.

He was born at Hilton, his father's residence, in 1800, and at the age of nine had the misfortune to lose his father. His mother, however, directed his education, and he graduated at Yale College, and was trained for the bar at the celebrated Litchfield Law School. He came to the bar with a mind probably better disciplined than that of any other man who had preceded him in North Carolina. Thus prepared, thus skilled in dialectics, with a genius equal to the greatest occasion and loftiest efforts, it is no wonder, says Mr. Burr, though he died at the early age of 35, that he left behind him a fame co-extensive with the State. He seems to have inherited rare oratorical powers from his grandfather, General John Ashe, who had the reputation of being a wonderful orator, Mr. Strudwick declaring that there were not four men in London equal to him. Mr. Hill's gesticulation was graceful and his voice full, rich and flexible. He had no rival of his years as a debater and orator, and no superior of any age in North Carolina. His talents were versatile, and he could as the occasion demanded, convince, convulse with laughter, or move to tears. His style was chaste, not florid, not disdaining

ornament, but using it simply for illustration, and yet his oratory was often fervid. His speeches before the Linonian Society, when a lad, on Fisher's Resolutions, on the Bank Bill and Tariff or Nullification, sustained what is claimed for him. In the Internal Improvement Convention at Raleigh in 1833, he met in debate the ablest men in the State, and the journals show that he triumphed in carrying all the resolutions he submitted, and tradition reports that so splendid was his exhibition of ability that his claim to leadership was generally, if not universally, conceded. The great question before that Convention was whether the system of Internal Improvements should be based on lines running North and South, or on East and West lines. Governor Graham, then at the zenith of his fine powers, advocated the former; Mr. Hill, the latter. The late Mr. William Ruffin portrayed to the writer the great triumph which Mr. Hill achieved on that occasion. Indeed Judge Gaston is quoted by Mr. Burr as pronouncing Mr. Hill the most brilliant man of his age in North Carolina.

In social life without pretension, distinguished for his playful humor, his satire, which left no sting in the wound, his fund of anecdote, his joyous vivacity, and his delightful abandon, he was the centre of attraction always, and his society was sought by people distinguished for politeness and hospitality and somewhat given to conviviality; but he did not give entirely to society what nature designed for nobler uses. He did not neglect the duties of his profession which involved labor and study, and he was so close an observer and so diligent a student in his private hours that his advice was asked by the old and grave, who valued his wisdom and learning as much as the more volatile his pleasantry and fun.

It was in the year 1831, at the Fall term of the Superior Court for New Hanover County, that six negroes were placed on trial for their lives charged with attempting to excite an insurrection among the blacks against the whites. The horrid massacre of the whites, men, women and children, in the Nat Turner rising, had recently occurred, and although there was much feeling in the community, the trial was conducted with the utmost fairness and

impartiality. The negroes had the benefit of the ablest counsel their owners could obtain. That distinguished jurist, Honorable Robert Strange, subsequently United States Senator, and grandfather of Bishop Strange, presided with great dignity. Mr. Alexander Troy was Solicitor, and the Court appointed Mr. Hill to assist the Solicitor, and in fact he conducted the trial throughout. Mr. Burr says:

"I shall never forget the impression made upon me by the death-like silence that reigned in that crowded court room when Mr. Hill rose to address the jury. His exordium was delivered in calm and composed manner, and without the least exhibition of feeling, but as he proceeded in his argument he seemed to be transformed, his crest rose, his form dilated and his eyes flashed continuous fire, while his rapid but graceful gesticulation added much to the impressiveness of the scene. His denunciations were overwhelming, his sarcasm withering, and his burning eloquence flowed onward and onward like the rush of a mighty mountain torrent. The doom of the prisoners at the bar was sealed; it could be seen in the compressed lips and clinched hands of the jury."

It was a magnificent effort, causing the heart to throb and the pulse to leap with a quicker beat. Mr. Burr adds:

"The six criminals who were convicted were executed together on the same scaffold."

Mr. Hill died in the summer of 1835 from an attack of bilious fever, before he had reached the prime of his life, and in the midst of an active, useful and honorable career. He was probably the most eloquent orator that the State of North Carolina has produced.

*S. A. Ashe.*



## LEWIS LYNDON HOBBS

**L**EWIS LYNDON HOBBS is a native of Guilford County and was born on the 17th of May, 1849, at New Garden, North Carolina. His parents were Lewis and Phœbe Cook Hobbs. He was named for Lyndon Swaim, a highly-esteemed citizen of Greensboro to whom his father was much attached.

The religious denomination to which President Hobbs belongs, and which founded the college over which he presides, was the first to gain a foothold in the Carolina wilderness. The first place of worship erected within the State was the Meeting House at Pasquotank, finished in 1703, which has been standing until within a few years. George Fox, the founder of the Society of Friends, himself came to this settlement in 1672 to visit the Friends and encourage them not only in preaching the gospel to Indians as well as white men, but in founding schools in which "their children should be taught everything useful in creation." Although the previous year Edmundson found but one Friend in the settlement, with such precepts and examples their numbers quickly increased, and it would have been surprising had the Friends exerted a less powerful influence than they did upon the educational, religious, and social life of the early settlers, and later upon the communities where they were established. Meetings began to be held as early as 1677; and the Yearly Meeting, composed of



Sincerely Yours  
Le Le Hobbs

the various local Meetings scattered throughout the colony, was established in 1698; and in 1791 it was removed from Centre to New Garden, where many Friends established themselves earlier than 1754, and where in 1837 New Garden Boarding School was opened to boys and girls alike. Here President Hobbs received his preparatory training.

His ancestors came from Pennsylvania with the wave of Scotch-Irish and Quaker emigration which swept southward about the middle of the eighteenth century. His father was a teacher, a man above the average in education and spiritual refinement, a dignified, lovable character. He taught in the "little brick schoolhouse" which the Friends of New Garden at once built near their Meeting House. He died while still a young man, when his son Lyndon was only three months old. "The little boy will never know his father," he said with regret, and this has been perhaps the keenest sorrow of his son's life.

If he was forced to begin life without a father's love and care, he was doubly blessed in the strong, courageous mother, who filled to the best of her ability the place of both parents to her children. Inheriting much from his worthy father and absorbing the gentle and ennobling influences which his mother cast about him, President Hobbs began early to foster principles of integrity and uprightness and to make the best of the opportunities about him, and even to make opportunities in the midst of difficulty, in order that he might cultivate his mind and equip himself for usefulness in life. Having received his preparatory training at New Garden Boarding School, now Guilford College, from there in 1872 he entered Haverford College, near Philadelphia. This is also a Quaker institution, founded by the combined action of the Friends of New England, New York, Pennsylvania and Baltimore, and is one of the best-equipped colleges in the country. While there he pursued his studies with a real love of learning and entered with zest into the college sports, both of which characteristics he happily still retains, so that not only in the class and lecture rooms, but on the ballground as well, the students have his cordial sympathy and coöperation. Upon his grad-

uation in 1876 he entered at once upon what has grown to be his life-work by accepting a place as teacher in the New Garden Boarding School. The classics were his chosen field, and for several years his work was largely confined to the Latin language and literature. After special work in this direction he received the degree of A. M. from his alma mater. Since that time he has studied at Clark University, Massachusetts, and has broadened his culture by intelligent observation while traveling in Europe.

In 1888 the Boarding School was changed to Guilford College, with additional buildings and greatly augmented funds, and the course of study so developed as to put it on a par with other colleges of the State. At that time L. Lyndon Hobbs was elected by the board of trustees as president, which position he has ever since continued to occupy. Entering zealously upon duty at the school, he has worked unceasingly for the welfare and improvement of the institution; and the establishment and success of the college is due in no small degree to his faith in its future and his intelligent realization of its present needs and opportunities. Not only has this care been exercised towards better equipment and larger endowments, but for the growth and symmetrical development of the individual students in all that is best and highest. He moves among them the embodiment of a cultured Christian gentleman, courteous toward all, thinking of self last, without guile, and his very presence commands the putting forth of the noblest and best that is in one's nature. The entire growth of the college during the fifteen years of his presidency, and the strong young men and women who have received their ideals here and have gone out to their work in the world, will perpetuate better than could any monument his love and loyalty to the cause of humanity.

From his youth a member of the Society of Friends, he has all his life manifested an interest in its welfare. As a boy he was punctual at the Sabbath School and constantly attended the meetings held in the old Revolutionary Meeting House at New Garden, where he had the privilege of hearing sermons from some of the most gifted ministers of the denomination both in this country

and from England. The seed fell into good ground and has been bearing fruit for years in a simple, loyal life lived for others far more than for any personal gain or glory. His attachment to the church is warm and sincere, and his execution of every trust imposed upon him is faithful to the extent of his ability. He has occupied almost every position of service within the denomination, having been clerk of Monthly and Quarterly Meetings, overseer, and for many years an elder. This position in the Society of Friends ranks with that of minister in responsibility and importance. For several years he has served the whole body of Friends in North Carolina as clerk of their Yearly Meeting, an office which embraces not only clerical duties, but those of presiding officer as well. It is often a very difficult thing to judge quickly and impartially of the merits and weight of opinions advanced. At such times his quickness and fine spiritual perception as well as good judgment and perfect fairness seem almost marvelous.

Not only within the bounds of his own denomination has his influence been felt. He has been active in every movement for the improvement of our public schools, and by addresses and personal persuasion has forwarded the cause of local taxation for educational purposes. Largely through his effort the first rural graded school was established in North Carolina, located in a handsome brick building upon the same piece of ground, but not the same spot, where his father taught the children of his day. For four years he was a member of the State Board of Examiners, and for several years of the County Board of Education. He has been chairman of the Guilford Graded School Board ever since its formation, and devotes both time and means to the advancement of the children of the community.

President Hobbs's writings have been mostly lectures, addresses, articles in reference to the college and its work and in reference to the Church or for its instruction and development. During his European trip he wrote a series of articles for the college magazine descriptive of his travels or of some phase of life that impressed him.



A man of retiring nature, he has by no means sought the honors that have come to him, but as they come he proves himself strong in the assumption of them and fitted to grace the position with dignity and honor. In his inaugural address he says:

"In accepting the position as first president of Guilford College I recognize the grave responsibility which is placed upon my shoulders, yet I am happy in the belief that I accept that charge with humility and in the fear of God, knowing full well that with the added responsibility will come added strength for serving my fellow-men in the cause of education. While I have not sought the headship of this institution, since it has fallen to my lot, I accept it as a divine commission, and pray to be found faithful in the discharge of my duties, in order to best promote the success of the institution in its grand mission of disseminating sound learning and molding Christian characters."

This prophetic hope has been most worthily fulfilled with yet greater hopes for the future.

In 1881 President Hobbs married Mary Mendenhall, eldest daughter of Dr. Nereus Mendenhall, a well-known educator of the past generation.

Should you ask that the life of President Hobbs be summed up in few words, none seem more fitting than those by the Psalmist, "Thy gentleness hath made me great."

*Gertrude Mendenhall.*





*J. P. Hobgood*



## FRANKLIN P. HOBGOOD



FRANKLIN P. HOBGOOD was born on his father's farm in Granville County, North Carolina, February 21, 1847. His grandfather, Thomas Fowler Hobgood, came to this country from Wales about the year 1770, and some years later settled in Granville County, North Carolina. His father, James Benton Hobgood, was a substantial farmer, highly regarded for his great force of character and for his sterling integrity. As an agriculturist he was energetic, progressive and successful. In the affairs of his county and section he took an unfaltering interest, and at the time of his death he was one of the most prominent figures in his county. Mr. Hobgood intermarried with Miss Elizabeth House, of Brunswick County, Virginia, in the year 1830. By her he had twelve children—six sons and six daughters—the subject of this sketch being the eighth child of this fine large family. Mrs. Hobgood was a woman of rare character, her virtues being yet held in high esteem by the older people of her section, who delight to speak her praises even now.

Reared upon the farm, Professor Hobgood was trained to the manly hardihood which can be won neither so quickly nor so thoroughly in any other occupation under the sun. Surrounded by the simple elements of rural life and pursuing the healthful tasks of such occupation, the future educator and philanthropist

won for himself the strength of body, breadth of mind, the moral force and fibre, the catholicity of sympathy, which make him a remarkable man among remarkable men.

His home was six miles distant from Oxford, where was situated a celebrated school for boys at that time presided over by James H. Horner, Esq. He rode on horseback to and from this school each day for a period of three years, thus traveling more than six thousand miles in preparing himself to enter college.

Much of his earlier reading and study was done by the fireside of a farmhouse, pine-knots being often used to give off both heat for the comfort of the body and for the enlightenment of the eye, while the young student was putting down those strong and deep foundations of learning upon which the work of his mature manhood now so securely rests. Those who have come upon the scene of active life in these later times know very little of the disadvantages whereunder the youth of the time of our Civil War labored in their efforts to secure the elements of culture; and pity it is that they also know too little of the peculiar strength and fineness of those fibres of character that are won in the dire battles with adverse conditions.

The preparatory education of the subject of this sketch was rudely interrupted near the close of the Civil War by his enrollment in a corps of Junior Reserves of the Confederate States. He served as a young soldier for the term of six months, a part of that time as a private in the ranks; but afterwards as a clerk to the brigadier commanding his corps. At the close of the war he returned to his home and promptly resumed his studies in preparation for college, having at that time among his classmates President Winston, of the North Carolina College of Agriculture and Mechanic Arts, and Associate-Justice Platt D. Walker, of the Supreme Court of North Carolina.

As soon as practicable, in January, 1866, he entered Wake Forest College; and, applying himself with great earnestness and assiduity, he was graduated in 1868 at the head of his class.

At about the age of sixteen years he conceived the purpose, from which he never swerved nor faltered for a moment, of following

the profession of a teacher, and his education was pursued with that end distinctly in view. He felt himself called to the work of teacher, and he has often been heard to say that he believed a call to that high vocation was as necessary to the teacher as is the divine call to him who is to be a minister at the altar of religion.

Shortly after being graduated he accepted a professorship in a school for girls conducted in the present Orphan Asylum buildings in the town of Oxford, and known at that time as St. John's College. In January, 1869, he was employed as principal of a boys' school in the town of Reidsville, North Carolina, where for two years he taught with most remarkable energy and success, in that short time preparing for college some of the most prominent men of the Piedmont region of his native State.

At the end of his two years of successful teaching at Reidsville the young educator became president of the Raleigh Female Seminary; and for ten years he maintained that institution in a high state of efficiency and success, evincing, to the satisfaction of an exacting public, that he was not alone a very fine teacher, but that he was also a man of exceptionally good executive ability as well. This seat of education was originally the residence of Colonel William Polk, at the head of Blount Street and beyond North Street. The buildings have since been demolished and removed. This Raleigh school for women was the first school of its kind that was established for Baptist girls after the war between the States; and its young president, then twenty-four years old, was among the first persons in the whole South to advance the standard of education for women and secure its essential re-adaptation to the changed conditions brought about by the tempests of war.

Professor Hobgood's conspicuous success in this Raleigh institution for women soon marked him out as a man qualified for a wider field and more permanent work than was possible in the institution wherewith he was then connected; and so, in 1880, he was called to the presidency of the Oxford Seminary, where for twenty-five years he has wrought manfully, tirelessly, and wisely, as well as successfully, for the better education of women

in the South; and where, in the zenith of his powers and usefulness, he is laboring at this moment to impress the future of his country and of the world by furnishing that future with the blessings of cultivated motherhood.

The Oxford Seminary wherewith Professor Hobgood is now associated, and with whose great influence upon the culture of the South his name will continue to be associated in the grateful memories of generations to come, is a Baptist school; and it was established in the year 1850 by the late Samuel Wait, D.D., whose memory in North Carolina is blessed and green, and will continue to be green and blessed while the people of the old Commonwealth have the power to gratefully recall those who have been their benefactors.

The late John Haynes Mills succeeded Dr. Wait in the presidency of the Oxford Seminary; and he, in turn, was succeeded by the subject of this sketch. Thus the names of Wait, Mills, and Hobgood are linked together in the making of an institution for the education of women that has few equals anywhere and has no superiors in the section of the South wherein it stands and for whose women it teaches and achieves.

In January, 1904, the buildings of this noble school were wholly destroyed by fire. Nothing else in the history of Professor Hobgood's connection with this school shows quite so plainly the quality of metal there is in this man as his determined action after the destruction of his school plant by fire. An ordinary man would have given up in despair under the pressure of his large losses, or else would have sought a position in some other institution. But he did not so. He devised plans for new and larger buildings, and set about the embodiment of his admirable plans with so much of intelligent vigor that the seminary began its next session on time in the completed new buildings, and has before it now a future fuller of promise than any other that ever beckoned it onward in time past and gone.

For nearly, or quite, thirty-five years Professor Hobgood has given himself to the higher education of women with an enthusiasm of devotion that is exceeded by nothing else but the rare

wisdom with which he has wrought in his chosen calling. And already he begins to reap his reward in the assured consciousness that thousands of his former pupils are now matrons presiding in cultured homes and radiating the fragrance of matronly Christian culture in their homes and in their social spheres from womanhood that got its bent and direction from his teachings and example.

Professor Hobgood's devotion to his chosen vocation has won for him a very high place among those who labor for the higher education of women. That his reputation has gone into other States is evidenced by the fact that a few years ago he was elected president of the Richmond Female Institute—now the Woman's College—of Richmond, Virginia. This position he promptly declined, preferring to remain at Oxford and build up a great school which should embody his own enlightened views as to what a modern school for women should be.

Not alone in his own particular field of effort have Professor Hobgood's abilities been recognized, but other spheres of usefulness and influence have been freely opened to him. For a number of years he has been chairman of the Board of Education of Granville County. He has been president of the Teachers' Assembly of North Carolina. For a quarter of a century he has been a member of the board of trustees of Wake Forest College. For twelve years he has been a member of the board of trustees of the Baptist Orphanage at Thomasville, North Carolina. In all these places of trust and responsibility he has shown himself to be a man of rare wisdom, prudence and ability. It is certain that he takes rank as an educator and philanthropist along with the first men of this Southern section.

On the 6th of October, 1868, before he had well entered upon the activities of life, he intermarried with Miss Mary A. Royall, a daughter of Reverend William Royall, D.D., LL.D., late professor of English in Wake Forest College. His marriage was very fortunate, Mrs. Hobgood being a woman of rare endowments of both heart and mind and in all respects a model wife and mother. They have reared a family of six children, five of whom

are living; one, a young man of highest promise, died at the age of twenty-one years. One son, Colonel F. P. Hobgood, of Greensboro, has already attained distinction in the profession of the law and has been prominently identified with the military of his native State. One of Professor Hobgood's daughters is the wife of F. W. Hancock, Esq., for many years the secretary and treasurer of the State Board of Pharmacy of North Carolina. Another daughter is the wife of General B. S. Royster, adjutant-general of North Carolina under both Governors Russell and Aycock and also a distinguished attorney-at-law at Oxford. One son is now a medical student in the State University. The youngest daughter, an accomplished young woman, is still with her parents to brighten their lives.

Professor Hobgood does not live unto himself alone. He is a man of catholic sympathies and throws the great weight of his personal influence into every movement that tends to enlarge men and bring about the conditions out of which comes the increase of industrial, social and civic righteousness.

He is a member of the Independent Order of Odd Fellows, of the Masonic fraternity, and also a Knight of Pythias. In politics he is an earnest and conscientious Democrat, believing fully that all the people are better than any of the people. In religious belief and practice he is a Baptist, though narrowness of religious belief is as foreign to his nature and interests as are the personal movements that lead to dishonor in any walk of life. He has always been active in the work of his own particular Church and in the general work of his denomination. He was for a number of years the honored moderator of the Flat River Baptist Association.

He was led to adopt the profession of teaching by his own personal judgment and preference; but he gratefully ascribes his first strong impulse to strive for the distinctions and real prizes of life to a noble woman who was at one time a teacher in his father's family, and whose beautiful life inspired him with an ambition to have somewhat to do in leading out the young minds of the world to the conquest of the "True, the Beautiful and the



Good." It was this early ambition that led him to the college at the first, and then onward to all that he has done and is doing for the elevation of the world and to the highest things.

He ascribes his success in life mainly to two influences, viz.: the quiet and simplicity of his home life on the farm, permeated and ennobled by the godly lives and examples of his father and mother, and to the splendid influence of his noble wife. Asked once to give a motto that might surely guide the young to large usefulness in the conduct of the movements of life, he said: "A spirit of helpfulness to others and a supreme devotion to personal duty will win anything here that is worth the winning"—and this seems to have been the keynote of his own useful and well-rounded life.

The editor of this sketch has known Professor Hobgood intimately for twenty years, and it is a pleasure to him to say a word as to his friend.

His nature is large. He has a large frame. He has a large mind. He has a large heart. His culture and information are extensive, but he uses them with entire modesty, the airs of the pedant being utterly distastful to him. He is simple in his tastes and unpretentious in his intercourse with men. He is friendly and companionable, being genial as few men are genial. He was fitted by nature, and he has fitted himself by study and personal service, to occupy a large place among the hosts of good men and women who are leading the world by right paths up from the lower to the higher things which lure them to come and take possession of their own.

*Baylus Cade.*



## JAMES HOGUN

**N**ORTH CAROLINA in the Revolution furnished ten regiments to the regular service—the Continental Line. Five of the colonels of these became general officers, the only generals North Carolina had in the regular service. They were General Robert Howe, who rose to be major-general—our sole major-general—and four brigadiers, General James Moore, who died early in the war; General Francis Nash, mortally wounded at Germantown and buried near the field of battle—a brother of Governor Abner Nash; General Jethro Sumner; and General James Hogun.

The lives and careers of the first three named are well known. For some reason the data as to the two last have been neglected. The Honorable Kemp P. Battle, by diligent search in many quarters, was able to restore to us much information as to General Jethro Sumner, of Warren County, and, indeed, to rehabilitate his memory. As to General James Hogun, of Halifax County, the task was more difficult. Little has been known beyond the fact that he was probably from Halifax County, and that he was a brigadier-general. The late Colonel William L. Saunders requested the writer to investigate and preserve to posterity whatever could now be rediscovered as to this brave officer.

It may be noted that North Carolina has not named a county or township or village in honor of either of the four generals—

Howe, Moore, Sumner, or Hogun: Moore County was named in honor of Judge Alfred Moore, of the United States Supreme Court. General Nash was the only one of the five thus honored, the county of Nash having been formed in 1777, the year of General Nash's death at Germantown.

General James Hogun was born in Ireland, but the year and place of his birth are unknown. The name is spelled Hogun, though usually in Ireland, where the name is not uncommon, it is written Hogan—with an a. He removed to Halifax County in this State, and to the Scotland Neck section of it. He married, October 3, 1751, Miss Ruth Norfleet of the well-known family of that name. In the Provincial Congress which met at Halifax April 4, 1776, and which framed our first State Constitution, James Hogun was one of the delegates for Halifax County. He was appointed paymaster in the Third Regiment (Sumner's), but November 26, 1776, he was elected colonel of the Seventh North Carolina Regiment, and on the 6th of December an election was ordered to fill the vacancy in the North Carolina Congress caused by his resignation as a member of that body.

Colonel Hogun marched North with the Seventh, and Colonel Armstrong with the Eighth, and both regiments arrived in time to take part in the battles of Brandywine and Germantown. That winter nine North Carolina regiments were in winter quarters at Valley Forge, Colonel Abram Sheppard's regiment, the Tenth, spent the winter in the smallpox camp at Georgetown on the Potomac. Quoting from the Prefatory Notes of Volume 13 of the State Records, it appears that in March the number of our privates at Valley Forge was 900; 50 had died since January in camp; 200 were then sick in camp, and an equal number were in hospitals in Pennsylvania and New Jersey. The officers of the Sixth Regiment had been sent home to recruit more men, and all new recruits and absentees were to be brought to camp. In May there were in camp, rank and file, 1450. On May 29th the Continental Congress resolved that the regiments in camp should be consolidated into new ones; and a call was made on North Carolina to raise four more battalions of Continentals.

Colonel Hogun and the supernumerary officers were directed to return to North Carolina for service in the new battalions. The Legislature provided that 2648 men should be detached from the militia to serve as Continentals for nine months, a certain quota being apportioned to each county, of which each militia company was to furnish its proper share. These drafted militia-men thus became Continentals, and after their nine months' actual service was completed they were to be exempt for a period of three years. The duty of organizing these troops fell on Colonel Hogun, who was elected to command the first battalion that was raised. In July, 1778, Colonel Hogun, having organized his regiment at Halifax, marched 600 strong to the northward. In August he reached Philadelphia and hastened on to Washington's headquarters at White Plains. In November Colonel Hogun with his regiment was engaged in throwing up fortifications at West Point, which was the beginning of fortifying that post which became so important and which has since been so famous in our history. At that time the four consolidated North Carolina regiments constituted a brigade under the command of Colonel Clark, numbering 1200, and were with Washington at Fredericksburg, thirty miles further east on the Connecticut line.

On January 9, 1779, Congress appointed Colonel Sumner and Colonel Hogun to be generals to fill the vacancies caused by the death of General Nash and by the promotion of General Howe. Colonel Hogun was senior in rank to Colonel Clark, who, entering the service as major on the 1st of September, 1775, in the following April became lieutenant-colonel, and in February, 1777, became colonel on the promotion of Nash as brigadier-general. Hogun was commissioned colonel of the Seventh Regiment in November, 1776, and although Clark was in command of the brigade, Hogun, who was on other service, was his senior. The Legislature of the State recommended Colonel Clark's promotion, and Colonel Clark was also warmly advocated by his brother-in-law, William Hooper, at that time a member of the Continental Congress. The officers of the brigade, however, generally sustained Hogun's right to promotion, he being the senior in com-

mission, and General Washington stated that while not undervaluing Colonel Clark's services, Colonel Hogun by his distinguished gallantry at Germantown had earned the promotion, and he was therefore elected and commissioned a brigadier-general on January 9, 1779, at the same time as General Sumner. General Hogun continued to serve with the army at the North until 1780. In the early part of 1779 General Sumner with his brigade was ordered South to aid in the defence of Georgia and South Carolina. He fought at Stono Ferry on June 20, 1779, and later General Hogun was ordered with his brigade also to reinforce General Lincoln in South Carolina.

At the head of his brigade he passed through Halifax and Wilmington, in February, 1780, and took part in the memorable defence of Charleston. When General Lincoln surrendered that city on the 12th of May, 1780, though he surrendered five thousand men, only one thousand eight hundred of them were regular troops, and the large part of these were General Hogun's North Carolina brigade. General Sumner, our other brigadier, who had commanded that part of the North Carolina line which was at Charleston before General Hogun's arrival, was at home on sick furlough, as were many officers who had lost employment by the consolidation of the depleted companies and regiments. With that exception, North Carolina's entire force of regulars was lost to her at this critical time. The surrendered militia was paroled, but the regular troops, headed by General Hogun, were conveyed to Haddrell's Point in the rear of Sullivan's Island, near Charleston. There they underwent the greatest privations of all kinds. They were nearly starved, but even a petition to fish, in order to add to their supply of food, was refused by the British. These troops were also threatened with deportation to the West Indies. General Hogun himself was offered leave to return on parole. Tempting as was the offer, he felt that his departure would be unjust to his men, whose privations he had promised to share. He also knew that his absence would aid the efforts of the British, who were seeking recruits among these half-starved prisoners. He fell a victim to his sense of duty, and died at Haddrell's Point

January 4, 1781, where he fills the unmarked grave of a hero. History affords no more striking incident of devotion to duty, and North Carolina should erect a tablet to his memory and that of those who perished there with him. Of the one thousand eight hundred regulars who went into captivity on Sullivan's Island with him, only seven hundred survived when they were paroled.

We do not know General Hogun's age, but as he had married in 1751 he was probably beyond middle life. In this short recital is found all that careful research has so far disclosed of a life whose outline proves it worthy of fuller commemoration. Could his last resting place be found, the tablet might well bear the Spartan's inscription: "*Siste viator, heroa calcas.*" "Pause, stranger. It is on a hero's dust you tread."

General Hogun left only one child, Lemuel Hogun, who married Mary Smith, of Halifax County. To Lemuel Hogun, March 14, 1786, North Carolina issued a grant for twelve thousand acres of land in Davidson County, Tennessee, near Nashville, as "the heir of Brigadier-General Hogun." In October, 1792, the United States also paid him \$5,250, being the seven years' half-pay voted by Congress to the heirs of brigadier-generals who had died in service. In 1814 Lemuel Hogun died, and is probably buried at the family burial-ground in Halifax County. General Hogun resided in Halifax County, North Carolina, about one mile from the present village of Hobgood. In 1818 the widow of Lemuel Hogun and her children moved to Tuscumbia, Alabama. Numerous descendants are to be found in that State and in Tennessee and Mississippi. In the late war General Hogun's papers, which might have furnished materials for history, were seized by the Federal troops and presumably destroyed, though it is barely possible they may be yet preserved in some Northern historical collection. It is known that among these papers there was at least one letter from Washington to General Hogun.

These five heroes—Howe, Moore, Nash, Sumner and Hogun—were, as has been said, the only generals from this State in the regular service. After the war Colonel Clark became a general in the United States Army.

We had several generals who commanded militia ordered out on three months' tour or on special service at sundry times, such as General Griffith Rutherford and General William Lee Davidson, for whom counties have been named: Generals Butler and Eaton and Lillington and Major-General Ashe and Major-General Caswell. General Davidson had been a lieutenant-colonel in the Continental Line, but was a brigadier-general of militia when killed at Cowan's Ford. There were other distinguished officers, as Colonel William R. Davie, Major Joseph Graham (who, as brigadier-general, commanded the brigade sent to Jackson's aid against the Creeks in 1812), and several others who acquired the rank of general after the Revolution.

The militia figured more prominently in that day than since. The important victories of Moore's Creek, King's Mountain and Ramsour's Mills were won solely by militia, and Cowpens and other fields by their aid. Rutherford and Gregory commanded militia brigades at Camden, as Butler and Eaton did at Guilford Court House and as General John Ashe did at Briar Creek. It may be of interest to name here the colonels of the ten North Carolina regiments of the Continental Line: First Regiment, James Moore. On his promotion to brigadier-general, Francis Nash. After his promotion, Thomas Clark. Alfred Moore, afterwards judge of the United States Supreme Court, was one of the captains. Second Regiment, Robert Howe. After his promotion to major-general, Alexander Martin. On his resignation, John Patten became colonel. In this regiment Hardy Murfree, from whom Murfreesboro in Tennessee is named, rose from captain to lieutenant-colonel; and Benjamin Williams, afterwards governor, was one of the captains. David Vance, grandfather of Governor Vance, was a lieutenant. Third Regiment, Jethro Sumner. After his promotion it was consolidated with the First Regiment. In this regiment Hal Dixon was a lieutenant-colonel and Pinketham Eaton was major, both distinguished soldiers; and William Blount, afterwards United States Senator, was paymaster. Fourth Regiment, Thomas Polk. General William Lee Davidson, killed at Cowan's Ford, was lieutenant-colonel of this

regiment, and William Williams was at Valley Forge adjutant. Fifth Regiment, Edward Buncombe, who died of wounds received at Germantown, and for whom Buncombe County is named. Sixth Regiment, Alexander Lillington and afterwards Gideon Lamb. John Baptista Ashe, of Halifax, who was elected governor in 1802, but died before qualifying, was lieutenant-colonel of this regiment. Seventh Regiment, James Hogun. After his promotion Robert Mebane. In this regiment Nathaniel Macon, afterwards Speaker of Congress and United States Senator, and James Turner, afterwards governor, served together as privates in the same company. Eighth Regiment, James Armstrong. Ninth Regiment, John Pugh Williams. Of this Regiment William Polk was major. Tenth Regiment, Abram Sheppard. The State had in the Continental Line a battery of cavalry, led respectively by Samuel Ashe, Martin Phifer and Cosmo de Medici.

These are the few details which, after laborious research, have been obtained as to General Hogun, his origin, his services, and his descendants. He was a brave, faithful and competent officer, and his memory merits more consideration than has been given it.

*Waller Clark.*







.....

James Finley  
Geo. Howard

.....



## GEORGE HOWARD

**G**EOERGE HOWARD, born in Tarboro, Edgecombe County, North Carolina, September 22, 1829, was the son of George Howard, a native of Baltimore, Maryland, and of his wife, Alice Clark Thurston, a native of Caroline County, Virginia. George Howard, Sr., the first member of the family to settle in North Carolina, came when a young man to the town of Halifax and on March 25, 1824, established a weekly newspaper which he called the *Free Press*. He removed to the town of Tarboro August 22, 1826, where he continued the paper under the same name until August, 1833, when it was changed to the *Tarboro Free Press*. In January, 1852, the name was again changed to *The Southerner*, under which it has continued to the present time. The *Free Press* and its successors were at all times strong, fearless, and able advocates of the principles and policies of the Democratic Party, enjoying the confidence and receiving the support of the people of Edgecombe and adjoining counties. Mr. Howard spent a long life of honorable usefulness in the town of Tarboro, rearing a large family, all of whom married and spent their lives there. They and their descendants are numbered among the most honorable and highly respected citizens of the town. Mr. Howard died March 25, 1863. He was survived by his wife, a woman of strong mind, clear judgment, and devotion to duty, who died several years later.

The subject of this sketch received his early education in the schools of Tarboro, noted for their thoroughness and excellence. When but fourteen years of age he became the editor of his father's paper. The editorials written by him are marked by clearness of style, vigor of expression, and soundness of judgment. There was probably no county in the State in which there was a higher degree of intelligence than Edgecombe, or in which the people were more strongly democratic in all respects. *The Southerner* was both a leader and exponent of their spirit and thought.

Six years later Mr. Howard entered upon the study of the law at the State University, under Honorable Wm. H. Battle and Honorable Samuel F. Phillips, and was admitted to the bar at the Spring Term, 1850, of the Supreme Court. He was shortly thereafter elected solicitor of the Court of Pleas and Quarter Sessions of Greene County. During the year 1854 he moved to the rapidly growing town of Wilson, then in the county of Edgecombe, entering at once upon a large and lucrative practice in Edgecombe and the surrounding counties. At that time the Bar of which he soon became an active member was composed of such men as William Norfleet, R. R. Bridgers, John L. Bridgers and William H. Johnston, of Edgecombe; William T. Dortch, George V. Strong, W. T. Faircloth, of Wayne; Edward Conigland, of Halifax; B. F. Moore, of Wake; Joseph J. Davis, of Franklin; William B. Rodman, of Beaufort; Asa Biggs, of Martin, all of whom attended the courts of the adjoining counties. To have taken a prominent position among such men early in his professional career gives an assurance of a high order of mind, good equipment and strong character.

At the session of the General Assembly of 1854, by the action of his friends and without his knowledge, he was elected reading clerk to the House of Commons. He discharged the duties of the position so satisfactorily that he was unanimously reelected at the next session. At the session of 1854-5 by his personal influence and popularity he was largely instrumental in securing the passage, against most active opposition, of the bill establishing

the county of Wilson. By this time, although Mr. Howard was one of the youngest men in his party, he had become, by reason of his sound judgment, large and accurate knowledge of political conditions, and acquaintance with leading men, one of the trusted leaders of the Democratic Party in North Carolina. Returning to his home after the adjournment of the General Assembly, he at once became the most influential citizen of the new county, enjoying the unlimited affection and confidence of the people. He rendered most valuable service by his counsel and assistance in the work of organizing and launching the new county upon its successful career.

Upon the election of Honorable M. E. Manly to the Supreme Court, November, 1859, Mr. Howard was appointed judge of the Superior Court of Law and Equity by Governor Ellis and his Council; at the next session of the General Assembly he was elected to the position for life. As indicating the high estimation in which judicial office was regarded by the members of the Bar, it is interesting to note that, although then of but small financial means, Mr. Howard surrendered a rapidly growing practice, yielding an annual income of more than \$5000, to accept the judgeship at a salary of \$1950. His action was not, in that respect, exceptional. At the same time Judge Osborne and Judge Heath were appointed to the bench. His appointment is thus referred to by John W. Moore in his *History of North Carolina*:

"Judge Howard was much younger than his two colleagues, but had, for several years, divided with Honorable Wm. T. Dortch the honors and emoluments of the Goldsboro district, then presenting the richest legal harvest to be found in North Carolina. His fine presence, quickness of apprehension, and legal abilities gave him large success upon the bench, while his personal qualities brought troops of friends wherever he was known."

His appointment to the bench removed Judge Howard from participation in politics, but as a patriotic citizen he retained an active and intelligent interest in the important, and, as the sequel showed, epoch-making events transpiring in the country. He

had from his youth been a close student of the history and the institutions of the country. He accepted, both by heredity and conviction, the political principles of the sages of the Democratic Party. At the time when sectional hatreds were being engendered and radical men with radical measures were coming into control of both sections of the Republic, he opposed what he regarded as extreme in both, and in 1860 supported and advocated the nomination of Stephen A. Douglas for president. When the election of Mr. Lincoln and his call for troops to coerce the seceding States brought the dispute to the final test, Judge Howard acted in accordance with the opinion expressed by him in an editorial of May 22, 1852, in which he said :

"We believe that the General Government and the State Government both take their authority, so far as the people of North Carolina are concerned, from the exercised sovereignty of the people of the State in Convention assembled—that both are creatures of the same. That whenever in like manner and form they choose to exercise it again, the allegiance to it will be superior, paramount to the allegiance to either Government. The citizens acting under the primitive sovereignty of the State could be by no means treated as traitors, for it is preposterous to suppose that statesmen intended that there should be practically double treason."

That a young man of twenty-three years should formulate and express so clearly the view held by a large majority of the people of the South upon this vexed question is a striking illustration of the thoroughness with which the men of the South had studied their political institutions and their relations to the State and Federal Governments. When Judge Howard entered the Convention of 1861, he was asked by Judge George E. Badger whether he believed in the legal right of Secession ; to this question he answered in substantially the words quoted from the above editorial, whereupon that eminent jurist and statesman said : "We agree substantially."

Judge Howard, together with Honorable William S. Battle, represented the county of Edgecombe (Wilson then voting with the mother county) in the Convention which met in the city of Raleigh, May 20, 1861. He voted for and signed the Ordinance

of Secession. In the organization of the Convention he was made chairman of the committee on military affairs and of the committee on the executive department. The Convention held four sessions. It was composed of the strongest men in the State, many of whom had occupied the highest positions in the public service. Many of the younger men during and since the Civil War attained high positions, rendering eminent and patriotic service in military and civil life. Judge Howard was easily among the leaders and supported all measures for the defence of the State and for the prosecution of the war. Many of these he introduced.

He remained on the bench until the surrender of the armies of the Confederacy and the organization of the provisional State Government; then, together with all of the other judges and other officers of State, he retired. During the larger part of his career on the bench the war prevented much civil litigation, yet he established a reputation for learning, firmness and fairness in the administration of justice.

Judge Howard was also a member of the Convention of 1865. In common with all sincere, patriotic men, who had been loyal to their State from the commencement to the conclusion of the war, he accepted with the same sincerity and patriotic purpose the results of the struggle. In the adjustment of the State to the new conditions he was ready to join in such measures as the changed political status of the people demanded. He refused to vote for or indorse any ordinance or legislation inconsistent with the honor or good faith of himself or the people whom he represented. His conduct at that trying time, when the future was clouded with uncertainty, was strongly characteristic of and entirely consistent with his mental and moral convictions. An ordinance was introduced declaring that the ordinance of May 20, 1861, "is now and hath at all times been null and void;" a substitute was thereupon offered by D. D. Ferebee, of Camden, declaring "the said ordinance to be null and void, and the same is hereby repealed, rescinded, and abrogated." Judge Howard with eighteen other delegates voted for the substitute, which was defeated. The orig-

inal resolution being upon its passage, the following voted in the negative: George Howard of Edgecombe, W. A. Allen of Duplin, T. J. Faison of Sampson, D. D. Ferebee of Camden, H. Joyner of Warren, M. E. Manly of Craven, A. A. McKoy of Sampson, H. F. Murphey of New Hanover, and R. H. Ward of Rockingham. Judge Howard declared that he and his people were unwilling to vote a renunciation of their beliefs or a falsification of their principles, but were ready to ratify the ordinance and abide by it in good faith as a settlement now and forever of the question. He said afterwards, speaking of his course in the Convention: "I besought no leniency, but pursued the course which my judgment and conscience approved." Of the people of Edgecombe, for whom he always had a warm affection, he said:

"In the noblest and most republican of all pursuits they brought themselves by their soundness of head and heart to the position of the banner county of the State, and with every characteristic of true, conservative republicanism through self-reliance—seeking neither position nor place nor power, with no airs of superiority, no cringing to power, cherishing always great veneration for law and order, an earnest devotion to the Constitution of our fathers, and a faithful adherence to what they believed to be the true interests of their country—amid the wreck of their prosperity and the desolation of their homes they stand ready to bury the past and to devote their energies to rebuilding the waste places and to developing the new civilization by which they are surrounded."

Judge Howard was appointed a delegate to, and attended, the Convention which met in Philadelphia August, 1866, which sustained the policy of the President. He was elected to the State Senate of 1866-67. At this time, when old political organizations were dissolved and new alignments were being made, "in all things true to the honor of the South and Democracy, he yet believed in burying the past, and promptly adjusted our laws to the civilization of freedom, and without hesitancy sustained all measures necessary to the adjustment of the law to the new conditions resulting from the war and the abolition of slavery." He introduced the bill, which was enacted into law, permitting the negroes to testify in the courts. At the end of his term in the Senate,

Judge Howard retired to private life, engaging actively in the practice of his profession in Tarboro, having returned to his native town at the end of the war. By the enactment of the reconstruction measures, followed by the adoption of the Constitution of 1868, the negroes dominated Edgecombe and other eastern counties politically, thus forcing into retirement many of the wisest and strongest men in the State. During the struggle of the people from 1868 to 1876 to redeem the State, Judge Howard was "at all times a quiet, faithful, unflinching worker" for Democratic supremacy.

In the spring of 1878 his friends presented his name to the State Democratic Convention for nomination as Justice of the Supreme Court. In a letter to a personal friend and prominent gentleman, then in public life, he said :

"While it is true, as I stated to you, that the position of Supreme Court Justice will, if conferred, come very opportunely and turn my life into a channel very agreeable to my wishes, it is equally true that I shall not permit an adverse result to disturb me. The friends who have brought forward my name, and those who have spoken a word of encouragement, have done so without any suggestion from myself, and I shall ever appreciate and shall ever keep in green remembrance their kind efforts."

This was the last time which he permitted himself to be drawn into a political contest. He received a very flattering vote in the Convention. He was a delegate to the National Democratic Conventions of 1868 and 1880.

At the General Assembly of 1885 he was elected a member of the Board of Trustees of the University of North Carolina and in the summer of that year was appointed by Governor Scales and served on a commission with John W. Graham and Thomas W. Patton, charged with the duty of revising the laws for the assessment and collection of revenue. He was for many years, until by reason of failing health he resigned, a Director of the Wilmington and Weldon Railroad and Atlantic Coast Line Railroad Companies. He was the first President and, afterwards, one of the Directors of the Pamlico Banking and Insurance Company and a



Director of the Tarboro Cotton Mills and Fountain Cotton Mills. He was at all times deeply interested in and actively promoted every enterprise looking to the growth and improvement of his native town, serving on the Board of Town Commissioners, on the Board of Trustees of the Tarboro Academy and of the Public Schools.

Together with all thoughtful citizens of this and other Southern States, Judge Howard gave very careful thought to the questions and problems growing out of the political and industrial and social relations of the white and negro races. He took a large view of the subject from the standpoint of a well-wisher of the negroes, and greatly desired to see them given every opportunity to improve their condition. He favored fair and liberal aid to their education. In common with the large majority of Southern men, he regarded their enfranchisement in 1868 as a great political error and in every way injurious to them and to the State. In 1898, when the conditions in the State demanded that the electorate be placed on a sound, safe basis, he became deeply interested, expressing his thought and feelings in the following words:

"The negroes are bound to us by so many ties and have been led or forced into their present position, so little of their own choice, I do pray for their deliverance from destruction or further degradation and hope that enough good strong men may be found to protect them . . . . . The problem is an awful one, with so many tendencies to the degradation of both races, yet I feel hopeful that our Christian civilization will be able to master it."

He indorsed the suffrage amendment of 1899, although he thought that a small property qualification should be made to encourage the negro in industry and economy.

Judge Howard was married in 1861 to Miss Anna Ragland Stamps, daughter of Dr. Thomas Stamps, a prominent physician and citizen of Milton, Caswell County, North Carolina. In no event of his life was he so abundantly blessed as in this union, which continued with ever-increasing happiness for forty years. Mrs. Howard died on the 11th day of June, 1901. On February

24, 1905, Judge Howard died within a short distance of the spot where he was born, surrounded by his children, loved and honored by those among whom he had spent his honorable and useful life. Six children, two sons and four daughters, survive him, to wit: George Howard, W. Stamps Howard, Mrs. Lizzie Baker, Mrs. Alice Cobb, Mrs. Hattie Holderness and Miss Mary Romain Howard.

In his social relations Judge Howard was genial, kind, sympathetic and absolutely loyal to his friends. In his family relations he was an affectionate, devoted son, brother, husband and father. In his civil and political relations he was patriotic, ever seeking to promote the welfare of the community, the honor of his State, and the preservation of constitutional liberty, by insisting upon a strict construction and honest administration of governmental powers. In his business relations he was just, honest, fair and, to the unfortunate, generous. In all respects "He was a strong man. He was an independent thinker. His matured opinions were deeply rooted and he adhered to them, not with animal stubbornness, but with a moral loyalty which no opposition and no force of attack could weaken."

His religious convictions were the result of careful study of the Scriptures; they controlled his life and conduct. He believed strongly and deeply in the fundamental truths of Christianity, accepting the doctrines of Calvinism as held and taught by the Presbyterian Church. A member and Ruling Elder of the Presbyterian Church, he greatly admired its simple forms of worship and mode of government, and gave largely to the Church and to the support of its ministry. At Barium Springs Orphanage he erected a commodious building as an appropriate memorial to his wife.

Judge Howard was among the strongest men reared in a county which has produced an unusually large number of strong men. He possessed a singularly strong mind, admirably adapted to the study and practice of his chosen profession. His judgment of men and things was sound, conservative, and usually correct. While absolutely free from the slightest approach to the demagogue, he was an ardent, loyal Democrat, believing intensely in the

capacity of the people to construct and administer their government through their chosen officers. He had a zealous regard for the rights of the individual and was quick to discover and prompt to resent any tendency, political or otherwise, which recognized or encouraged class distinctions or special privileges. He was a partisan, as are all men of strong convictions, feeling a pride in the achievements and traditions of his party and grieving at whatever he regarded as a departure from the teachings of its founders.

*Henry G. Connor.*





*Very truly Yours,*  
*Thos. Hume*



## THOMAS HUME

**T**HOMAS HUME an accomplished English scholar and educator, was born at Portsmouth, Virginia, October 21, 1836. His father was the Rev. Thomas Hume, a Baptist clergyman, born in Smithfield, Virginia, and his mother, Mary Ann Gregory, daughter of Dr. Richard B. Gregory, of Gloucester County, Virginia, and Jane Adelaide Gregory, of Gates County, N. C.

His paternal grandfather was the Rev. Thomas Hume, of Edinburgh, Scotland, who, soon after his graduation from the University of Edinburgh and his ordination as a minister of the Established (Presbyterian) Church, removed to the United States to look after some property interests in this country. He married in Virginia, where his only child, Thomas, was born, and died suddenly while preaching the opening sermon as Moderator of the Baltimore Presbytery, when the son was scarcely six years old.

Thomas Hume, the father, was educated at the Virginia Baptist Seminary, now Richard College, became pastor of the Court Street Baptist Church, Portsmouth, Virginia, before he reached his twenty-first year, and held pastorates in Portsmouth and Norfolk for forty years. Mr. Hume was a man of remarkable talent and many-sided energy, being principal owner and financial manager of Chesapeake College, Superintendent of Education for the city of Portsmouth and Norfolk County, president of a banking and fire insurance company, and director of the Seaboard and

Roanoke Railroad. He was president of the State Convention of his denomination and of many benevolent societies. He was a man in and fire insurance company, and director of the Seaboard and of broad culture and deep piety, with a rare balance of qualities, a spiritual leader, and yet a man of affairs.

The North Carolina side of his mother's line was connected with our Colonial and Revolutionary life through the Harveys, Gregorys, and Winns, and with the social life and progress of the State. On the Virginia side she was descended from a long line of distinguished English physicians.

Young Thomas Hume was a somewhat delicate child, but very active and alert, well sustained through properly directed exercise, and fond of the special pleasures of the seaboard, boating, fishing, hunting, and of the usual open-air games. His childhood was spent, for the most part, in the city of Portsmouth, with frequent rides to plantations on Elizabeth River owned by his father and grandfather. He was also very studious and fond of reading, with large opportunity of indulging these tastes. His circumstances did not require manual labor or any remunerative employment, nor did he have any special difficulties to overcome in acquiring an education. His inherited tendencies and home surroundings made him lay hold on the excellent educational opportunities he enjoyed. He attended the Virginia Collegiate Institute at Portsmouth, where he won distinction as a student of languages.

At the age of fifteen Thomas Hume entered Richmond College, where he was graduated with the degree of Bachelor of Arts. A year later he entered the University of Virginia, where he did advanced work and obtained diplomas in several schools. While at the University of Virginia he was Washington society editor of *The Literary Magazine*, and president of the Young Men's Christian Association, which he had helped to organize and whose constitution he wrote, the first College Young Men's Christian Association in the world. These interests of his college days he has always sustained, and is now a member of the advisory committees of the magazine and the Y.M.C.A. at the University of North Carolina.

As he purposed devoting himself to the business of teaching, young Hume accepted the professorship of French and English Literature in Chesapeake Female College, near Old Point Comfort, but had not fairly begun work when the war broke up that prosperous institution. During his residence there the church at Portsmouth, of which he was a member, corresponded with him in regard to his duty to enter the ministry, and urged upon him the acceptance of a license to preach. He purposed continuing his course in a German university, but was prevented by the opening of the Civil War.

When the war began he became a member of the Third Regiment, Virginia Infantry, of which he was made chaplain, but after continued field service was transferred to the post-chaplaincy at Petersburg, Virginia, the most important of hospital stations during the siege of that place. He remained in Petersburg as the official pastor of the Confederate hospitals till General Lee's surrender.

After the war he became principal of the Petersburg Classical Institute, a college preparatory school of one hundred pupils, and there in concert with Thomas R. Price and W. Gordon McCabe he began the movement for the better teaching of our own language and literature in the South. He traveled and studied abroad, and on his return became president of Roanoke College, Danville, Virginia, serving the Baptist church of Danville as pastor for several years. From 1876 until 1885 he again made Norfolk his home, and was Professor of English and Latin in Norfolk College and for four years pastor of the First Baptist Church. He was for five years lecturer on English philology and literature in the National Summer School for teachers at Glens Falls, New York, and has for several years given lectures before literary societies, clubs, and colleges on educational and literary topics. For three years he has conducted courses in the Summer School of the South at the University of Tennessee.

Dr. Hume became Professor of the English Language and Literature in the University of North Carolina, at Chapel Hill, in 1885, where he has done good service to the cause of education

throughout the State in organizing and conducting the work of his department in English Philology as well as Literature and in stimulating interest in the study of literature and the teaching of English. He has also extended his work into other States where he has been much sought after as a lecturer. He has been active in the years gone by in the Teachers' Assembly, in Biblical assemblies, in the religious work of his own denomination, and in coöperation with Christians of every name especially interested in Christian work in colleges. The National Executive Committee of the Young Men's Christian Association nominated Dr. Hume as director of their work in the towns and colleges of North Carolina, and for five years after coming to the State he gave his services as superintendent of that work. He issued some Helps to the Study of Shakespeare before coming to the University of North Carolina. The pressure of work in his department, until quite recently, has allowed him little time for the execution of literary plans long since matured. His department was divided in 1902, when he became Professor of English Literature, and his friends hope that the ripest years of his life will be devoted largely to literary production. His lectures and discourses published in newspapers and magazines lead us to expect much from him in this direction.

Doctor Hume has received the degree of A. M. and D. D. from Richmond College, Virginia, and the degree of LL. D. from Wake Forest College, North Carolina. He is a member of the Modern Language Association of America, is president of the Shakespeare Club, and has been president of the Philological Club of the University of North Carolina and of the North Carolina Baptist Historical Society.

Dr. Hume inaugurated the movement that led to the establishment of the Chair of English in the University of Virginia, and was offered the professorship.

In politics he has always been a staunch Democrat. Of Presbyterian stock on his father's side and Episcopal on his mother's side, he is at once a loyal and liberal Baptist. "I have had to weigh my convictions," he says, and "estimate those of others dis-



criminatingly and liberally and cultivate sympathy with 'whatsothings are true.' "

From childhood Dr. Hume has been a devotee of standard literature and a close student of the Bible. His tastes and personal preferences led him into teaching, and his interest in literature has sustained him in it. A sense of responsibility for, and peculiar relations to, the religious life of his first pupils led him to combine preaching with teaching, and he is widely known both as preacher and teacher.

Dr. Hume's experience and observation would suggest to young Americans that "culture for service should be the ideal and the motive. Make the best of yourself because God expects it and is ever with you, and because you can thus serve your fellow-men. Do the thorough work required by this ideal and let success take care of itself, and you will have the best safeguard against depression and against materialism. Study! Study! Work! Work! Live for the human brotherhood."

One of his most accomplished students says that his enthusiasm is contagious and inspiring. While he is a careful scholar and exact in his method, his teaching makes its appeal to the imagination and the moral nature.

A well-known educator once remarked that Dr. Hume's mission had been to bring men to the spiritual interpretation of literature. The founder of a prize in the University in honor of Dr. Hume describes him as the most illuminating man in the teaching of literature he has ever listened to and that he interprets Shakespeare in the mere reading of it.

Dr. Hume married, October 31, 1878, Anne Louise Whitescarver, and to them were born four children: Thomas, Anne Wilmer, wife of Professor W. R. Vance, Washington, D. C., Mary Baynham Gregory, and Helen.

*Collier Cobb.*



## THEOPHILUS HUNTER



EW men were so closely identified with the formation of Wake County and its early history, both Colonial and Revolutionary, as Colonel Theophilus Hunter. His home was Hunter's Lodge, three or four miles south of the present city of Raleigh, on what is now called the Fayetteville road. Spring Hill, a plantation somewhat nearer Raleigh, was the home of his son, Theophilus Hunter, Jr., who died about 1840.

Wake County was created by Chapter 22 of the Public Laws of 1770, but said Act did not take effect till March 12, 1771. The charter of the county was of a later date by a few months, being signed by Governor Tryon on the 22d of May, 1771. During the space intervening between the date of the act of creation and the time when Tryon's charter made Wake a complete and distinct county, much work had to be done in the way of laying out boundaries, erecting buildings and the like. The above mentioned chapter appointed Theophilus Hunter one of the commissioners to run the boundary between Wake and its mother counties of Johnston, Orange, and Cumberland. He was also appointed one of the commissioners to lay off land on which to erect a court house, jail, stocks, etc.; and it was the duty of another board of which he was a member to contract with workmen for the erection of said buildings.

When Governor Tryon was on his march to quell the insurrection of the Regulators in the spring of 1771, he made Hunter's Lodge (the seat of Colonel Hunter) the principal place of rendezvous for his troops, and his personal headquarters were there from the 2d until the 8th of May. There he was joined by the Wake troops under Colonel John Hinton, and by re-enforcements from other counties. When the army marched back from its campaign, under the command of Colonel John Ashe (Tryon himself having returned earlier), the Wake regiment was disbanded at Hunter's Lodge.

The first Court of Pleas and Quarter Sessions which ever met in Wake County held its session on the 4th of June, 1771. Of this tribunal, Theophilus Hunter was the Presiding Justice, and ten other Justices sat with him. The county-seat of Wake, where the meetings of this Court took place, was sometimes called Bloomsbury, sometimes Wake Court House, and sometimes Wake Cross-Roads. It was about where Raleigh is now located. The Provincial Council of Safety met there in 1776, and the Assembly in 1781. Hunter was a justice of the above court not only while North Carolina was a British dependency, but on the 23d of December, 1776, was elected to the same post by the Provincial Congress at Halifax, when the Colony had become an independent State. As early as the 6th of October, 1772, if not prior thereto, Hunter held a commission as major of the Wake County regiment of the colonial militia of North Carolina, commanded by Colonel John Hinton, and was continued in this regiment with the rank of lieutenant-colonel, when the Whigs assumed the control of the State and began their efforts for independence.

The first service rendered by Theophilus Hunter to the cause of the American Colonies was in the Provincial Congress of North Carolina which met at Hillsboro in August, 1775, when he sat as a delegate from Wake County. That body, on the 9th of September, elected him lieutenant-colonel of North Carolina troops for the county of Wake; and he was reelected to the same rank on the 22d of April, 1776, by the Provincial Congress at Halifax.

On the 19th of April, 1776, he was also elected a member of a committee whose duty it was to secure arms and ammunition for the Continental Army. About the beginning of the year 1778 he became county surveyor of Wake. He was also the county's representative in the North Carolina House of Commons at its session of 1783.

In 1790, when the first official census of the United States was taken, Colonel Hunter owned more slaves than any other citizen of Wake County except William Jeffries.

In the will of Colonel Hunter he refers to his wife as Jane Hunter, but her maiden name is unknown to the present writer. Among the children he left were three sons: Theophilus (commonly known as "Orphy"), who died about 1840 in Wake County; Henry, who died in Wake County in 1810; and Osborne, who died in Johnston County in 1810. In addition to these sons were four daughters: Delilah, who married Colonel James Hinton; Irene, who married a Mr. Lane; Mary, or "Polly," who married Governor Gabriel Holmes; and Edith, who remained unmarried.

From the above children of Colonel Hunter have descended a numerous posterity, among whom were Lieutenant-General Theophilus Hunter Holmes, of the Confederate Army, and the North Carolina poet, Theophilus Hunter Hill.

Colonel Hunter died either in the year 1797 or early in 1798.

*Marshall De Lancey Haywood.*



## JAMES JACK

**T**HE family of Jack (which is now well scattered throughout the United States) resided for the most part in Pennsylvania and North Carolina during the colonial period and at the time of the Revolution. It was of Scotch-Irish descent. Several brothers of the name came to Pennsylvania from Ireland about the year 1730, and one of these, Patrick Jack, made his home in North Carolina about the year 1760. His first place of residence was in Rowan County. At the time of the Revolution he was well advanced in age, and was living in the little hamlet of Charlotte, in Mecklenburg County, where a number of children had grown up about him. So patriotic were his four sons in the War for Independence, and so pronounced were the old man's own views on the subject of liberty, that when the British entered Charlotte on September 26, 1780, he was dragged from a bed of sickness out of doors and his house consigned to the flames. "All of old Jack's sons are in the rebel army, and he himself is a promoter of treason," said the British, by way of an explanation of their barbarity. The aged patriot did not long survive this ill-usage, and died before independence was acknowledged. His nine children were James Jack (subject of this sketch), whose Revolutionary services were in North Carolina and who later removed to Georgia; John Jack, who also removed to Georgia; Samuel Jack, who was twice married and

left descendants; Robert Jack, who remained in Pennsylvania, but whose only married son, John, died in Romney, Virginia, where he left descendants; Charity Jack, who married Dr. Cornelius Dysart; Jane Jack, who married William Barnett; Mary Jack, who married Captain Robert Alexander; Margaret Jack, who married Samuel Wilson; and Lillie Jack, who married Joseph Nicholson. From these children hundreds of descendants have sprung.

To the career of Captain James Jack we shall now confine our remarks. The date of his birth is stated in one account to have been 1739. This corresponds with his obituary, which says that he was in his eight-fourth year when he died in December, 1822; yet he stated in December, 1819, that he was then in his eighty-eighth year. This would make 1732 the date when he was born.

He had reached years of maturity when he removed with the other members of his father's family to North Carolina. On the 20th of November, 1766, he married Margaret Houston; and, in October, 1768, set up a household of his own in the hill country at the headwaters of the Catawba river. There he remained until August, 1772, when he removed to his father's home in Mecklenburg County, and the entire family moved into the town of Charlotte in February, 1773. In Charlotte, Patrick Jack (father of James) opened an inn; and at a later time, owing to the infirmities of age, the active management of this establishment fell upon James. Both father and son prospered in a business way, and became owners of much landed property in the vicinity of Charlotte. In this town they were living at the outbreak of the Revolution, their inn being a favorite resort for the patriots of Mecklenburg—so much so that the British did not fail to destroy it when an opportunity offered, as heretofore noted.

The Spring of 1775 found the entire Jack family arrayed on the side of the Colonies, and when the Mecklenburg patriots took their famous action in May of that year, James Jack rode as an express messenger from Charlotte to Philadelphia to make known to the Continental Congress the action of the people of Mecklenburg. His journey was in June.

On December 7, 1819, Captain Jack made an affidavit in which he said:

"Having seen in the newspapers some pieces respecting the Declaration of Independence by the people of Mecklenburg County in the State of North Carolina, in May, 1775, and being solicited to state what I know of that transaction, I would observe that for some time previous to, and at the time those resolutions were agreed upon, I resided in the town of Charlotte, Mecklenburg County; was privy to a number of meetings of some of the most influential and leading characters of that county on the subject before the final adoption of the resolutions and at the time they were adopted. Among those who appeared to take the lead may be mentioned Hezekiah Alexander, who generally acted as chairman, John McKnitt Alexander, as secretary, Abraham Alexander, Adam Alexander, Major John Davidson, Major (after General) William Davidson, Colonel Thomas Polk, Ezekiel Polk, Dr. Ephraim Brevard, Samuel Martin, Duncan Ochletree, William Wilson, Robert Irwin.

"When the resolutions were finally agreed on, they were publicly proclaimed from the court house door in the town of Charlotte, and received with every demonstration of joy by the inhabitants.

"I was then solicited to be the bearer of the proceedings to Congress. I set out the following month, say June, and in passing through Salisbury, the General Court was sitting; at the request of the Court I handed a copy of the resolutions to Colonel Kennon, an attorney, and they were read aloud in open court. Major William Davidson and Mr. Avery, an attorney, called on me at my lodgings the evening after, and observed they had heard of but one person, a Mr. Beard, but approved of them. I then proceeded on to Philadelphia, and delivered the Mecklenburg Declaration of Independence of May, 1775, to Richard Caswell and William Hooper, the delegates to Congress from the State of North Carolina.

"I am now in the 88th year of my age, residing in the county of Elbert in the State of Georgia. I was in the Revolutionary War from the commencement to the close."

During the first week in June, 1775, there was in session at Salisbury a Court of Oyer and Terminer appointed by Act of Assembly for all the counties of the Salisbury district, with jurors drawn from Mecklenburg and the other counties of the district as well. Colonel Alexander Martin was the judge holding the Court, and he appointed Adlai Osborne clerk. Some of the jurors drawn from Mecklenburg County, belonging to the Alexander family and

others participating in these patriotic meetings at Charlotte, did not attend, probably because they had already set up an independent government for themselves and did not recognize the General Court held under the laws of the Province. Colonel Martin and Adlai Osborne, like the other principal persons at Salisbury except two lawyers, Dunn and Boote, were, however, warm and zealous patriots, and it was altogether natural that the proceedings of the Mecklenburg people should have been read in open court with the sanction of Colonel Martin, the acting judge. Less than two months after that, it being suspected that Dunn and Boote were dangerous characters, Colonel Martin having consulted with Colonel Polk, Sam Spencer, Adlai Osborne, Colonel Kennon, and others, caused them to be arrested, and under the escort of 60 armed men commanded by Colonel Polk, removed to South Carolina, where they were kept in confinement for more than a year. Colonel Martin was thanked for this action by the Committee of Safety at Salisbury immediately afterwards.

According to Captain Jack's own statement he served in the Revolutionary War from the commencement to the close. For a more detailed account of his services, we are indebted to the History of Mecklenburg County by Dr. Alexander, which says:

"He probably served in the Snow campaign in 1775. His large acquaintance with the people enabled him to raise a company of men whom he led forth on Rutherford's Cherokee campaign in 1776. He was with the troops embodied who opposed Cornwallis when he entered Charlotte in September, 1781. Captain Jack also led his company in General Polk's brigade in April, 1781, joining General Greene at Rugely's Mills and serving a three months' tour of duty. The particulars of other services of Captain Jack are not preserved. It is only known that he was ever ready for service, and was so popular with his company that they induced him not to seek or accept promotions, which indeed he did not desire. . . . The close of the war left him poor. He had freely advanced all that he possessed in the great struggle, a portion of it as a loan to North Carolina. His unrequited claims at the time of his death, upon North Carolina, amounted to 7,446 pounds State currency. In 1783 Captain Jack removed to Georgia, settling in Wilkes County."

In 1790, after James Jack had settled in Wilkes County, Geor-



gia, a new county was severed therefrom and named for the noted statesman and patriot, Governor Samuel Elbert.

In Elbert County the remainder of Captain Jack's life was spent. There he engaged in farming. His death occurred on the 18th of December, 1822. His connection with the Mecklenburg Declaration of Independence invests his career with particular interest. An interesting obituary of him appeared in the *Raleigh Register* of January 17, 1823, and we here reproduce it in full:

"Died.—In Elbert County, Georgia, on the 18th instant (ultimo), Captain James Jack, in the 84th year of his age. He was born in the State of Pennsylvania, from whence he removed to North Carolina and settled in the town of Charlotte, where he remained till the end of the Revolutionary War, in which he took a decided and active part from the commencement to the close, after which he removed to Georgia with his family, whom he supported by the sweat of his brow. He spent the prime of his life and his little all in the glorious struggle for independence, and enjoyed it with a heart warmed with gratitude to the God of battles. In the spring of '75 he was the bearer of the Mecklenburg Declaration of Independence to Congress. His claims on the State of North Carolina for Revolutionary services and expenditures were audited by Colonel Matthew Locke, and amounted to 7,646 pounds in currency. Those papers being of little value at that time, he left them in the hands of a friend, who dying some years after, the claim to him was lost. It fell, possibly, into the hands of some speculator, who may be now faring sumptuously on the fruits of his toil. But wealth had no charm for him; he looked for a 'house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens, whose builder and maker is God.' He has left a widow, two sons (his eldest, Colonel Patrick Jack, of the U. S. army in her late contest with Britain, having died about two years past), a daughter, besides a numerous offspring of grandchildren and great-grandchildren. Some few of his old comrades who bore the burden and the heat of the day are still living. Should this notice catch the eye of any one of them, it may draw forth a sigh or elicit a tear to the memory of their friend, more to be valued than a marble monument."

By reference to an army register covering the period when he served during the war of 1812-'15, we find the record of Patrick Jack (son of Captain James Jack) to have been as follows: Born in North Carolina, and appointed to the army from Georgia,

on April 2, 1812, as lieutenant-colonel of the Eighth infantry; promoted to the rank of colonel on July 6, 1812, honorably discharged on June 15, 1815; and died on January 25, 1821.

The account of the origin of the Jack family given in the beginning of this sketch, we have drawn from the sketches of North Carolina by C. L. Hunter. In that work we also find some account of the descendants of Captain James Jack and his wife Margaret Houston. Their children were five in number, as follows: Cynthia Jack, born September 20, 1767, who married A. S. Cosby, and left descendants: Patrick Jack (Colonel U. S. army, as above), born September 27, 1769, who married Harriet Spencer and left descendants; William Houston Jack, born June 6, 1771, who married Frances Cummins and left descendants; Archibald Jack, born April 20, 1773, who died young; James Jack, Jr., born September 20, 1775, who married Annie Barnett, and left descendants. Colonel Patrick Jack, U. S. A., above mentioned, had a son, Captain Abner M. Jack, who was the father of Guy Jack, to whom we shall presently refer.

The scope of the present sketch will not admit of a detailed account of the numerous posterity which has sprung from the above children of Captain Jack. Their lives have been spent for the most part, in Georgia, the Gulf States, and Arkansas.

The descendants of the old patriot, Captain James Jack, have shown themselves in all wars succeeding the Revolution to be worthy of such an ancestor. His son was an officer in the second war with Great Britain; grandsons fought for Texan independence at San Jacinto, and were also in the war with Mexico; and in the Confederate army were more remote descendants. One of the family's present members, Guy Jack, of Kemper County, Mississippi, wrote an account of his family for the "Monument Edition" of the *Charlotte Observer* of May 20, 1898, when the war with Spain was in progress, saying in conclusion: "I was too young to go with my father to battle for Southern rights. I have volunteered my services to my State should I be needed to fight for America's honor and the freedom of the oppressed in the war now going on. God has blessed me with a happy home, the best

wife in the world, and seven of the finest little Jacks in America, all without spot or blemish."

While the commendable occupation of raising "little Jacks without spot or blemish" is continued in different branches of the family, we may safely predict that the name will not be unknown hereafter when America needs the services of her patriotic sons either in peace or in war.

*Marshall De Lancey Haywood.*





## ANDREW JOHNSON



**I**N Pullen Park in the suburbs of the city of Raleigh is an odd, old-fashioned house, containing but two rooms, one above the other, which the patriotic ladies of the city have removed from its original site to the Park for preservation. It is the house in which was born Andrew Johnson, President of the United States during the period of Reconstruction, who was impeached by the aggressive element of the Republican Party because of political differences in regard to the treatment of the white people of the South after the war between the States.

Andrew Johnson was born in Raleigh on December 29, 1808. His father, Jacob Johnson, had been a soldier in the Revolutionary War. At the time of his death in 1812 he was city constable, sexton and porter to the State Bank. His death was hastened by exertions in saving the life of a friend from drowning. "Although for many years Jacob Johnson had occupied but an humble station, in his last illness," says the editor of *The Raleigh Star*, in its issue of January 12, 1812, "he was visited by the principal inhabitants of the city, by all of whom he was esteemed for his honesty, sobriety, industry, and his humane, friendly disposition. Among all by whom he was known and esteemed, none lament him, except perhaps his own relatives, more than the publisher of this paper, for he owes his life on a particular occasion to the kindness and humanity of Johnson."

Mrs. Johnson was left very poor at her husband's death; and her son, the subject of this sketch, had no educational advantages whatever. He never attended school a day in his life. At the age of ten he was apprenticed to a tailor in Raleigh, and during that period of his life he used to listen with delight to a young man, William G. Hill, afterwards an esteemed physician of the city of Raleigh, as he read to the boys at work extracts from the speeches of Burke, Pitt and others, from the *Columbian Orator*, and observing his interest in the book, young Hill gave it to him. At the time Andrew Johnson did not know a letter of the alphabet, and from this book, by application and unaided, he learn to read.

At the age of 16 he ran away from his master and worked for some time as a journeyman tailor at Laurens, South Carolina. Returning home, in May, 1826, he accompanied his mother and step-father to Greeneville, Tennessee. The party set out from Raleigh with all their possessions in a two-wheeled cart drawn by a blind pony. The long and dangerous journey was successfully accomplished. Arriving at Greeneville, young Johnson soon obtained employment and very speedily married Eliza McCardle, a young woman of refinement and some education, who taught him to write. In 1828, while still under age, he was elected an alderman of Greeneville, and two years later he became mayor of the town; and the next year he was appointed by the County Court a trustee of Rhea Academy, and he participated in the debates of a literary society of Greeneville College. Evidently the disadvantages of his deficient education had by this time been somewhat overcome. He was a democrat by nature and by the circumstances of his life; and when in 1834 he entered into public life he advocated the adoption of a new constitution for Tennessee which abridged the influence of large land-owners. He had been an ardent follower of John Bell, but when on the formation of the Whig party Bell turned against General Jackson, Johnson remained a "regular Democrat," and in 1840 he was an elector for the State at large on the Van Buren ticket, and made a great reputation for his oratory. Three years later he became a member of Congress and was continuously re-elected for ten years, when the people of Ten-

nessee chose him to be Governor of the State. In 1855 he was again elected Governor, and on the expiration of his term was elected United States Senator.

As his career indicates, he had now become a strong man, a man of great force and power—an adversary in debate to be feared even by the most accomplished of his opponents; yet he never wholly overcame the want of early refinement or the deficiencies of his education. That he was not a man of culture was often made apparent, and it is said that sometimes in the course of heated argument his thoughts would find expression in oratorical passages that were doubtless the remembrance or echo in his mind of the selections, contained in the *Columbian Orator*, read to him by Dr. Hill, and which had found a lodgment in his plastic brain before he had learnt how to read.

So esteemed was he at home, that at the Democratic national convention held at Charleston in 1860, the Tennessee delegation presented him as their candidate for the presidency.

Although Mr. Johnson strenuously favored all measures for the benefit of the working classes and clashed severely with property holders and especially with slave-owners, yet he was not at all opposed to the institution of slavery, but rather maintained the view that, according to all social and natural laws, there were classes in society and that the proper position of the negroes in the Southern States was that of bondage and subordination to the whites. In the great campaign of 1860 he was a strong supporter of the nominee of the Southern Democrats, John C. Breckenridge, but when the secession movement began he declared his unyielding opposition to secession and his resolute purpose to sustain the Union; and when Tennessee seceded he retained his seat in the United States Senate as Senator from that State.

On March 4, 1862, President Lincoln appointed him Military Governor of Tennessee; and his influence in Tennessee being cast against the South was disastrous to the Southern cause. He organized twenty-five Federal regiments in that State, promoted the Union sentiment, and held Congressional elections and sought to maintain Tennessee as a State in the Federal Union.

He thus became an important factor in winning the final victory for the Federal government. Indeed one hazards nothing in saying that he was more effective in accomplishing the result of the war than any other one person in the United States.

At the National Republican Convention held in Baltimore, June 8, 1864, he was nominated for Vice-President. In his letter of acceptance, he disclaimed any departure from his principles as a Democrat and placed his acceptance "on the higher duty of sustaining the Government." He was for the Union and against the Confederacy, and his actions were in conformity with his avowed principles and purposes. In this he differed widely from those men at the South who, declaring themselves favorable to Southern independence, still sought to embarrass the Confederate administration and neutralize its efforts, on the pretext of maintaining Constitutional liberty.

President Lincoln fell by the hand of an assassin on April 14, 1865, and the next day Vice-President Johnson took the oaths as President of the United States. He made no changes in the administration, but retained all of Mr. Lincoln's cabinet, and sought to conduct affairs on the same lines as his predecessor.

He, however, inherited from Mr. Lincoln a difference with Congress that led to an open rupture. Mr. Lincoln's view was that a State could not withdraw from the Union, and that the Southern States were still members of the Union although a large majority of their inhabitants were in insurrection and rebellion. On December 8, 1863, Mr. Lincoln made an offer of amnesty and pardon to those resisting Federal authority who should submit, but with certain exceptions. In his proclamation then issued he announced that "whenever one tenth of the voters of a seceded State, being qualified voters under the laws of the State before secession, and excluding all others, shall re-establish a State government, the State shall be recognized as again in the Union;" but he added that it was proper to state that whether members sent to Congress shall be admitted to seats rests exclusively with the respective Houses of Congress.

This claim of Mr. Lincoln of his right to recognize a loyal gov-

ernment in a State, was not agreed to by Congress; and in July, 1864, Congress passed a bill asserting the jurisdiction of Congress, and providing that the President should not recognize such a State government until "after obtaining the consent of Congress." Mr. Lincoln took issue with Congress on that matter and defeated that bill by a pocket veto, so that it had no effect whatever. He subsequently made public his reasons for this veto, which led to an angry protest by some of the most violent Republicans. But he resolutely adhered to his own views and purposes, and was endorsed by the people by re-election, and the subject was not broached again during his lifetime. His determination was known to be the immediate restoration of civil authority as quickly as practicable, and in that General Grant heartily concurred with him. So, when the Confederate armies were disbanded in April, 1865, he and his Cabinet drew up a proclamation inaugurating steps for the restoration of North Carolina to the Union. Immediately after his death the Secretary of War, Edwin M. Stanton, presented this plan to President Johnson, and the Cabinet all agreed that it should be followed.

A month after the surrender of General J. E. Johnston's army, President Johnson invited Governor Swain, Hon. B. F. Moore and Mr. William Eaton to confer with him on the subject of reconstructing the government of North Carolina. He laid before them his plan to appoint a provisional governor, who should convene a convention to be elected by such voters of the State as were voters under the laws and constitution existing before the war as would be allowed to vote under his amnesty proclamation. These gentlemen could not approve of this plan. Their view was that the President had no right to appoint a provisional governor for the State, but that the existing government of the State should be allowed to restore the State to the Union; and that, since Governor Vance was then in arrest and confined in prison, the presiding officers of the two Houses of the Legislature should convene the Legislature, and that body should call a convention to restore the State to the Union. Their view recognized the existing government of the State, which the President would not assent to. The



difference between them was irreconcilable, and they withdrew. There were other North Carolinians, however, in attendance on the President, and these endorsed the Presidential plan and, at the request of the President, recommended a person for the appointment of provisional governor, and they selected W. W. Holden.

If the only object had been the speedy restoration of fraternal relations between the people of North Carolina and the people of the Union, the method proposed by Governor Swain was certainly the correct one; but that was not the entire purpose of either the President or of the Congress; while the choice of Mr. Holden, as the instrument in restoring the State, was both unphilosophical and unfortunate.

The method of reconstructing the State was, however, not President Johnson's, but Mr. Lincoln's, adopted by him in 1863, and insisted on in 1864, and particularly developed by him and his Cabinet as to North Carolina in 1865, and merely carried into effect by President Johnson. But President Johnson had not only the purpose to reconstruct the State on those lines, but the additional purpose, as he formally and emphatically declared, of "making treason odious." The State governments during the Confederate times were to be utterly ignored, and the principal inhabitants who had been in insurrection were to be punished as rebels and traitors.

On the 29th of May, 1865, the President set on foot the restoration of North Carolina by issuing his proclamation and appointing W. W. Holden provisional governor. His proclamation was, word for word, like that of Mr. Lincoln, December 8, 1863, except that President Johnson now excluded some additional classes from amnesty and pardon, limiting still more narrowly those who could participate in the election of members to the State convention. Under his programme North Carolina was in November, 1865, reconstructed as a State in the Union. Similar proceedings were had a little later in all the seceded States except Texas, as to which there was more delay. These Southern States ratified a proposed amendment to the constitution abolishing slavery,

which without their vote would not have been adopted; and in April, 1866, the President issued his proclamation to the effect that North Carolina and nine other States, therein specified, had always been States of the Union, and were then States in the Union; and that the insurrection that had existed in them was at an end. Representation had been apportioned to them by Congress as States. They had been divided into judicial districts as States; as States they had participated in amending the Constitution of the United States; as States the Supreme Court had allotted them to circuits; the Senate had confirmed the appointments of judges, district attorneys and marshals for every one of them, and the chief justice held a circuit court in the State of North Carolina.

The President held and declared that these States were members of the Union and that Congress ought to admit them to representation. Still Congress did not admit them to representation. In regard to North Carolina, it should be stated in passing that at an election for governor in November, 1865, Jonathan Worth was chosen by the people in preference to W. W. Holden, who at once sought to poison the mind of the President in regard to affairs in this State, urging that his defeat was a victory for the Confederates and rebels, and that Worth ought not to be allowed to execute the office of governor; but that the President should intervene and re-appoint him provisional governor. The President, however, was soon undeceived and recognized that the proceedings in North Carolina were not in antagonism to the Union nor to the authority of the Federal government. At a somewhat later date the President himself made a visit to North Carolina to see the grave of his father at Raleigh where some of the citizens had caused a monument to be erected; and then he visited the State University at Chapel Hill, and he manifested a particular interest in North Carolina and its affairs.

On December 14, 1865, Thaddeus Stevens, a leader of the violent Republicans in Congress, warned his party that if the President's plan of reconstruction were allowed—if the late Confederate States were admitted to representation on the old basis—these

States together with the Democrats of the North would control the country. He insisted that the constitution should be amended "so as to secure perpetual ascendancy to the party of the Union." To that end he had two plans, one to reduce the representation of the Southern States in Congress; the other to enfranchise the Blacks and disfranchise the Whites. The latter course was adopted; and in June, 1866, there was brought forward a plan of reconstruction based on negro suffrage. The Northern mind, however, was not then prepared for such a measure; but on that question the issue was joined between the President and the violent Republican leaders. It emphasized the clashing of Congress with the President, who had disagreed with Congress on the continuation of the Freedmen's Bureau and on the bill giving certain civil rights to negroes, both of which he had vetoed, and both of which Congress had passed over his veto. Many Republicans sustained the President, who had acted throughout with the approbation of Mr. Lincoln's cabinet and of Chief Justice Chase and other Justices of the Supreme Court; and so the Thad Stevens element found it necessary to wait, and to inaugurate a fierce campaign to solidify Northern sentiment. The North quivered under the passionate appeals made to inflame sectional hatred and to arouse relentless animosity. One illustration must suffice. Mr. Shellabarger, a leading Republican of Ohio said: "They framed iniquity and universal murder into law. Their pirates burned your unarmed commerce upon every sea. They carved the bones of your dead heroes into ornaments, and drank from goblets made out of their skulls. They poisoned your fountains; put mines under your soldiers' prisons; organized bands whose leaders were concealed in your homes; and commissions ordered the torch and yellow fever to be carried to your cities and to your women and children. They planned one universal bonfire of the North from Lake Ontario to the Missouri." Such was the keynote of the campaign of hate the Northern statesmen inaugurated. The seed fell on fruitful ground. Malice became the ruling passion of the Northern people, and the result of the election brought great comfort to Thaddeus Stevens and his associates. But the President remained firm in his con-

viction that the governments in the Southern States, which had been recognized by the Executive Department and by the Judicial Department, ought to be recognized by Congress. Under the fierce assaults of the Stevens faction, embracing the Marats, Dantons and Robespierres of that period, three members of the cabinet recanted and resigned. Secretary Stanton, however, remained.

On January 7, 1867, it being resolved to remove the President, a committee was raised to impeach him, but although a close and searching examination was made, even of his private actions, no pretext could then be found on which to base proceedings against him. He was, however, deprived of the command of the army, for fear that he might use the military power against the enforcement of Congressional measures. Two months later, despite his veto, the statehood of the Southern States was annulled and they were remanded to military rule. Their laws and constitutions and governments were set aside, and a major-general was set over them, his will being the law. On the same day the tenure of office act was passed. When this act was presented to the President his cabinet advised him that it was unconstitutional; and Secretary Stanton gave an elaborate opinion to that effect. It was, however, passed by Congress over the President's veto. Under its provisions the President could not remove an officer who had been confirmed by the Senate, without its consent; but, when the Senate was not in session, he could suspend such an officer. Mr. Stanton forfeited the confidence of the President, and in August, 1867, the President informed him that "public considerations of a high character constrained him to ask for his resignation." The reply of the Secretary was that "public considerations of a high character constrain me not to resign until Congress meets." The President then suspended Mr. Stanton, and when Congress was in session on February 21, 1868, he removed him.

The President stood in the way of the full execution of the purposes of the Republican leaders. In 1866 they had failed to find a pretext for impeachment proceedings. Senator Sumner, in his opinion filed in the impeachment proceedings, mentions that when the tenure of office act was passed, "in order to prepare the way

for impeachment, by removing certain scruples of technicality, its violation was expressly declared to be a high misdemeanor." Secretary Stanton, a member of the cabinet, was apparently working to accomplish the purpose. He prepared the way. On the same day that he was removed, a resolution of impeachment was introduced. When the articles were presented to the Senate, the President's counsel asked for forty days to prepare for the trial, but were allowed only ten. The keynote of the proceeding is found in Senator Sumner's opinion: "This is the last of the great battles with slavery. Driven from these legislative chambers, driven from the field of war, this monstrous power has found a refuge in the Executive Mansion, where, in utter disregard of the Constitution and laws, it seeks to exercise its ancient, far-reaching sway. All this is very plain. Nobody can question it. Andrew Johnson is the impersonation of the tyrannical slave power. In him it lives again. He is the lineal successor of John C. Calhoun and Jefferson Davis; and he gathers about him the same supporters." "It is the old troop of slavery, with a few recruits, ready as of old for violence—cunning in device, and heartless. With the President at their head, they are now entrenched in the Executive Mansion. Not to dislodge them is to leave the country a prey to one of the most hateful tyrannies of history; especially is it to surrender the Unionists of the rebel States to violence and bloodshed. Not a month, not a week, not a day should be lost. The safety of the Republic requires action at once."

Mr. Sumner then insisted that the impeachment proceedings were political and not judicial. He did not propose to confine himself to the charges and specifications that had been brought against the President, but contended that he should be removed, whether or not. He was charged particularly with removing Secretary Stanton from office. Mr. Sumner said: "Here in the Senate we know officially how he has made himself the attorney of slavery—the usurper of legislative power—the violator of law—the patron of rebels—the helping hand of rebellion—the kicker from office of good citizens—the open bunghole of the treasury—the architect of the whiskey ring—the stumbling block to all good

laws by wanton vetoes and then by criminal hindrances; all these things are known here beyond question. To the apologists of the President, who set up the quibbling objection that they are not alleged in the articles of impeachment, I reply that, even if excluded on this account from judgment, they may be treated as evidence."

In 1865 and early in 1866 the Southern States, in conformity with the President's plan, had abolished slavery by ratifying the 13th amendment to the Constitution. Two years after slavery was abolished Senator Sumner voiced what was in the hearts of his confreres and associates in the above extracts from his judgment and opinion filed in the impeachment proceedings. Only one article was voted on by the Court of Impeachment. It was the 11th article relating to the removal of Secretary Stanton. Thirty-five Republicans voted for conviction; nineteen Senators voted not guilty, among whom were three Republicans who refused to follow the lead of Stanton, Stevens and Sumner.

The President indeed had been guilty of the offence of wishing to restore the Union and to establish peace and order at the South and fraternal feeling throughout the country. He had taken up the work of Reconstruction and had brought the Southern States again into harmonious relations with the Federal government. But he had not trampled under foot the Constitution of the Union and had not imposed such conditions as would secure the dominancy of the Republican party. That was his crime. It was unpardonable.

His contention was that the Southern States had always remained members of the Union, and that Congress had no right under the Constitution to interfere with suffrage in any State; and he further contended that it was unwise and inexpedient to invest the negroes at the South with suffrage, as they were not prepared to use the ballot with intelligence and discretion. At the North, where they were few in numbers and their political influence was unimportant, they were still generally denied the right of vote. At the South their power would be great; and untutored and ignorant, the result of conferring suffrage on them could only be unfortunate. Some of the more thoughtful of his adversaries, in-

deed, admitted the force of this reasoning, and spoke of the measure of investing the negroes with the ballot as an experiment that might, or might not, prove judicious.

As it was, President Johnson made a great effort against the purpose of Congress, but without avail. Thaddeus Stevens, who boldly declared that all these proceedings in which he was the leader were extra-Constitutional, dying in August, 1868, lived only to see the inauguration of negro suffrage at the South and the ascendancy of his party in the Southern States through the aid of the negroes. Senator Sumner, living until 1874, saw the system he and his associates had erected tottering to its fall, but he died in March, 1874, just before the North itself, in the Congressional election of that year, largely repudiated the doctrines he had so violently advocated.

While President Johnson's course after the war threw him in opposition to the leaders of the Republican Party his efforts to maintain the Union during the war, and his avowed purpose to make treason odious, and his want of sympathy with the better classes at the South, prevented him from having the regard of the Southern people; although naturally they rejoiced that the purpose of the Republican leaders to remove him from the Presidency was defeated by his acquittal.

On the expiration of his term in March, 1869, he returned to Tennessee, and at various times sought office at the hands of the people, without avail, until in January, 1875, he was elected to the United States Senate as a Democrat; but six months later, July 30, 1875, he was stricken with paralysis and died the following day.

Viewed from the standpoint of a Union citizen, he rendered the United States services during the war for the Union that were of incalculable advantage. Had it not been for his action and his influence in Tennessee, and had Tennessee been as firm as North Carolina for the South, the contest indeed might have ended differently. Not a polished orator, he was a man of massive powers,—virile, resolute and never dismayed. He stood manfully for the right, as he conceived it to be, but was unable to thwart those who

deemed negro suffrage necessary to perpetuate the power of the Republican Party. A single decade however sufficed to destroy the Africanized governments set up at the South by his adversaries, and the passage of time justifies his resolute action and the wisdom of his judgment.

*S. A. Ashe.*







## SAMUEL JOHNSTON



WHEN Governor Gabriel Johnston came as Governor of North Carolina, he was soon followed by a brother, who later became the surveyor-general of the province. This gentleman married Helen Scrymoure, and their eldest child is the subject of this sketch. Samuel Johnston was born at Dundee, Scotland, December 15, 1733. He was not three years of age when his parents removed to North Carolina. His father located in Onslow Precinct where he had large interests, the county seat being called Johnstonville in his honor. On his death Mr. Edward Starkey became guardian of the orphan children, and the subject of this sketch ever cherished the most friendly feelings for him. Young Johnston was educated in New England, and then read law under Mr. Thomas Barker, who resided in Chowan. He acted as clerk of the Superior Court of Chowan from 1767 until the courts ceased in 1773; and he was the deputy naval officer for the province till the opening of the Revolution, having purchased that office from the appointee of the Crown who remained in England.

In 1765 Mr. Johnston purchased a plantation in Chowan County called Hayes, and that became his place of residence. Here he surrounded himself with every comfort and many of the elegancies of life, and made a residence that had no superior in the province. He married Miss Frances Cathcart, a daughter of Dr. Cathcart,

and was surrounded by an interesting family. His sister Isabella was engaged to be married to Joseph Hewes, but died suddenly; and Mr. Hewes ever afterwards was an intimate friend of Mr. Johnston. Another sister, Hannah, married James Iredell, who had the greatest veneration for his distinguished brother-in-law. His brother John was like himself a sterling patriot and man of affairs. In the same community were John Harvey, Thomas Jones, Charles Johnson, Colonel John Dawson, who married a daughter of Governor Gabriel Johnston, Edward Buncombe, Stephen Cabarrus, and other gentlemen of the first water. It was in this society that Mr. Johnston passed the years of his early manhood, and entered on the activities of life. For ability, learning, wealth and character, he was among the foremost of the gentlemen of the province. During the period of his career there were several very great men in North Carolina, and a considerable number who united shining talents with patriotism and character; and still others not so richly endowed with natural gifts who yet were practical men of affairs, and attained great prominence because of their usefulness and adroit political management. In general excellence Mr. Johnston surpassed them all. He stood as a great pyramid securely erected on a solid granite base. "He bore the greatest weight of care and labor lightly as a mountain supports its crown. His powerful frame was a fit engine for the vigorous intellect that gave it animation. Strength was his characteristic. In his relations to the public, an inflexible sense of duty and justice dominated. There was a remarkable degree of self-reliance and majesty about the man. He commanded the respect and admiration, but not the love, of the masses of the people." He was lofty and unbending in his attitude, but the soul of honor, and never departed from the dictates of his reason. As an illustration of the respect with which he was regarded, the testimony of Governor Martin, when a fugitive on board his shipping, may be quoted. In October 1775, after Johnston had called together the Congress as moderator and had accepted from it the position of treasurer of the Northern District as a Revolutionary office, Governor Martin in notifying him of his suspension as the naval offi-

cer of the province, adverts to "the respect I have entertained for your private character;" and in communicating to the Crown the establishment of a Revolutionary government under the Provincial Council of Thirteen, he speaks very disparagingly of the other members, but says: "Mr. Samuel Ashe and Mr. Samuel Johnston have the reputation of being men of integrity."

As early as 1760 Mr. Johnston was a member of the Assembly from Chowan County, and naturally took a prominent part in the proceedings of the Assembly. During the Stamp Act times, he was a thorough patriot, although there was no occasion for any popular demonstration in the Albemarle section.

When the Regulation troubles came on, like Harvey, Caswell and all the other men of prominence in the Eastern Counties, he supported law and order as against the anarchy threatened by the spread of the Regulation movement. In 1770 when the Regulators broke up the court at Hillsboro, and by their riots brought on a crisis, the Assembly, led by Johnston and others, enacted on the one hand very sweeping remedial legislation, such as laws to regulate attorneys' fees, to regulate officers' fees; to direct sheriffs in levying executions, to authorize the Inferior Courts to establish tobacco warehouses wherever needed; to prevent the collection of the sinking fund tax, and other measures calculated to remove every cause of discontent. On the other hand Mr. Johnston and his associates proposed to put a stop, by law, to riots and disorder, and he drew and introduced the bill which has been called the "Bloody Act." This Act among other things provided that upon indictment found against any person for any of the crimes described in the Act, the judges of the court shall issue their proclamation, commanding such offender to surrender within sixty days and stand trial; on failure of which he should be deemed guilty of the offence charged, and "it shall be lawful for anyone to kill and destroy such offender, and his lands and chattels shall be confiscated to the King for the use of Government." This clause the law officers in England said "was irreconcilable with the principles of the Constitution, full of danger in its operation and unfit for any part of the British Empire." But as it was by its own

limitations upon the point of expiring, and the total repeal of it might have very fatal consequences, the Act was not disallowed, but the Governor was advised not to assent to any new law for preventing tumults and riotous assemblies, unless it should be entirely free from the objections stated.

The condition of affairs in the province required a strong hand and a severe law to maintain government and repress anarchy. While this Act passed the General Assembly, its severity was recognized even by those who enacted it. As a repressive measure, however, it had its effect, so that after the battle of Alamance the Regulation troubles entirely ceased. Some writers speak of Alamance as the first battle of the American Revolution. It had no connection with the American Revolution. The Regulators were not demanding their rights and liberties as against the measures of parliament, but were resisting the laws of the province. That they had grievances is evident, but those grievances were not at all akin to the British exactions which led to the Revolution. Johnston and his associates, who had ever been devoted and zealous in their adherence to the rights of the Colonies, were not inconsistent in maintaining law and order and government in 1771, and in taking up arms in 1775.

At the first session of the Assembly after the return of the army from Alamance, the Assembly, to relieve the burdens of the people, proposed to repeal the tax of one shilling on the poll imposed many years before to provide a sinking fund. The Assembly claimed that the object of that tax had been accomplished. On the other hand the Governor denied this statement and denounced the proposed appeal as a fraud. Johnston drew and introduced the bill; and he gave the weight of his influence to this measure of relief. The issue was sharp. It was feared that the Governor would dissolve the Assembly, and in anticipation of such action, a resolution was adopted directed the sheriffs not to collect this tax. The Governor, acting speedily, however, dissolved the Assembly before the resolution could be spread on the minutes. Still Caswell, the Speaker, communicated the resolve to the treasurers; and John Ashe, the treasurer of the Southern District, did not

require the sheriffs to collect it; although the Governor by his proclamation especially commanded them to do so. In the contests of that session Johnston was the leading figure, antagonizing the Governor at every point; and yet a few months later we find the Governor writing to him and asking free communication, "as I entertain such respect and esteem for your person and character."

At the next session, January, 1773, the Court Law was the chief cause of difference. The Court Act of 1771 was about to expire, and the King, at the solicitation of British merchants, had directed that in the new law there should be no attachment allowed against the property of non-resident debtors. The Assembly insisted on providing for such attachments, notwithstanding the King's instruction. Sam Johnston introduced the Bill. The Assembly passed it. The Governor would not assent to it and dissolved the Assembly. The Court Law expired by its own limitation, and there were no Superior or General Courts held in the province. A third Assembly was now elected, and it met in December, 1773. Harvey was Speaker. Immediately on meeting, it appointed a committee to correspond with the other Colonies on matters relating to America which now assumed renewed importance.

It also passed a Court Bill, but without avail. On December 21st it petitioned the King to repeal his instructions and appointed a committee, composed of Speaker Harvey, Sam Johnston, John Ashe, and others, to ask Tryon, "who happily for this country, for many years presided over it," to carry this address to the King. Thereupon the Governor much mortified and offended, prorogued the Assembly till March. When the House met March, 1774, it adopted a resolution directing the sheriffs not to collect the one shilling poll tax, and the Governor prorogued it till May. In all these proceedings Johnston had been among the foremost. Continental affairs were now claiming attention. Colonel Harvey received information that the Governor did not intend to convene another Assembly, and forthwith he conferred with Willie Jones, Sam Johnston and Colonel Buncombe, and declared that he would issue handbills and the people would convene an Assembly. The

day following this conference Johnston wrote to Mr. Hooper and asked his advice, and asked him to speak of it to Mr. Harnett and Colonel Ashe, and other such men. Johnston was fully abreast of the foremost in his purpose to take determined action for the rights of the people. Hooper and Mr. Iredell, who looked up to Johnston with veneration, had prophetic visions of America fast striding to independence, and Johnston doubtless was entirely aware of their thoughts on that great subject.

At length in July news was received at Wilmington that the port of Boston had been closed by Act of Parliament. The inhabitants of the district met in general meeting, William Hooper presiding, and appointed a committee of which Colonel James Moore was the head to address the people and urge them to elect delegates to represent them in a general meeting. This was the first appeal to the sovereignty of the people. The call was made by James Moore and three of his associates, and it was favorably received throughout the Colony. The deputies were elected, Johnston and Harvey being members of the body. After appointing delegates to the Continental Congress, it clothed Harvey, and in case of his inability Johnston, with the power to call a new Congress.

At that time Johnston was one of the chief leaders. On September 1st, 1774, Governor Martin wrote to his superiors in London:

"That the seven counties of the Northern District are now under the absolute guidance of a Mr. Johnston, who is deputy naval officer and was one of the clerks of the Superior Courts while they existed in this province, but who under the prejudices of a New England education, as I suppose, is by no means the friend of government he ought to be, having taken a foremost part in all the late oppositions, in which it is probable, if not certain, he has been influenced also by his aims to the treasuryship, for which he was a candidate at the last appointment without success."

Events were now proceeding with no measured steps. A new Assembly had been elected, and Colonel Harvey called for a new

Congress. The latter met at New-Bern on April 4th; the Assembly the next day. The representatives of the people were nearly identical in both, and the delegates to the Congress were invited to seats in the Assembly. The Governor's Council had measurably deserted him when the first Congress met and had affiliated with the representatives of the people; and because of the resolute answer made to the Governor's opening address, prepared by Johnston and others, without the transaction of any business the Governor dissolved the Assembly on the third day of the session, while the Congress continued its business as representatives of the people. Seeing that the inhabitants of the Colony were falling away from the Government, Governor Martin sought to enlist the Regulators and Highlanders in his support, and estimated that 1400 of them were on his side.

On May 6th news of the battle of Lexington was received at New-Bern, and a great impulse was given to patriotic action. Early in March the people on the Cape Fear had formed military companies, and now an independent company was raised at New-Bern, to the consternation of Governor Martin. Indeed Mr. Hewes, a delegate to the Continental Congress, who reached Philadelphia on the 9th day of May, two days later wrote to Johnston urging the people to arm. "I tremble," said he, "for North Carolina. Every county ought to have at least one company armed and exercised. Pray encourage it. Speak to the people. Write to them. Urge strongly the necessity of it." At that time Colonel Harvey was ill, and about May 25th he passed away, leaving Johnston the great central figure of the Revolution in North Carolina. The action of Abner Nash and his associates at New-Bern was so resolute that Governor Martin, like Dunmore of Virginia, fled from his palace for personal safety, reaching Fort Johnston on June 2d; and indeed it was time. On May 20th the Wilmington committee had invited the committees of that district to meet at Wilmington on June 20th for some determined action. Similar proceedings were in progress in every county. But none equalled the action of Mecklenburg. There on the 31st of May the committee declared all commissions void, directed the nine companies

of the county to elect officers, and each company to elect two select men to act as magistrates, who should form a County Court, and required all taxes and public dues to be paid to the chairman of the committee; thus establishing a free government, independent of the Crown. This was more than a declaration of independence. It was independence itself. These resolves, so far in advance of any action taken at that time elsewhere in America, were printed in the *North Carolina Gazette* of New-Bern on June 16, 1775; and Richard Cogdell, the chairman of the committee of safety, dispatched them to Sam. Johnston, who a few days later, writing to Hewes at Philadelphia, said :

"Tom Polk, too, is raising a very pretty spirit in the back country (see the newspapers). He has gone a little farther than I would choose to have gone, but perhaps no further than necessary."

The spirit of independence was indeed born.

In July Ashe burned Fort Johnston and drove the Royal Governor, Martin, from the soil of North Carolina; and on the 21st of July Johnston called for an election of deputies to attend the Third Provincial Congress. By that body, which met at Hillsboro on Monday, August 21st, he was chosen moderator, and preparations were made by it for war. Two Continental regiments were raised, and six battalions of minute men; and the militia of each county was organized. Johnston was appointed chairman of a commission to issue \$125,000.00 in paper money, and he was elected treasurer of the Northern District. It was the end of the provincial system of government. Old things had passed away. The sovereignty of the people succeeded to the power of the Crown. In each county there was a committee of safety; and one for each district, and a Provincial Council of thirteen members, with full powers of government; and of this council Johnston was an important member. Shortly after the adjournment of the first session of the council, at the end of October, 1775. Johnston visited Boston, but was again at his post of duty in December, and was charged as one of the commissioners to fit out an armed vessel at



Edenton. Knowing that Governor Martin was forming plans to subjugate the province, at that session the council gave directions for defence. On the 5th of February, Donald McDonald called on the Loyalists of the interior to repair to the royal banner at Campelton. On the 10th the committee of safety ordered Caswell to march his minute men to the Cape Fear, and similar orders were given to Thackston at Hillsboro, while Moore and Lillington were active near Wilmington. Harnett called the council to meet at New-Bern on the 27th of February, but happily the victory at Moore's Creek, on that very day, secured safety from the impending danger. Still Johnston was sent as one of a Committee to confer with the Council of Virginia and arrange for operations. The movement of the Tories, the clash of arms, the complete victory, had a tremendous effect in North Carolina. On April 4, 1775, the 4th Provincial Congress met. On the next day Johnston, writing to Iredell, said: "All our people here are up for Independence." He himself was a leader in the movement. The embodiment of that spirit, he was unanimously elected president of the Congress; and he was also appointed chairman of the Committee of Secrecy, Intelligence and Observation. On the 12th of April a select committee, of which Harnett was chairman, made its report declaring for independence, which was unanimously adopted by the Congress. It was the first expression of a purpose to separate from Great Britain uttered by any province. Proposing independence, the members considered a Constitution establishing a form of Government. Johnston wrote:

"Our prospects at this time are very gloomy. Our people are about forming a Constitution. From what I can at present collect of their plan, it will be impossible for me to take any part in the execution of it. Numbers have started in the race of popularity, and condescend to the usual means of success."

It appears that the Congress had a printed copy of the South Carolina Constitution and also a copy of that of Connecticut. It was proposed to build on the latter. Johnston's view was that the only check on the power of the representatives of the people was

to be found in annual elections, and he differed with other leaders in regard to the election of magistrates by the people and other provisions making the judiciary dependent on the changing mood of the populace. Eventually the adoption of a Constitution was postponed; and the Provincial Council was replaced by a committee of safety of which Willie Jones became the president. On August 9th the council of safety adopted a resolution:

"That since the General Congress has declared that the Colonies are free and independent States, it be recommended to the people to pay the greatest attention to the election of delegates to form a Constitution."

This was thought to be especially aimed at Mr. Johnston. There was a bitter warfare made against him in Chowan, during the course of which his opponents proceeded to such extreme lengths that he was burned in effigy by the people who had theretofore admired and loved him. By such means he was defeated; but he took his defeat philosophically. Doubtless it was exasperating; but his greatness of soul lifted him above the prejudices of the contest.

His business as treasurer took him to Halifax in attendance on the Congress. Arriving there on the 7th of December, after the Constitution had been put in some shape, he wrote to Iredell:

"As well as I can judge from a cursory view of it, it may do as well as that adopted by any other Colony. Nothing of the kind can be good. There is one thing in it I cannot bear, and yet I am inclined to think it will stand. The inhabitants are empowered to elect the justices in their respective counties who are to be the judges of the County Courts. Numberless inconveniences must arise from so absurd an institution."

"They talk," said he, "of having all the officers, even the judges and clerks, elected annually, with a number of other absurdities;" and he characterized the majority of the Congress "as a set of men without reading, experience or principles to govern them." More reasonable counsels prevailed. The instrument appears to have been put in better shape by the Congress itself. Stability

and independence were secured to the judiciary, and a representative Republic was established, with the safeguard that Johnston himself had prescribed of annual elections of the representatives. In the outcome it would seem that Johnston's views were adopted rather than those of Willie Jones and Tom Person.

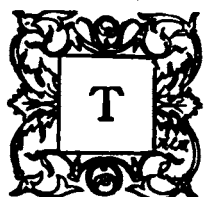
At the first session of the Assembly Johnston was again elected treasurer of the Northern District; but after holding it some time he resigned, saying, "In the infancy of our glorious struggle, when the minds of many were unsettled and doubtful of the event, I joyfully accepted every appointment, etc. At this period, when the Constitution of this State is happily and permanently established, etc., I request the favor of being permitted to decline."

He took his seat in the Senate at the session of May, 1779, and, being fully reëstablished in the veneration of the public, was elected to represent the State in the Continental Congress, where he served from 1780 to 1782. The war period then being over, he addressed himself for five years to his personal affairs; but in 1787 he was elected Governor of the State and served as such for two years. In 1788 he was a member of the convention that against his protests rejected the United States Constitution; and he was president of the convention the next year that ratified that instrument. While still Governor he was chosen the first Senator to represent the State in the Congress of the United States. In that body he stood *primus inter pares*. No one was more highly respected by his fellow-senators. In February, 1800, he was appointed a judge, but after three years on the bench he returned again to private life, and passed his remaining years, until his death in 1816, in the enjoyment of his well-earned retirement. At Hayes he surrounded himself with paintings, statuary and treasured volumes. His correspondence has been preserved; and the contents of his library are to-day the rarest treasures of the State. Indeed it is thought they are unequalled in interest by any private collection at the South. His last surviving descendant was Mr. James C. Johnston, a gentleman famed for his attainments and culture and great wealth, who left no issue.

S. A. Ashe.



## ALLEN JONES



WO noted brothers who wielded a powerful influence in shaping the course of North Carolina through the troublous times of our Revolutionary struggle for independence (though widely different in politics after the war) were the Honorable Willie Jones of the county of Halifax, and General Allen Jones of the county of Northampton. It is of the latter that the present sketch will treat. For an account of this Jones family in general, the reader is referred to the genealogy compiled by Colonel Cadwallader Jones and published at Columbia, South Carolina, in 1900.

Allen Jones was born on the 24th of December, 1739, and received his education at Eton, the noted English college. There were at that time in England many friends of the young student's father, who was Robert Jones, Jr., commonly called Robin Jones, then holding office under the Crown as attorney-general of the province of North Carolina.

The country seat of Allen Jones in Northampton County was called Mt. Gallant. Across the Roanoke in Halifax was the Grove, the home of his brother Willie (pronounced Wiley), but Willie Jones himself seems also to have been a resident of Northampton at one time; for, on a list of county court clerks made out in 1772, his name appears as clerk of the court of that county.

Though Allen Jones had seen some service as a member of the

Colonial Assembly before the Revolution, he gained his greatest distinction during that war. Prior to the 4th of July, 1776, four North Carolina Provincial Congresses met in defiance of British authority, one also meeting a few months after independence had been declared, and in all five of these bodies Allen Jones sat as a delegate from Northampton County, also filling other positions—military as well as civil.

It was on the 25th of August, 1774, that delegates elected by the freeman of North Carolina met at New-Bern, much to the horror of His Excellency, Josiah Martin, last of the Royal Governors. One of these delegates was Allen Jones, who was also promptly on hand in the same capacity when another congress or convention met in the same town on April 3, 1775. When the third Congress met, August 20, 1775, at Hillsboro, hostilities had commenced and it became necessary to place the State in a posture of defence. On the 9th of September, during the session last mentioned, Allen Jones was elected colonel of North Carolina militia for the county of Northampton; and he was also elected a member of the committee of safety for the Halifax district on the same day. By the time the next Provincial Congress met (Halifax, April 4, 1776) a great military victory had been won by the North Carolinians at Moore's Creek Bridge, February 27th, and the Congress at Halifax appointed a committee to take into consideration what disposition should be made of the prisoners there captured; also what should be done relative to other persons disaffected toward the Whig Government. Of this committee (which pursued its investigations for some days) Allen Jones was chairman. On April 22, 1776, Colonel Jones was promoted to the rank of brigadier-general and placed in command of the Halifax district.

Another Provincial Congress met at Halifax on November 12, 1776, continuing its session till the 10th of December. General Jones was a member of this body also; and among the committees on which he served was that which drew up the State Constitution and Bill of Rights.

General Jones was without military training, and his reputation as a soldier was not so great as that gained by him as a states-

man. In making a return of his brigade to Governor Caswell on September 8, 1777, he wrote :

"I do not know whether my return is proper, for I confess my ignorance in military affairs."

Jones saw some service in the field, however ; and, in October, 1780, joined the army of General Gates with a detachment of five hundred men. The Assembly of North Carolina having passed an act empowering the Governor, with the advice of his Council, to march North Carolina militia (not exceeding 2,000) to the assistance of either Virginia or South Carolina whenever deemed advisable, that action was a source of some dissatisfaction to General Jones. When there was a likelihood of his being sent southward in the Fall of 1778, he wrote Governor Caswell on October 21st as follows :

"We have always been haughtily treated by South Carolina till they wanted our assistance, and then we are sisters ; but as soon as their turn is served, all relationship ceases."

The first State Senate which ever sat in North Carolina was the one which met at New-Bern on the 7th of April, 1777, and the journals of that body show that Allen Jones represented Northampton County therein. He was re-elected senator for several terms, becoming Speaker on the 12th of August, 1778, as successor to Whitmel Hill, who had been chosen a delegate to the Continental Congress. On October 25, 1779, General Jones himself was elected a member of the Continental Congress, and was succeeded therein by his brother Willie about a year later. When Allen Jones went to the Continental Congress, he wrote to the North Carolina Assembly, November 1, 1779, recommending that the senior colonel in his brigade, Thomas Eaton, should be appointed brigadier-general for the time being, and this was accordingly done. General Eaton commanded this brigade in the battle of Guilford Court House and elsewhere. General Jones was several times married, and left numerous descendants. Among his

sons-in-law were Governor William Richardson Davie, General Thomas Eaton and Judge Sitgreaves.

As stated in the beginning of this sketch, Allen Jones and his brother Willie were widely different in politics after the Revolution—Willie being the leader of the extreme Republicans of that day, while Allen was a Federalist. For several terms after the Revolution Allen served in the State Senate. He was one of those who framed the State Constitution in 1776, and he was a warm advocate of the adoption of the United States Constitution in 1788 and 1789. He was a lawyer of learning and ability and of faultless character. He stood among the first men of his generation.

The death of General Allen Jones occurred at his seat, Mt. Galant, in the county of Northampton, on the 10th of November, 1798.

*Marshall De Lancey Haywood.*





## THOMAS JONES



REFERRING to the author of the hymn "America," Oliver Wendell Holmes said: "Fate tried to conceal him by naming him Smith." When we read the name Thomas Jones, we are led to suspect that Fate may have had a similar purpose in view; and we may add that this apparent effort at concealment has succeeded admirably so far as recollection by our generation is concerned, though none of the Revolutionary statesmen of his day was better known in the political circles of North Carolina.

In the North Carolina Historical and Genealogical Register for January, 1901, are some abstracts of wills which are on file in the court house of Chowan County, and these give the names of three testators named Thomas Jones, to wit: Thomas Jones who made his will in 1765; another Thomas Jones who made his will in 1775 (each mentioning a son Thomas); and also the subject of our present sketch, Thomas Jones, who made his will in 1797, the year of his death. The last named refers to sons, Zachariah, Levi and Thomas; daughters, Mary Brinn and Elizabeth Beasley; and grandchildren, Josiah and Elizabeth Sweeney. The three first above mentioned persons bearing the name of Thomas Jones may have formed a line of descent—being grandfather, father and son.

Of the public life of Thomas Jones of Chowan in Revolutionary



times we may gather much from the public records, though our State histories throw little light on his career. The sketch of him in Wheeler's History covers exactly three lines, with about one line added by way of an apology for not telling more.

Mr. Jones was a native of Gloucestershire, England, was bred to the law, was one of the very finest men of the province in genius and learning. About the time of the arrival of James Iredell at Edenton, Mr. Jones was clerk of the court. He was not a man of large means, but was esteemed one of the principal men of his community. He was married and had an interesting household that was on terms of intimacy with the Johnstons and others of that social circle. In 1771 Iredell mentions him as "one of the best as well as most agreeable men in the world." A year later he mentions, "Drank tea with Mr. and Mrs. Harnett at Mrs. Jones's." Harnett and his wife were then returning from a trip to the North, and their route homeward lay through Edenton. About the same time Mr. Iredell mentions, "All Saturday morning was writing Mr. Jones's catalogue of books."

In the troubles with Governor Martin and with the Crown, Mr. Jones, like Johnston, Hewes and Iredell, was a strong patriot and was a member of the First Provincial Congress which met at New-Bern on the 25th of August, 1774, and also of the Second Congress that met on April 3rd, at New-Bern, being likewise a member of the House of Commons that met at the same place on the next day. That was the last Assembly until the adoption of the State Constitution. In the Provincial Congress which met at Hillsboro, August 20, 1775, he was also a delegate. At that time Governor Martin was a fugitive and had been driven from North Carolina soil by John Ashe, who a month earlier had burnt Fort Johnston where the Governor had taken refuge. The counties of the province were under the control of local committees of safety, and the fabric of the old government was in ruins. The sovereignty of the people was being exercised by the Provincial Congress, and it became important to establish some system of government providing an executive head for the administration of affairs. On September 9th the Congress appointed for this purpose

a Provincial Council composed of thirteen members, Mr. Jones being one of the representatives of the Edenton district in that body; and to the council were given full powers of government. It was to meet at Johnston Court House once every three months, and oftener if necessary, at that or such other places as might be deemed proper.

Mr. Jones was a member of the committee, which was composed of forty-five other gentlemen, who prepared this plan of government. He was also appointed by the Congress on a committee to confer with those inhabitants of the province who had been deterred from joining in the common cause by any religious or political scruples. Other important business was also committed to his charge. It was this Congress that, while rejecting a proposed confederation, made provision for a military force and prepared for war.

Mr. Jones, being a member of the Provincial Council, attended the meetings of that body and was an active influence in its operations. At its first meeting in December, it directed that all personal communication with Governor Martin should be cut off and that armed vessels should be fitted out with dispatch; one at Wilmington, one at New-Bern and one at Port Roanoke; and Thomas Jones was appointed one of the commissioners to fit out the last of these. He was also appointed a commissioner to purchase material and employ proper persons for the purpose of supplying arms and ammunition. At the next meeting of the Council, on the 28th of February, 1776, Mr. Jones was appointed with two others to confer with the Committee of Safety of Virginia for the common defence.

On the 4th of April, 1776, the Fourth Provincial Congress met, Mr. Jones being a member of the body, and he was appointed on a select committee to devise measures for the better defence of the province; and indeed he was employed on most of the important business of the Congress; and was on the Committee of Secrecy, Intelligence and Observation.

It was the select committee of which he was a member that reported the resolution empowering the delegates from this province

to concur in declaring independence. The patriots of that day were engaged in great affairs. Writing on Sunday morning, April 28th, Mr. Jones said :

"In my time I have been used to business, both public and private, but never yet experienced one-fourth part of what I now am necessarily obliged to undertake—we have no rest either night or day. The first thing done in the morning is to prepare every matter necessary for the day; after breakfast to Congress, there generally from 9 until 3; no sitting a minute after dinner, but to the different committees; perhaps one person will be obliged to attend four of them between 4 o'clock and 9 at night; then to supper, and this generally brings us to 12 at night. This has been the life I have led since my arrival here. In short, I never was so hurried."

It was in the midst of all this haste and work, while General Clinton was on the Cape Fear waiting for Lord Cornwallis's seven regiments, and while McDonald's dispersed Highlanders were being secured and an army was collecting to resist subjugation, that a plan of government was brought forward for adoption. On the 14th of April Mr. Jones was appointed one of the committee to prepare a temporary civil government; and on the 27th of April the House went into a committee of the whole to consider resolutions proposed as the basis of a temporary civil government. The next day Mr. Jones wrote :

"The Constitution goes on but slowly. The outlines of it made their appearance in the House for the first time yesterday. The plan as it now stands would be subject to many alterations—a House of the Representatives of the people, all freeholders to vote; second, a legislative council, one member from each county, and none but freeholders will have a right to vote for the members of this council. Next, an executive council, to consist of a president and six counsellors, to be always sitting, to do all official business of government."

He mentions: "We have a printed copy of the South Carolina Constitution, which is now in full force with the inhabitants of that country." Parties and factions had, however, already divided the patriot leaders. Mr. Johnston, the president of the Congress, was not friendly to a pure democracy, nor had he any patience with demagogues. He was a man of so much consequence, however,

that after the first clashings those who might be called the radicals yielded to his views in some measure, and some of the differences appear to have been adjusted. He himself mentioned on the 20th of April, "that some have proposed that he should take up the plan of the Connecticut Constitution for a groundwork, but that all the great officers instead of being elected by the people at large were to be appointed by the Assembly, but the judges should hold during good behaviour." His own view was that the only check in a democracy was annual elections. However, the attempt to form a permanent Constitution at that time was abandoned, and Mr. Jones was one of the committee appointed to propose a temporary form of government until the end of the next Congress. By the new plan the Provincial Council and the Committees of Safety for each district were dissolved, and a Council of Safety composed of thirteen was appointed with full power to act for the defence and protection of the people. Mr. Jones was a member of the new council, and he attended its sessions and conducted the affairs of State, along with the other members of that body. It was this council which organized and sent forward General Rutherford's expedition against the Cherokees in the fall of 1776. The last Provincial Congress met on the 12th of November, at Halifax, and Mr. Jones was again a member of that body. In view of the purpose to adopt a State Constitution, a particular effort had been made to exclude Mr. Johnston. Mr. Jones was again a member of the committee having that matter in charge, and he presented the work of the committee to the Congress, and the Constitution was mentioned as Jones's work. That he had a large share in framing the Constitution must be true; but to Harnett has been ascribed the provision extending religious toleration and also the provisions so narrowly limiting the power of the executive. To Caldwell, Caswell, Burke, Allen Jones and Willie Jones also have been attributed parts of the handiwork. Judge Ashe in a letter to the Assembly, in 1786, said:

"If my opinion of our Constitution is an error, I fear it is an incurable one, for I had the honor to assist in the forming it, and confess I so designed it, and I believe every other gentleman concerned did also."

From this it would seem that the Constitution was the work of many.

While it did not meet with the approval of Mr. Johnston, yet so far from its being a pure democracy, the powers of government were conferred on the Assembly; and Johnston's idea of annual elections was made the foundation stone of the edifice.

With this last and chief public work of Thomas Jones he disappeared from public life, and although it appears that he survived some twenty years, his subsequent career has left no impression on the annals of the State.

Thus attributing to him a leading part in bringing into existence our State Constitution, it may be said that while this great document may survive to remote generations, few will remember the master workman whose hand designed it—for "the pyramids themselves, dotting with age, have forgotten the names of their founders."

*Marshall De Lancey Haywood.*

*S. A. Ashe.*





## THOMAS LAWRENCE

**T**HOMAS LAWRENCE, who has been an important factor in advancing educational interests in Western North Carolina, is a native of Scotland. His father, John Lawrence, was born at Cooper, Fifeshire, where his grandfather was a small landed proprietor. Through the unfaithfulness of an Edinburgh banker Mr. John Lawrence lost his patrimony early in life, and after learning the carpenter's trade, married Christina Johnstone, a member of a family who were for generations retainers of the celebrated House of Douglas.

The subject of this sketch was born at Crossford, a charming rural village in Lanarkshire on the Upper Clyde, a region picturesque and romantic and the scene of many historical incidents. Bothwell Castle, the ancient stronghold of the Douglas, and Tilletudlem Castle, immortalized by Scott in "Old Mortality," are in the immediate vicinity. Sent to the parish school before he was five years old, Thomas Lawrence's earliest playmates were blood relations of Robert Burns. In 1838 when he was but six years old, for he was born June 15, 1832, his parents with their young children came to the United States and settled in Allegheny City, Western Pennsylvania. Of the children, there were three daughters and five sons, Thomas being the oldest. In after life two of these brothers followed the fortunes of the Army of the Potomac, while a third, Major R. J. Lawrence, became a gallant Confederate



*Sincerely yours  
Thomas Lawrence.*

officer. After the settlement of the family at Allegheny, Mrs. Lawrence was for a time an invalid, and Thomas was sent into the country to live on a farm with a Scotch family. He took his school books with him, for it was expected that he would attend school during the winter months in the rude log-cabin schoolhouse near by; but during the three years he passed with those friends, doing all kinds of farm work and with a boyish ambition to do everything well, there was one thing he would not do—he would not go to school. There was, however, a good library in the house, and Thomas has even now a distinct recollection of the pleasure he derived from reading the “Lay of the Last Minstrel,” “The Winter Evening Tales” of Hogg—the Ettrick Shepherd—and other such books.

Returning to the city at the age of twelve or thirteen, he was given the choice of attending school or going to work, and with his dislike for schoolmasters he chose the latter. But his taste for reading grew, and he shared with another Allegheny boy, Andrew Carnegie, the privileges of the Anderson Library founded by Colonel Anderson, the remembrance of the benefits derived from which has led Carnegie to provide so many magnificent free libraries in this country and the British Islands.

Although he read largely of biography and the poets, as he grew older he felt the lack of training that he should have gotten at school, and while working at the bench ten hours a day he managed to go through alone, in a single winter, Robinson’s Practical Arithmetic. He also connected himself with a debating society, attended night school one winter, and studied German with a neighbor who was a German schoolmaster. Associated during the day with an intelligent German employed in the same establishment as himself, he made rapid progress in that language, which stood him in good stead when in after years he was a student at the German universities of Bonn and Leipsic.

From the age of thirteen to eighteen he was employed in the largest soap and candle manufactory in Pittsburg, Pennsylvania; and having the purpose always to do a little more than was expected of him, making the interest of his employers his own, he



mastered the details of the business, and so won the confidence of his employers that they offered to give him an interest in the establishment if he would remain with them until he was twenty-one and then continue in the business. He remembers with pride their statement to a friend that he had never deceived them and that he was the most profitable man or boy they had ever had.

But in the meantime, the lad became animated with a purpose to perfect his education and seek a professional career as a lawyer. He left the shop and attended Westminster Academy at Allegheny City a part of two winters, returning to the factory, where there was always a position for him, when school was closed, studying and reciting to a friend at night until he was ready to enter the Western University of Pennsylvania, where he graduated in 1858, leading his classes in Mathematics, Latin and Greek. At that period he fell much under the kindly influence of a devoted friend of his family, Professor Robert Grierson of the Western University, a ripe scholar, a graduate of Edinburgh University, who was a cousin, and had been a pupil, of Thomas Carlyle when in his earlier days he with Edward Irving taught the academy at Annan. After graduating, his circumstances not permitting a post-graduate course at Edinburgh which Professor Grierson strongly urged, he entered upon the study of the law, but was drawn towards the ministry by the desire of his devoted Christian mother and that of his pastor in childhood and youth. After a prolonged and severe struggle, his law books were laid aside and he entered the Theological Seminary of the United Presbyterian Church at Allegheny City, graduating in 1861 and licensed to preach in the Spring of the same year. He was ordained pastor of the U. P. Congregation of Putnam, Washington County, New York, declining an urgent call to a congregation in Philadelphia. After a successful pastorate of five years, he resigned his charge with the intention of spending some time abroad with his young wife, for he had married on June 7, 1865, Miss Sarah M. Carl, of Argyle, New York. Going abroad he took a post-graduate course extending over two years at the universities of Bonn and Leipsic, his particular studies being the Hebrew language and Old Testament exegesis.

Returning to America in 1869, he spent a short time in the West, and then took charge of the Sharpsburg Church in the suburbs of Pittsburg and changed his ecclesiastical relations from the United Presbyterian to the Presbyterian Church. For about eight years he discharged the duties of minister in that Presbytery, and then accepted a thrice-repeated call to the chair of Greek in the collegiate department, and of Greek and Hebrew exegesis in the theological department of Biddle University at Charlotte, North Carolina. This institution had been established by the Northern Presbyterian Church for the education of teachers and ministers for their large mission field lying within the bounds of the two colored Presbyterian Synods, covering the South Atlantic States; and as Dr. Lawrence had been intimately associated with the members of the Board of Missions for Freedmen located at Pittsburg, and his scholarly attainments were known, his services were much desired in that connection; and although loving his pastorate, he felt constrained to accept the third call as the voice of his Master.

The faculty of that institution was comprised of strong, cultured Christian men, and Dr. Lawrence was associated on the board of trustees with General Rufus Barringer, Major John E. Oates, Major Watson Reed, Dr. E. Nye Hutchison and Dr. J. Y. Fair, and other Southern gentlemen of large experience and wide influence. No institution for freedmen ever enjoyed, and probably none ever will again enjoy, so thoroughly the respect and goodwill of the entire community benefited by its work as the Biddle University did during the period of Dr. Lawrence's connection with it, nor did ever the faculty of any similar institution enjoy to the same degree the social standing and prestige that were the lot of its professors and teachers at that time.

The twelve years passed at Biddle University were the most laborious and perhaps the most useful of Dr. Lawrence's life. During an absence of eight months he raised \$50,000 for new buildings. Indeed there was no building at Biddle, when he became one of the professors, deserving the name of a college building; but Dr. Lawrence secured ample funds for the erection of one of the best buildings, for educational purposes, found south of

Washington City—without one dollar of debt. Dr. Hutchison has said: "For this noble work Dr. Lawrence received not a penny of pecuniary compensation. His energy and scholarship in the lecture-room, and then his success in securing, unaided, the \$50,000 necessary to pay for the cost of the University building and other buildings, go far to prove Dr. Lawrence the builder of Biddle University."

For a large part of the time the general supervision of mission work in the adjacent regions also fell to the lot of Dr. Lawrence while he was engaged with his classes in two departments of the University. He was in the habit of dismissing his pupils at the end of the school year, as they were about to go out to teach or to preach the Gospel among their people, with the injunction that they should seek to win the confidence of the best element of the white people in their several communities; and he advised them that as Presbyterians they might naturally expect, if they conducted themselves properly, the encouragement and counsel of the Presbyterian ministers and sessions of their vicinity; and that this would greatly increase their influence with their own people. This advice, however, did not harmonize with the spirit and policy of the executive officers, at that time, of the Freedmen's Board, located at Pittsburg, Pennsylvania, whose ideas with reference to the social relations of the two races were ultra-sentimental and impracticable. They acted and spoke as if the negro had not a single friend south of Mason and Dixon's line. This, together with a constant interference with the local board of trustees and of the faculty in the management of the details of the administration of the University, led to the resignation of the board of trustees, composed of the prominent gentlemen already mentioned and of the whole faculty. The board at Pittsburg, however, insisted on Dr. Lawrence remaining as Dean of the Theological Faculty, which he could not well do, under the circumstances, without surrendering his self-respect, and so he declined to remain.

How far wrong those Pittsburg gentlemen were in their views and sentiments, and how correct was Dr. Lawrence's position, is well illustrated by the fact that on the 12th day of March, 1866,

the legislature of North Carolina incorporated a college for the education of teachers and ministers of the Gospel of the colored race, the preamble of which was :

"WHEREAS, The well-being of the State is greatly dependent on the religious and intellectual culture of the subjects thereof; and whereas, there is at this time no college or literary institution where those of the colored race who aspire to be teachers and ministers of the Gospel can receive a suitable education, therefore," etc.

And by this Act a corporation of forty-eight members was created under the name of the "Trustees of the Freedmen's College of North Carolina," the incorporators being among the most influential and devout members of the Presbyterian Church.

And Dr. Lawrence some years later had the satisfaction of being told by the secretary of the Freedmen's Board that that board was then more in sympathy with his position than their own at the time referred to, and he also learned from another member that the board had bitterly repented the mistaken policy it had pursued.

Shortly after leaving Biddle University, Dr. Lawrence was called to New York to consult with the officers of the Home Mission Board of the Presbyterian Church with reference to the school missionary work they had undertaken in Western North Carolina, in the inauguration of which he had been largely instrumental while engaged in the freedmen's work, and with which he was subsequently more closely connected. This mission work has so greatly prospered that it now embraces five large boarding-schools, eighteen primary schools and two academies, planted for the most part in the sequestered portions of the mountain region and taught by devoted teachers, industrial and Christian training being emphasized. One of the boarding-schools is for boys, where they receive an elementary Christian education and are taught the best methods of farming.

Dr. Lawrence has a general supervision of two of the larger boarding-schools and is president of the Normal and Collegiate Institute, a school of a grade corresponding to the State Normal. The prestige which this institution enjoys for thorough work and

the record which its graduates have made are high encomiums on the useful life of Dr. Lawrence. This institution has practically furnished to that part of the State lying west of the Blue Ridge a second Normal school, supplying an education equally as thorough as that of the State Normal, and at less cost, although the State contributes nothing to its support. While largely attended from North Carolina, it draws support from all the South Atlantic States and sometimes has pupils from the trans-Mississippi region. Thirteen years have passed since Dr. Lawrence organized the Normal and Collegiate Institute, and its success has been beyond his most sanguine expectations, as well as that of the management which is located in the city of New York.

At Biddle University Dr. Lawrence had manifested his extraordinary endowment in the art of stimulating students to apply themselves diligently to the acquisition of knowledge; and he so impressed himself upon them that although years have elapsed since they daily gathered in the lecture-room, they still refer to him in terms of profound respect and warm affection as a great teacher and as a minister of the Gospel and as a sincere Christian friend. As valuable as his work among the freedmen was, it has, however, been surpassed in importance by his labors in connection with this mission work and as president of the Normal and Collegiate Institute at Asheville.

Professor S. F. Venable, graduate of the University of Virginia and superintendent of public schools of Buncombe County, has borne testimony to the inestimable advantage this work has been to Western North Carolina. He speaks of the Institute as a grand school for the education of hundreds of white girls of North Carolina, many of whom without it could never have hoped for such an education, and he continues :

"Dr. Lawrence in the executive position is the soul of this system. With a managing capacity equalled by few and possibly surpassed by none, full of love for his work and those committed to his charge, of unlimited energy, and an accomplished scholar, no one could be better fitted for the place he occupies, and it is impossible to measure the vast good to humanity accomplished by his work. Not only is he educating hundreds yearly who

are to be the mothers of the coming generation. But in his graduates he is furnishing teachers of the best character for the schools of the suffering sections that so much need their help. As superintendent of missions he eagerly seeks for those of his graduates that he recommends and with scarcely an exception have found them to be highly satisfactory. Coming in our midst a comparative stranger he has by his high character as a Christian gentleman endeared himself to all who know him personally or know of his grand work. No earthly reward can repay him for his labors and self-sacrifice, but nothing could so amply repay him as the thankfulness of the blessings that he has conferred on so many and the love and gratitude that will follow him wherever he may go.

By his first marriage Dr. Lawrence had two children—Dr. Caroline Carl Lawrence, medical missionary in the valley of the Nile, and E. A. Lawrence, member of the Pittsburgh Bar—and by his second marriage he has one child who is a minor.

In 1881 his acquirements led the Western University of Pennsylvania, his alma mater, to confer upon him the degree of D. D., which he so justly deserved.

As a student he has read and studied all the standard works particularly relating to his mission in life. Of the books which he has found most helpful is, first of all, the Bible, then such others as the Shorter Catechism, Foster's *Discourse of Characters of Moral Abilities of Socrates*, with the *Dialogues of Plato* read in the original and works of that character. Few professional men read more largely of the principal Latin authors, especially of the poets. His familiarity with the pages of Virgil, Horace, Juvenal, and the like has been kept up, their perusal forming the recreation and solace of the scant leisure of a busy life in renewing which, he thinks that his mother's influence and prayers with those of his venerated pastor in childhood, had most to do with the formation of his character and his determination to lead such a life as has brought him his eminent success.

*C. A. Hall*



## THOMAS CRAWFORD LEAK



THOMAS CRAWFORD LEAK is a fitting representative of the former slave-owners who, after the Civil War, became leaders in the industrial progress of the South. His career, connecting as a link the two periods, is an illustration of the truth that the so-called New South is but a development of forces that were present in the Old South.

He is a representative also of a large family connection, for more than a century prominent in the business and social life of the State. His grandfather, Walter Leak, a Revolutionary soldier, born November 30, 1761 in Anson County, married Hannah Pickett, and died at the age of 83 at Rockingham, North Carolina. Walter Leak's father, William Leak, came to North Carolina in 1761 from Virginia, to which province his grandfather, William Leake the first, immigrated in 1685. Of the numerous descendants of Walter Leak—the first to drop the final letter of the name as unnecessary—there have been many men of prominence; and among them may be mentioned Walter F. Leak, James P. Leak, Colonel John W. Leak, William C. Leak, Robert L. Steele and Colonel Walter L. Steele of Richmond County, and Walter R. Leak and James A. Leak of Anson. A son, Francis T. Leak, moved to Kemper County, Mississippi, and became a large cotton planter in that State.

Thomas Crawford Leak, the subject of this sketch, was born at



Yr's very truly.  
T. C. Deak



Rockingham, North Carolina, May 2, 1831, the only child of James Pickett Leak and his wife, Jane Wall Crawford. Mrs. Leak's father, Thomas Crawford, removed about 1830 to Paris, Tennessee, where he achieved considerable success in the manufacture of iron and cotton. She was a devout woman, of gentle manners and refined taste. Her husband, James Pickett Leak, was a man of energy and firmness of character, alert in body and mind. By occupation a merchant and planter, he held at various times public office in his county, and was greatly esteemed as an adviser in all business affairs. During the administration of Governor Dudley he was one of the Council of State, to which position he gave punctual and conscientious attention. His was a long and useful life, and it stood for courage, for kindness in word and deed, for business success without avarice, and for accurate information about practical things. It seems needless to say the son of such parents had the advantage of correct bringing up. Few boys have had a wiser father or better mother. He enjoyed also the advantages of travel. In journeys between Anson and Paris, Tennessee, as well as in accompanying the family to the health resorts and cities of the North and East, young Leak had unusual opportunity to see many phases of the life of that period.

He attended the schools of his native village, going later to the university of the State, from which he graduated in 1853.

In January, 1855, he was married to Miss Martha Poythress Wall, daughter of Mial Wall and sister of the late Henry Clay Wall of Richmond County, a lady of unusual grace and beauty of character. She died January 7, 1898, greatly lamented, and is survived by seven of their eight children.

Until the close of the civil war Mr. Leak led the life of a Southern planter of that period, living in comfort on his farm in a typical Southern home. Here he entered with enthusiasm into the study and practice of agriculture, discovering and utilizing thus early not a few of the methods insisted upon at the present time for successful farming. Possessing a clear, strong intellect, he easily mastered every detail of the situation. His administrative capacity was developed, and the power to mentally weigh and de-

termine correctly was cultivated in the management of his slaves; and upon these qualities his later success has rested. The skill that organized and managed his plantation then has since, under other conditions, brought him success in cotton-milling and in banking.

His farm, being in the line of Sherman's march, was overrun and pillaged, every animal on it being killed or carried off. Unable to procure other stock in time, his land that year was largely prepared for planting by his slaves, two men cheerfully pulling the plow while another held it in the ground. With the freeing of the slaves his eyes were turned from the farm to seek some other business; and while still retaining a lively interest in agriculture, he has never actively returned to it, though much attached to country life.

About 1868 he removed his residence to the town of Rockingham, taking from that time on a prominent part in all movements looking to its progress. His farm lands were sold and the proceeds invested in cotton mills, to the management of which the last thirty years of his life have been largely devoted. In 1874 he was one of the organizers of the Pee Dee Manufacturing Company at Rockingham, North Carolina, for the manufacture of cotton fabrics. This was followed a few years later by the Roberdell Manufacturing Company of the same town. In both of these enterprises he has since been a leading spirit. They are two of the strongest and most successful corporations of our State, each operating two cotton mills, whose product stands high in the markets of the country. His son, W. C. Leak, is president of the Pee Dee Company, while another son, T. C. Leak, Jr., holds that position in the Roberdell Company. Another similar enterprise whose success has been largely due to his business sagacity is the cotton mill of Leak, Wall and McRae, and since for business reasons incorporated under the firm name. This mill is also located near Rockingham, and manufactures cotton fabrics. Several years ago Mr. Leak relinquished the presidency of it in favor of his son, J. P. Leak, who now has the active management.

In 1891 Mr. Leak organized the Bank of Pee Dee at Rocking-

ham, North Carolina, of which he has since been the president. This was one of the earliest banks started in that section. His reputation as a skillful financier and as a man of integrity of character has commanded at all times for it the confidence and patronage of the public. Its success has been so marked as to encourage the organization of a number of other banks in the surrounding country. Closely allied with the Bank of Pee Dee is the Richmond County Savings Bank, organized by himself and others in 1901, in which, however, he did not accept official position.

In politics Mr. Leak is a Democrat and takes active interest in party affairs. While never desiring public office, he has consistently aided the cause of good government in a most loyal and energetic manner.

Hunting and fishing have been the forms of recreation in which he greatly believes. Life in the woods has for him a charm which neither time nor change of circumstance can break. It has been the constant tonic of his life and to it he ascribes good health and all attendant blessings. Around his plantation home in the ante-bellum days were deer, turkey, and foxes in sufficient abundance to afford good sport, while the near-by waters of the great Pee Dee and its tributaries were well stocked with fish in summer, and freely visited by ducks and geese in winter. Environment gave him leisure to hunt and fish. A constitution, never robust, needed the stimulus, and an inherited fondness of the thing did the rest. Since boyhood an expert in the use of fire-arms, he has at different periods been unerring with shotgun, rifle, and pistol. On one occasion, while riding along the public road, he heard his dogs start a deer, and knew at once where he could get a shot. Having a pistol in his pocket, he quickly dismounted and ran to a near-by stand in time to kill the deer as she ran by, striking her with two out of the three shots fired. For many years he had marked success hunting deer, having killed no less than five hundred.

Mr. Leak adorns the social circle, where he excels in conversation. He has about him a vein of humor and a capacity for peripetrating jokes that afford light and cheer in the darkest hour,

and have made his life one of sunshine. As a companion he is entirely lovable. His leading characteristics are great self-control, marked consideration for the opinions of others, coupled with a capacity to reach wise conclusions and to act without hesitation. He has always been intensely devoted to the South, her institutions and history. To young people he is uniformly considerate and helpful, encouraging them in all laudable efforts. In sentiment and affiliation he is a Methodist. In his seventy-fourth year, he is active and well preserved and, by cultivating a philosophical spirit in all things, he has gotten out of life much genuine happiness.

*W. L. Parsons.*

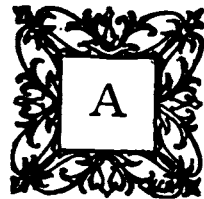




A. Leuzer



## AUGUSTUS LEAZAR



UGUSTUS LEAZAR was born on his father's plantation, Leazarwell, in Rowan County, March 27, 1843. The Leazars trace their descent to a Huguenot ancestor who settled in Maryland about the close of the seventeenth century, his sons going to Pennsylvania where a branch of the family lives. John Leazar came from Pennsylvania to North Carolina in 1789, the deeds for his considerable plantation in Rowan County dating 1790. He probably brought a German wife with him, German tradition descending in the family. John Leazar, the second, grandfather of the subject of this sketch, found a German wife in North Carolina, Elizabeth Coleman (Kuhlmann), whose father Philip, and grandfather Nicholas, were Protestant citizens of Strasburg and brought their German religious books to America in 1764. A brother of Elizabeth Coleman became assistant attorney general of the United States, and the Coleman family has been noted for brilliant mentality. John Leazar, the third, father of Augustus, married Isabella Jamison, of typical Scotch-Irish stock, her ancestors being elders in the Scottish Kirk for generations. It was at the house of her father, Colonel James Jamison, the first citizen of his community, that the resolutions were drafted (by guests during a Presbytery), which being presented to Presbytery, resulted in the founding of Davidson College. Augustus Leazar inherited his tenacity, his

deep-lying tenderness and that strong sense of right which afterwards distinguished him, largely from his mother's side of the house, and his type of intellect, his gift of oratory and his ardent temperament chiefly from his father's side. From his father he received the inspiration to high ambition, from his noble mother, good as beautiful, the influence so strong upon his moral and spiritual nature. Later other noble women helped and strengthened him. In 1865 he was married to the sweetheart of his childhood, Cornelia Francis McCorkle, daughter of William Brandon McCorkle and his wife Mary Marshall, granddaughter of the Revolutionary patriot, Francis McCorkle and Elizabeth Brandon. This Elizabeth Brandon was the fair young maid who gave George Washington a famous breakfast. Two sons and one daughter were born to this marriage, the daughter, Carry Augusta, surviving. After a few years his wife died. In 1888 he married Clara Fowler, daughter of Wm. G. and Margaret Alexander Fowler, descendant of the William Fowler to whom Congress granted lands in recognition of his naval service in the Revolution. She died in 1895, leaving one son, Augustus Leazar, Junior.

The education of Augustus Leazar was begun very young. He entered Davidson at thirteen and graduated at seventeen with first honor in the large class of 1860, every member of which was his senior. His father was originally opposed to secession, but gave both sons to the seceded State. The first public speech of Augustus was made when a boy of eighteen in raising Company G of the 42d Regiment, North Carolina State Troops, for the Confederate service. He was commissioned first lieutenant of this company and went out with it March 15, 1862. In the fire of battle, at New-Bern, around Richmond, at Cold Harbor, at Drewry's Bluff and Bermuda Hundreds, at Hare's Hill, in the trenches at Petersburg, at Fort Fisher, at Kinston, at Bentonville, he dared and endured for the principles whose righteousness never ceased to be his pride. His regiment was in Hoke's brigade and bore the brunt of the fighting on many a field. When the end came his company numbered six, himself in command. With bitterness of soul he took parole at Bush Hill, Randolph County, May 2, 1865,

and faced reconstruction. Bitterness had long passed before his last years, and he taught his children to honor the patriot on either side. But none ever twice said "rebel" in his company. He had longed to be a Greek scholar, but now there was no chance for that or any other professional preparation. To teaching he turned, at first for bread. The work called out the best that was in him, and he gave himself to it for seventeen years. Soon to his quiet country school at Prospect and Coddle Creek came young men from distant States to be prepared for college or trained for life-work. Thoroughness was the absolute requisite of his pupils' work; rapid advancement was secondary. Often to the talented and needy he freely gave extra hours even to midnight, with marvelous progress as the result. Instant obedience he demanded and received. Many a good citizen was made of a lawless youth, and none revere his memory more than these. His character wrought more than his discipline, and the best in his pupils responded to him. Scattered far and wide, they "adorn his doctrine," and exemplify it by being rather than seeming. The latter part of his teaching was done in Mooresville, Iredell County, partly with his brother-in-law, Stephen Frontis, as co-principal in a school that "built the town" for years. In 1870 Davidson conferred on him the degree of A. M. Later he became a trustee of Davidson and so served until his death. For the celebration of her semi-centennial commencement in 1887 he was orator before the societies. While teaching, a newspaper outfit was thrown upon his hands, and for two years he taught by day and often later, writing by night and superintending his farm on Saturday, while on Sunday he managed the Sunday-School and sat with the session of which he was clerk, besides attending the two ordinary services. He had joined the Presbyterian Church in his fourteenth year and was for forty years a ruling elder in her courts. His public career began in 1882 with nomination by the Democracy of Iredell to represent her in the House of Representatives. He had been a Prohibitionist in the State campaign of 1880 and nobly earned some enmities that ceased not their hostility to his death. Public sentiment was not ripe at that time for the great reform which has



since come, thanks to the pioneers. But, with the handicap of his avowed convictions and with such a candidate as David M. Furches pitted against him, he was triumphantly elected; and in his second campaign more than doubled his majority. In the House he at once became a leader, and so continued with growing power throughout his four consecutive terms. Brilliant, strong, cultured, studious of the interests of his State and familiar with her history, with unusually sturdy convictions and utter courage, with readiness and fluency of expression combined with rare clearness, directness and conciseness, he was a debater with few equals, a leader of men, a master of assemblies. His record upon all economic questions was distinguished by a wise statesmanship that resulted in great and lasting benefit to the taxpayers. He was an earnest champion of the establishment of a railroad commission; and he conspicuously fought the gift of convict labor to private corporations. He was known as the dangerous antagonist of all jobs and schemes. He insisted that the penal institutions should be self-supporting and not a burden to honest citizenship. In and out of the Legislature he gave thought and action to agricultural interests. Reared upon the farm, he had there learned to plow (with his father's ex-slaves just after the war), and soon acquiring lands, his love of the soil and interest in the development deepened all his life. The Assembly of 1882 elected him a member of the reorganized Board of Agriculture upon whose executive or finance committee he served many years. During the greater part of his legislative career he was chairman of the Committee on Education. It can be said that he accomplished more for the cause of education in North Carolina than any other man in public service during that period. In 1885 the University, yet weak from war and reconstruction, sought the modest appropriation of \$15,000. Mr. Leazar had not been personally connected with the University except that he had lectured for six weeks before the Summer School there upon English. He was a Presbyterian and a loyal son of Davidson, but loved "Davidson as his mother, the University as his State." He was the author of this bill increasing the appropriation. It aroused great opposi-

tion, as was foreseen. He was never a wire-puller, and his fight was made from the floor of the House in a speech of great power and eloquence. It was the patriot's plea and carried the day. In the Senate the bill was in the hands of alumni who made a zealous and successful fight. Two years later the usefulness, the life, of the University was imperilled, and in that crisis he again victoriously defended her. It was doubtless in recognition of such service, as well as of his fitness, that he was elected and reelected a trustee of the University. Of the State Normal College he was an early and faithful champion.

He was the author of the bill to establish the A. and M. College, first called Industrial School. This college, says Governor Jarvis, "will stand a monument to his name." The Wautauga Club, some newspapers, and a few men of Mr. Leazar's stamp had agitated the matter, but it took vital form late one night during the Assembly of 1885, when Mr. Leazar and Dr. Charles W. Dabney prepared the bill which became law. The value of Dr. Dabney's assistance Mr. Leazar always declared. Dr. Dabney says: "As an experienced legislator, he dictated the language of the bill to me as I wrote, and he afterwards took it and revised it." That he did this fully is shown by the original in the office of the Secretary of State; it is entirely in Mr. Leazar's handwriting. He was peculiarly fitted to lead in this movement by his rare scholarship and attainments, by his experience as a teacher and his interest in agricultural and other industrial lines of work. He was a trustee of the college for many years, serving on the executive committee, devoting his ability effectively to its interests. One of its literary societies bears his name.

In the Democratic State Convention of 1888, when for personal reasons very averse to the honor, he escaped nomination as lieutenant-governor by a slender minority. He was returned the same year to the General Assembly.

In 1889 he was elected Speaker of the House. It is worthy of note that he came to this position absolutely untrammelled by pledges. Political trades his soul despised, and he was never in their bondage. A student of affairs and men as well as of books,

he formed committees wisely in the State's interest. In his hands the phrase "dispatch of business" had meaning. The channels of legislation were kept unclogged and the House adjourned with cleared dockets. "At the same time his culture lent to the discharge of the duties of the chair a finish and elegance that has rarely if ever been surpassed in the history of the House." In 1892 he was a candidate for the congressional nomination from his district and met a defeat with peculiar honor, in that victory was offered upon terms inconsistent with his high ideals.

Promptly he entered the campaign and contributed largely to the election of the nominee. From the beginning of public life till cut off by broken health, his voice was at the service of his party and the principles of good government. And his was a Damascene blade in battle. Courteous withal, he always numbered kindly acquaintances among honorable opponents.

Mr. Leazar, being in entire sympathy with the agricultural interests of the State, became an important member of the Farmers' Alliance early after its organization, but when Colonel Polk, Hon. Marion Butler and Dr. Cyrus Thompson converted the Alliance into a political party known as the Populist or People's party, he publicly withdrew from the Alliance and, faithful to his own political convictions, continued an earnest Democrat. He zealously advocated the election of Governor Carr in 1892; and in 1893, upon his inauguration, Governor Carr called upon Mr. Leazar to put into practice his theory as to the finances of the Penitentiary, appointing him the head of the Penal Institutions. It was a challenge which he was not the man to decline, though the work was most uncongenial and foreign to his trend. He had had "no time to make money," though always equal to making a living. Now for the first time, probably, manifesting on a large scale his executive ability, he made the Penitentiary, with the great State farms, gradually approach self-support, until in his last year in office it turned back into the State treasury every dollar of appropriation and had earned a surplus of \$63,000. Permanent improvements were made which amounted to more than the appropriation for the four years. The convicts were wisely

and humanely cared for. The moral tone of the army of employes was noticeably raised in response to the character of the man at the top. When his bonded term of office was half spent, in 1895, the Fusion Legislature abolished the office and appointed his successor under a different name. The books and keys were courteously but positively refused this claimant, and Mr. Leazar prepared to resist in the courts. He was advised that he had no case, but won in the fight.

His health was sacrificed in the work of this office, and diabetes developed toward the end of his term. He recognized the inevitable, laid aside many ambitions and squared himself for a life of restricted work. His term finished, he returned to the home he so loved to spend peacefully with his children the years now likely to be few. It is remarkable that thus late in life he should have given successful attention to his own finances. His farms in Rowan County yielded increased pleasure and profit. Let it be said that his relations with his tenants (all white) were remarkable and characteristic. No man lived two years upon his land without being worth more materially. Loyalloy he helped them, and their attachment was touching. Again and again he bought a tenant's cotton at market price, and, selling later at a better, gave him the profit; nor were they reminded when his sale was at any loss. He taught them agriculture, economy, thrift, honor; he broadened their horizon. He believed this his simple duty. Another instance of his great-heartedness to the lowly, and of his loyalty, was the bequest of a goodly sum to the surviving ex-slaves of his father's household.

Other business interests now had his attention. He became a director of the Bank of Mooresville, of the Home Insurance Company of Greensboro, continuing a director of the N. C. Midland Railroad, towards whose building he had been a leader. He was largely instrumental in the building of the first macadam road made in Iredell. No longer able to do what he called work, he still quietly accomplished much, and patriotism in matters great or small glowed undimmed.

There was no office in the gift of his countrymen that he would

not have adorned. And there had been a time in his life, again quoting Governor Jarvis, when

"He could have attained higher positions in the State had he yielded his convictions and accepted the situation. No temptation, no flattery, no threat could move him from the path of duty and of right as he saw it. He loved his State and he loved to serve it. He was ambitious, but his was an ambition to do the right thing and to do it in the service of his State, his fellowmen and his God. He was able and wise. He had himself written, 'Whatever his profession, every man is a citizen and owes a duty to the State as he does to his God, for the State is his ordinance for the good of society.' He met defeats, but he believed 'the essential to success is character, loyalty to right, loyalty to God. Without it there is no real success, with it there is no failure.'"

He knew for months that the end approached rapidly, but there was peace. He had been true to every relation in life, first in the home, and then in the world, as scholar, teacher, soldier, citizen, statesman and churchman. His religion was everywhere seen to be the dominant fact of his life. The book kept most constantly near him was a Greek New Testament. It is indeed a striking illustration of the truth and power of the gospel of Christ that a mind so strong and so acute, so ready to find weak places in any argument, and so keen to penetrate all shams and pretence, should have bowed before the majesty of gospel truth and accepted without doubt the teaching of Scripture as the veritable word of God—that a man of such imperious will, and so intolerant of seeming subjection to any other, should have submitted himself with the docility of a little child to his Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, and rested his hope of salvation wholly there. And so he fell on sleep February 18, 1905.

Courage, honor, sincerity, faithfulness, energy stood out boldly in his character. With them blended deep tenderness, great personal charm and magnetism. Enemies he made here and there—he was not suave to trickery or injustice. Little children nestled to him—appropriating his lawn for their park—young men and maidens flocked to his Bible class, the aged rejoiced in him, the

strong sought his strength, the sorrowing turned to him for perfect sympathy, the outcast looked to him for uplift; and he failed not.

Perhaps he nowhere better summed up the philosophy of his life than in a brief word on his death-bed to a young legislator who had come to see him. With failing breath he said: "It pays better—in the long run—to be on the right side."

*S. A. Ashe.*





## JAMES IVER MACKAY



BLADEN COUNTY from its first settlement has given to North Carolina some of its finest citizens. The Owens, Robesons, Porterfields, Browns, McNeills, McRees, Salters, McDowells, and Lloyds are not unknown to fame.

About the year 1780 there came from Scotland to Bladen Iver and Ann Miller MacKay, their family consisting of four sons and one daughter. Their son John married Mary, a daughter of William Salter and Sarah Lloyd.

William Salter was one of the early patriots of Bladen and was a delegate to the first Provincial Congress, elected in August, 1774, and also to the Federal Congress of 1775; the Lloyd family was equally devoted to the patriot cause.

To John and Mary MacKay was born in Bladen County, on July 17, 1792, James Iver MacKay, the subject of this sketch. After being prepared at the Raleigh Academy, where he delivered an elegant address July 4, 1809, young MacKay entered the University of North Carolina along with his first cousin, William J. Cowan; but does not seem to have graduated at that institution. He studied law; and that he was well educated and possessed attainments as well as character is amply evidenced by the fact that at the age of twenty-three he was elected to represent his county in the State Senate; and he gave such great satisfaction to his constituents that for four terms he was successively reelected

to the Senate. He then gave way and was succeeded by John Owen, who was one of the most talented young men of the State, and who subsequently enjoyed the respect and confidence of the people of North Carolina in an unusual degree.

In 1822 MacKay again returned to the Senate, and again in 1826, and once more in 1830.

In the meantime he had served as United States District Attorney, and had won high regard and an extensive reputation as a brilliant lawyer. In his profession he was learned and skillful, ardent, firm and earnest in performing every duty that devolved upon him. In 1831, when Edward B. Dudley declined to be a candidate for Congress, the friends of General MacKay brought him forward to represent that district, and he was elected, and for nine terms he continued to serve the people of the Cape Fear in the Congress of the United States. Entering into public life at twenty-nine, and at a time of great political agitation and turmoil, he so steered his barque as to avoid shipwreck, and by a steadfast and undeviating adherence to his political principles he so strengthened himself in the confidence of his constituents that towards the end of his career he was opposed by no competitors. In his earlier years there was only one party, that known as the Republican Party, of which Clay and Adams and Jackson and Calhoun and Crawford were all members. But Jackson quarrelled with Clay and then with Calhoun, and grave issues arose because of the tariff and nullification by South Carolina, and because of Jackson's fierce onslaught on the National Bank and his removal of the deposits. Also within the State there was a fierce conflict raging between the East and the West over the inequalities perpetuated by the old Constitution. General MacKay, possessed of great wisdom, avoided the rocks and shoals of the uncertain sea of politics, and year by year attained a higher position in the confidence of his party associates. He adhered with constancy to the administration, or regular Republicans. And although many of his friends followed Calhoun on the one hand and Henry Clay on the other, and eventually allied themselves with the Whig Party, he remained the champion of the regular Democracy.



When in 1840 the Whigs swept the State, he was still reëlected to Congress from his district.

In 1843 General MacKay was Chairman of the Committee of Ways and Means, and drew a Tariff Bill that, however, failed to pass; but his report on the tariff was widely circulated and was received as the best expression of Democratic thought. In 1846 Robert J. Walker was the Secretary of the Treasury and he desired a still larger reduction of the tariff. In conformity with the views of the administration, the tariff act of 1846 was prepared, largely in conference with Secretary Walker, and was introduced by General MacKay, the chairman of the committee in the House. It was the best tariff that had been proposed in many years; and was the overthrow of that system which Henry Clay for a quarter of a century had been building up.

It passed the House, but in the Senate the vote was doubtful. Two years before Mr. William H. Haywood had been elected to the Senate under instructions for tariff reform, but he considered this measure as too far-reaching for him to support it. Still his relations with President Polk and with the Democratic party were such that, while unwilling to vote for that particular measure, he was unwilling to embarrass the administration and the Democratic Party by defeating it. His vote against it would have defeated it. Should he not vote, there would be a tie in the Senate and the casting vote of Vice-President Dallas would pass the measure. Mr. Haywood, therefore, determined not to vote, but to resign in preference. So at the last moment, when the vote was being taken in the Senate Chamber, seeing that the result would be a tie, he announced his resignation and withdrew from the body.

As this tariff bill was the lowest that had for many years been enacted into law, so it was in its effects the best that ever was passed by Congress. It is true that many fortunate circumstances combined to promote the prosperity of the country, in the years following, in an unusual degree. But the great prosperity on which the country then entered is also largely to be attributed to this measure of the wise statesman of the Cape Fear. For fifteen years no effort was made to repeal it. Indeed while every

senator and representative from New England opposed its adoption, yet so satisfactory had been its operation that the entire country was thoroughly content. What had once been the great and absorbing tariff issue, threatening the dissolution of the Union, had passed utterly away, and at the election of 1856 the subject of the tariff was not mentioned in the platform of any political party. That great question of the tariff was apparently most happily solved by the MacKay act of 1846.

In 1848, at the Democratic National Convention, the name of General MacKay was presented by North Carolina for the position of Vice-President. In that year General MacKay decided to retire from congressional life, and was succeeded in Congress by his friend, William S. Ashe.

General MacKay was on terms of particular intimacy with President Polk, with whom he had served in Congress, and who always had a tender spot in his heart for North Carolina and North Carolinians. The late Hon. Archibald Arrington of Nash County used to tell an anecdote that was characteristic of the General. A party of friends went to call on the President; when the introductions were over, General MacKay wandered over the room turning over a book here and looking at a picture there—when suddenly he called out over his shoulder: "Oh! Polk, there is a vacancy in the navy and I want it." "Ah!" said the President, "is there? I hadn't heard of it; but I suppose you may have it." "But, Mr. President, I don't want any supposing; I want it now." And he got it.

Mr. Arrington also said that General MacKay was called by his colleagues the "watch-dog of the treasury," or "old money bags," because he was so economical as to public expenditure and so careful to protect the treasury from unnecessary outlay.

While a representative in Congress General MacKay was very useful to his constituents and was instrumental in securing appropriations for the construction of the arsenal at Fayetteville, and for building Fort Caswell at the mouth of the Cape Fear River.

General MacKay's family was of the Presbyterian faith; but he

did not attach himself to that denomination, and yet his contributions to it were exceedingly liberal. In some respects he was eccentric, but he was a keen business man and accumulated large wealth, while particularly noted for his rigid integrity of character and contempt for meanness and deviation from the paths of rectitude. A country gentleman, in affluent circumstances, long associated at Washington with the strongest and most polished of our public men, he was a student of political economy and of the great questions that agitated the public mind during the excited period of his career; but essentially he was a man interested in the community where he was born and whose good-will and respect he valued more than aught else in the world. He possessed a warm, kind heart, and was well-known for his benevolent disposition and wide charity. It is still a tradition that many a poor youth he set on the road to competency and that many unfortunates were sustained by his bounty.

He had married a woman of great beauty and unusual capacity, Miss Ann Eliza Harvey, who bore him one son, James Travis, who, however, died in infancy, and they had no other children.

Without descendants, he proposed by his will to gratify his natural inclinations to serve those with whom he had been associated in life. For his Belfont plantation he had some years before his death been offered \$27,000; but he declined it, and item 7th of his will reads as follows:

"I give and devise after the termination of my wife's widowhood, my above-named Belfont plantation to William J. Cowan and my executors, hereinafter named, and their heirs in trust for the county of Bladen, on the express condition that the said plantation shall be used as an experimental farm, and that the poor of the county and the poor and indigent orphans, who are directed by law to be bound out, shall be kept, maintained and employed on said plantation under such rules and regulations as the county court of said county may prescribe."

This was virtually establishing an orphan asylum for the county of Bladen, being the first effort in that direction which the writer is now advertent to within the State of North Carolina. The fea-

ture annexed to the bequest of establishing an experimental farm was likewise far in advance of the prevailing thought at that era. Since then experimental farms have been established both by the general government and by the Agricultural Department of the State of North Carolina ; but General MacKay was far in advance in seeking to give practical effect to such sentiments.

In like manner he felt himself free to deal with his slave property according to his benevolent disposition. Those slaves inherited from his parents and acquired by marriage, in number between 200 and 300, he determined to emancipate and to settle in a home of their own in Liberia ; and item 10th of his will is :

"It is my will and desire that the slaves hereinbefore excepted be hired out by my executors for two or three years in order to raise funds for their transportation to the colony of Liberia, and as soon as that object can be effected, my executors are hereby strictly enjoined to take the requisite means for the transportation of said slaves to Liberia, under the direction and patronage of the Colonization Society."

This provision of his will was after his death in 1853 carried into effect by his executors, and some of the older residents yet retain a vivid impression of the scene when the negroes left Elizabethtown some two years later to take shipping at Wilmington for their voyage to Liberia. Some years ago one of these negro women came back from Africa having the appearance of being well-to-do, and reported that the MacKay negroes had prospered in their new home, her object in returning being to induce others of the connection to go back to Liberia with her. She said that her grandfather had risen to be one of the great men of the Republic.

On September 14, 1853, General MacKay being at Goldsboro on business, accompanied by his friends, Colonel John McDowell and Benjamin Fitzrandolph, was seized with a mortal malady and suddenly passed away. His sudden and unexpected death excited wide regret throughout the State. At Wilmington, as his remains were borne through the city, there was a great public demonstra-

tion. His body was met by the military, bells were tolled, and an escort accompanied the remains to their last resting-place in the family burying ground on his home plantation. The steamboat which conveyed the sad cortège from Wilmington to Elizabethtown was decked in the habiliments of woe, and its monotone wail resounded continuously through the forests that lined its banks.

General MacKay was a fine conversationalist and was personally a great favorite among his associates. Of him the venerable Colonel Wheeler, who knew him well, and who also was well acquainted with the other public men of the United States for a long period, has put on record this estimate of his character :

"As a statesman he was of unquestioned ability, of stern integrity, capable of great labor and patient investigation. He was in public as in private life a radical economist, and belonged to that school of which Mr. Macon was the father, and he with George W. Jones, Cave Johnson of Tennessee and John Letcher of Virginia, were faithful disciples."

That he served with great acceptability as chairman of the Committee of Ways and Means at a time when Congress contained so many eminent characters, and was presented by North Carolina as the Democratic candidate for the Vice-Presidency, attests the esteem in which he was held and his intellectual endowments.

General MacKay left no posterity, but Mrs. Thomas H. Sutton of Fayetteville, and Mr. D. C. Whitted, of Chadbourn, are among his near kin.

*S. A. Ashe.*





## NATHANIEL MACON

**N**ATHANIEL MACON was born December 17, 1758, at what was then known as Macon Manor, some twelve miles south of Warrenton. It was not far from the old Bute County Court House; and young Macon was sent to school to Charles Pettigrew along with the sons of the next-door neighbor, Philemon Hawkins. At the age of fifteen he joined his former schoolfellow, Benjamin Hawkins, at Princeton College, New Jersey. For two years he followed the curriculum of that valuable institution; but the times soon became too stirring for the work of college men, and Macon joined his fellows and did his first military service under the flag of New Jersey and at the time when Washington was fleeing before the enemy and without any real prospect of ever again becoming successful in the fateful war already begun. The young militiaman was not thoroughly educated—his course of study had been cut short in its very midst; yet he was not so poorly trained as some have persistently asserted; his letters show that he could use the English language well and that he was not less familiar with the ordinary forms of expression than was Thomas Jefferson, one of the best educated men of America.

In the fall of 1776 young Macon, now approaching his eighteenth birthday, returned to Warren County and there began a course of reading in English history and law. How much he

accomplished is not known, for he never entered regularly the practice of law, though he manifested a fine knowledge of the principles of law late in life. His acquaintance with the leading facts of history as portrayed by Hume, Robertson and Gibbon was creditable. This quiet life at Bute Court House was, however, broken up by the threatened invasion of North Carolina in the summer of 1780. He volunteered along with many of his fellow "countymen" and was made captain of his company; this honor he declined, preferring for some unknown reason to remain in the ranks. The company to which he belonged was placed under command of Major Benjamin W. Seawell of Halifax, and marched by way of Wake Court House to Hillsboro, thence to Camden, where they met Cornwallis and were shamefully beaten. Seawell's companies seem to have behaved reasonably well. They kept together and appeared some days later on the Yadkin ready to renew the contest with the English. Macon did not see further active military service; but when he retired from the army it was to enter the Legislature as a member of the Senate from Warren County. On leaving the army he declined to receive any pay for his services; and he had not accepted the bounty to which he was entitled by law. He thus gave as a patriot of his time and personal effort to the country which he was proud to call his own.

In the Legislature Macon at once attained a respectable rank. It was here he came into close harmony with Willie Jones; here he first formulated those rigid ideals of integrity and the righteous conduct of political affairs from which he was never dissociated in the public mind. The first of these principles was that there should be no paper money in a community, that gold and silver should constitute the total medium of exchange. Another notion of his was that States, like individuals, should "pay as they go," entailing no debt on future generations; a public debt was to him the opposite of a public benefit. He believed in manhood suffrage with a few limitations—ante-dating most other advocates of this governmental doctrine; and that all voting should be done *virâ voce*—the man who had not the courage to openly express his convictions ought not to be allowed to vote. Annual legislatures he

thought essential to the welfare of the people; he did not believe in large salaries, nor did he have very much patience with "orators;" a few plain-spoken words sufficed to make his views understood, and he thought others ought to be equally direct and clear-cut. To waste time in a legislature was to rob the people. Nothing escaped his attention; he was often on committees and sometimes harshly criticised his people on their happy-go-easy ways. Still it was his firm conviction that the people would always do right if made to understand public business. In 1786 he was elected delegate from North Carolina to the Continental Congress; he promptly declined the honor. Macon remained in the State Senate as long as he chose; and when he declined reelection his brother John Macon succeeded to the position.

In 1783 Macon was married to Miss Hannah Plummer of Warrenton. The young couple settled on Hubquarter Creek, a small tributary of the Roanoke, twelve miles north of Warrenton and twenty-five miles distant from the Macon neighborhood—the Shocco section. On a slightly elevated plateau covered with "original-growth" forest trees the famous Buck Spring residence was built about this time. It consisted of two small but well-constructed houses facing each other. One of these houses was Macon's own apartment. It consisted of one large room with a low-pitched attic above and a commodious wine cellar below. Opposite the sixteen-foot-square house just described stood a second one—an exact counterpart of the former. This was the kitchen; on the second floor was another attic which was used as a sort of nursery. The nearest neighbor's house was probably five miles away. He loved the wilds of nature, the chase and the freedom which comes from isolation. There was nothing handsome in the houses he caused to be erected, nothing indicating a pride of possession so common with his class, yet he made Buck Spring famous. He was exceedingly fond of the fox chase and kept near a dozen thoroughbreds for the benefit of those who might join him. John Randolph was a most frequent companion on these chases, and in 1819 James Monroe, then president, arranged his Southern tour so as to take in Buck Spring and one of Macon's fox chases.



His wife died in 1790; in 1791 he was sent to Congress from what was then called the Hillsboro district, which included Warren County. He remained a member of the national legislature from 1791 to 1828 without a break—a period of thirty-seven years! During these thirty-seven years he made many important speeches, exerted a powerful influence on national legislation, and contributed more, far more, than any other North Carolinian of any time to the higher and better politics of his country. For say what we may of some of his limitations, he was never simply a party man; nor was he at any time a mere provincial, seeking the aggrandisement of his State at the expense of the nation. Indeed, he rebuked the North Carolinian “log-roller” of his day as unworthy of his people and a menace to the nation.

Macon entered the national House of Representatives when Washington was president, Thomas Jefferson secretary of state, and Alexander Hamilton secretary of the treasury; he was an admirer of all these masterful men, but he was not overawed by them, and he ventured to think for himself and to vote accordingly. The first evidence of this independence, though some partisanship was also present, appeared in his call for an investigation of the treasury department; his resolutions expressing a lack of confidence in Hamilton were presented on February 23, 1792; they aroused an angry debate, but produced no other immediate effect than to show the growing discontent with the methods of the Secretary of the Treasury. Two years later the investigation came, and it was shown that there had been just grounds for all the complaint Macon had made.

When the Jay treaty with England was ratified, in June, 1795, Macon made earnest protest against it; during the winter and spring following he was one of the staunchest opponents of the measure, insisting that the House of Representatives, like the English House of Commons, could lawfully withhold the appropriation necessary to the validity of a treaty. In this he was of the same opinion with Jefferson, Madison and Gallatin. The outcome of his efforts was failure; but he attributed the defeat of the opposition not to Ames's brilliant speech on behalf of the administration,

but to the moral weakness of some of his fellow-partisans in resorting to the absentee method of evading the issue. In the campaign of 1796 Macon was an able supporter of Jefferson for the presidency; and from 1796 to 1801 he was Jefferson's chief lieutenant in North Carolina. Macon was, however, more than a politician at this time; he was sincerely convinced that the salvation of both the Union and the States depended on the success of Mr. Jefferson.

The Federalists were equally industrious and almost as well led as their opponents. They planned to silence their enemies by law, to stifle the press and force the Republicans, who were friendly to France in her contest with Great Britain, into an unpopular attitude by declaring war against the French Republic, which Jefferson and his followers would certainly approve. When the Federalists failed to carry their war policy they commenced a series of attacks on their opponents through the alien and sedition bills. These were passed after much angry debate, and the leading French immigrants, not excepting the distinguished scientist Volney, were forced to leave the country. Newspaper writers and campaign speakers were imprisoned in various parts of the country, despite the amendment to the national constitution to the effect that the liberty of speech and of the press could not be restrained. Macon did his utmost to prevent the passage of these laws, and he did still more to bring them into discredit after they had been placed on the statute book.

In 1798 the Kentucky Resolutions declaring that the alien and sedition laws were unconstitutional and if persisted in would be resisted by the sovereign power of that State, were passed and sent to the various States for approval. A majority of the legislatures indorsed them. Macon favored them earnestly; but the North Carolina Assembly, just then under the influence of William R. Davie, refused to approve them. It was by a narrow margin in the Senate that the State was saved to the Administration and prevented from casting its influence on the side of Thomas Jefferson in his great fight for what he called the essential rights of free men.

The Jefferson campaign proper came on in 1800. The Republicans were well organized for that day. Macon was their chief in North Carolina; Richard Stanford of Orange County was a strong assistant, and in Virginia, James Madison, William B. Giles and the young John Randolph were the strongest leaders. In New York Aaron Burr was their champion; in Pennsylvania Albert Gallatin. The Rutledges of South Carolina, and William H. Crawford of Georgia, belonged to the same great political party. These names are mentioned to show what class of men were Macon's political associates. The result of the long and bitter contest was the election of Jefferson and the reversal of the policy of the last twelve years. Rightly enough Macon was chosen Speaker of the House under the new régime. In addition to being Speaker he was offered the patronage of his State, but seldom, probably never once, did he make use of the power thus put within his grasp. He informed the president of the merits of candidates for office only when asked to do so. He distinctly declined to countenance any removals from office in his State for political purposes except with one class of men; under Washington and Adams some few Tories had been appointed to important positions in North Carolina; Macon thought these ought gradually to be replaced by good "Whigs of '76," as he termed the revolutionists.

As Speaker Macon had little patience with the members who desired to be everlastingly on the floor whether they had anything to say or not. In consequence he was disposed not to recognize too promptly representatives who were given to "spread eagleism." Glad would he have been to apply the "previous question" rule now so freely employed in debate. And in 1809, after the expiration of his term, he lent himself heartily to the plan of establishing certain hard and fast rules for the protection of the House and the expedition of business. These rules soon acquired the name "iron-clad," and were used in 1811 by Henry Clay to direct and limit the deliberations of the so-called "lower branch" in such a way as to give the Speaker despotic powers.

The most important piece of legislation that Macon and his good friend John Randolph, his majority leader, caused to be enacted,

was the bill authorizing the annexation of Louisiana. President Jefferson, on learning that by getting a secret grant of two million dollars, with which to conduct the negotiation with Napoleon concerning the opening of the Mississippi and the possible cession of the site of New Orleans, he might settle once for all the all-important Mississippi question, called in Macon and Randolph to know what the House would do if such a *carte blanche* were asked for. They assured him, after knowing what the plans of the Executive were, that the bill would pass, that Congress would vote the appropriation. Randolph conducted the scheme safely through the House, but it was Mr. Speaker's moral support and strong influence which enabled him to win many a point against the united opposition of the Federalists.

In the fall and winter of 1804-1805 it was decided among the leading Republicans that some of the judges of the United States Supreme Court should be impeached and removed from office. President Jefferson was a bitter opponent of the Supreme Court. Chief Justice Marshall was regarded as a personal enemy. The judges had played into Jefferson's hands during the past two or three years by reading the people homilies at the opening of the circuit courts in the various States on the iniquities of Democratic government. Jefferson himself was held up to the scorn and ridicule of conservative people; he was declared to be an atheist, an autocrat, an anarchist and unworthy of the esteem of any decent man. Judge Chase had possibly sinned most flagrantly in this respect. He was singled out for punishment; should the remedy planned for him act well, other and stronger doses were to be administered to his unruly brethren. It was agreed further in the White House that Randolph should conduct the impeachment. Joseph H. Nicholson of Maryland aspired to the high position thus to be made vacant and Randolph hoped to win a popular standing which might open the way for him to the Executive Mansion. Such scheming as this did not please Macon. It was an article of his creed that intrigue was ruinous to a party; and later in his career he declared to his old friend Gallatin that the Jeffersonian party died of this disease in 1820 to 1824. Accordingly he coun-

selled against the impeachment on the ground first that it was unwise politically, and probably not deserved morally. "Suppose," said he, "the judges had flattered the president and the party in power, would they now be threatened with removal? Hardly. Flattery is worse than abuse and far more dangerous. If you will not punish men for committing the greater offence why arraign them for the lesser? Besides, when opinion is freely expressed it becomes its own corrective. If the judges speak falsely they will soon lose their hold on the people; if truly then it is best for the country to hear them." Such unpartisan advice was not welcome in the White House; Randolph refused to accept it and Nicholson's aspiration continued to rise. The impeachment was attempted; it failed. Randolph made himself ridiculous in his speeches before the Senate and Jefferson was chagrined beyond measure. Chief Justice Marshall took a new hold on the great court of which he was the head. Macon alone had foreseen the result, though he did not remind his fellow Republicans of his advice after the event. It is clear enough that the opinion of the Speaker of the House in matters political was worth heeding.

From the failure of the impeachment proceedings Randolph gradually drifted away from the President; he became a formidable opponent and finally had to be removed from his place as chairman of the committee on ways and means. Macon was closely attached to Randolph; he inclined to take his side as against the President, and before the autumn of 1807 he had drifted so far away from Mr. Jefferson that the latter decided that he must not be reëlected Speaker. Joseph Varnum of Massachusetts was "slated" for the place. Macon was aware of the intended change; he remained quiet at his home in North Carolina that Fall until some weeks after the opening of Congress and the election of Speaker. Illness was given out as the cause of the absence; but no one knew better than Macon himself that there was another and stronger reason. Jefferson did his share to reconcile his former friend; but he did not succeed. Macon stood aloof, leaving the Administration to get on as best it might with its new allies, the Republican recruits from New England.

He took, however, a most active part in legislation; served on the committee on foreign relations and made himself doubly familiar with this department of affairs. As the war cloud continued to rise and expand in the political sky Macon's office grew in importance. When the next election for Speaker occurred Macon ran strongly and received what to him was a most flattering vote, that of nearly all Southern members. His strength was increasing when Madison took up the reins of government which Jefferson had gladly let fall on March 4, 1809, advocating in his place the name of Albert Gallatin of Pennsylvania. When, however, Gallatin took service in Madison's cabinet, Macon renewed his relations with the White House and became at once the mouth-piece of the administration in the House. From 1809 to 1811 there was no stronger man in that branch of Congress. As leader of the Southern Republicans he commanded a powerful following. He became chairman of the committee on foreign relations and from the beginning of the session he took a most active part in the management and direction of legislation. His was the most important position in the House after that of Speaker. It was his business to propose some means of escape from the miserable relations with England. On December 19, 1809, he introduced a series of retaliatory resolutions which early in January took the form of the "Macon Bill No. 1." After much discussion the bill went to the Senate, where it was picked to pieces by the Smith faction in that body—a group of men bent on the undoing of Madison's administration and hoping to compass his defeat in 1812. Macon felt and manifested a manly contempt for the men who could thus jeopardize the interests of the country to satisfy a grudge against the President and his Secretary of State, Mr. Gallatin. However, his bill was killed by amendments, for when it was reported back to the House in the early spring its author declared that he would not now support it. "Macon Bill No. 2," written by John Taylor of South Carolina, was now introduced; it was a much weaker measure than the former one. Macon opposed it, but it passed both houses of Congress and became a law May 1, 1810.

Late in 1815 Macon was chosen by the North Carolina Assembly to fill a vacancy caused by the resignation of Senator Stone. The election was almost unanimous, and the faithful servant of his people had reason to congratulate himself on the universal approval of the choice. Macon resigned his seat in the House and immediately appeared at the bar of the Senate to take the oath of office. He at once took hold of the financial side of senatorial legislation and soon made himself felt. He gave ample satisfaction to the North Carolina people, and he was returned to the Senate without a show of opposition until his voluntary withdrawal in 1828, when he had reached the Psalmist's limit of active human life.

In the Senate there was immediate cause for Macon to exert himself. It was now that the famous "liberal construction" of the national Constitution came into vogue. Since President Monroe speedily declared against the new departure, the Senate being largely composed of Republicans in good standing, the so-called upper House supported staunchly the presidential party. Henry Clay, continuing in the Speaker's chair of the House, became the centre of opposition and the place where the greatest extravagance was either actually put into the form of law or proposed. Macon set himself firmly against all the policies of the Clay party; from this time forth his efforts were exerted in a negative way. The new national bank, the Cumberland road, the protective tariff were all opposed step by step, as had been the Federalist legislation of twenty years before. Mr. Clay's wonderful fertility of expedient, his ever-expanding latitudinarian policy, aroused Macon's dislike and finally his fixed political enmity. There was not another man in the country whom Macon regarded as equally dangerous.

In the earlier years of the century Macon had shown himself a friend of the United States Supreme Court; he had opposed the proceedings of 1805; he had been among the first of Southerners to admit the right of the Supreme Court to pronounce upon the constitutionality of acts of Congress. But in 1819 when Marshall's great constitutional decisions became the absorbing themes of the day, he began to see in the Court an enemy of the Union

and the Constitution as he understood those terms. The McCulloch versus Maryland decision and the Cohens versus Virginia case aroused the Southern Democracy and called forth from Jefferson a renewal of his war of words on the national courts. The Virginia leaders planned an amendment to the national Constitution which should set definite bounds to the jurisdiction of Marshall and his court. Macon joined the Virginians; he renewed his relations with Jefferson, and from this date to the end of the ex-President's life they kept up a somewhat intimate correspondence. When Macon was authorized to have a statue of Washington made without limit as to cost, at his request Jefferson recommended Canova and delineated the style of the work in every detail. But the "spirit of 1800" was not to be aroused outside a few Southern States. No amendment to the Constitution was enacted. There were not five men in Congress, Macon said, who held the opinions of genuine Republicans.

Indeed the Missouri question, the ever-recurring slavery problem, had absorbed the attention of the country. Macon was seriously alarmed for the safety of the South in view of the expanding power of the hostile North. He exerted himself to the utmost to defeat the so-called compromise of 1820; he regarded it as a surrender. Few Southern members felt the danger as he did. He declared that the Union of 1788 was dissolved and that another of unlimited powers was being erected in its stead. John Randolph of Roanoke joined him in his warning complaint, but without avail. The compromise was carried by Southern votes. As Macon rode homeward he noted the topography of the country and marked the effect of climate on the institutions of the people. He wrote Bedford Brown of North Carolina about this time that the country would probably break up and that the region south of the James and Cumberland Rivers would form an independent republic based on agriculture and slave-labor as the foundation of society! This was gloomy prophecy; but time proved it to be not entirely visionary.

As the presidential canvass of 1824 approached the various candidates appealed to Macon for support. His influence was worth



more votes than that of any other Southern member of the Senate. Thousands of children bore his name; counties and towns were named for him and his short and pithy sayings were everywhere quoted as the essence of sound common sense and practical wisdom. He favored William H. Crawford, but was unwilling to take part in the Congressional caucus which was called to nominate him in February, 1823. He had never believed in caucus methods, and anything which resembled intrigue he reprobated. Every effort was made to get him to attend. Crawford's friends wrote to Gallatin, now an old man retired from active public life, beseeching him to influence Macon; and Gallatin wrote Macon a letter on the subject, but without avail. The "old fogey," as the Whigs of a few years later delighted to call him, remained steadfast, although he gave his active support to the able Georgian candidate, who would have been elected but for an unfortunate stroke of paralysis which put him *hors de combat* at the opening of the active campaign.

It was at this time that Southerners first put forward the plan of nominating Macon for the Vice-Presidency, it being contended that he would be a safe man for the office in view of the probable early decease of Crawford. Nothing came of the plan, which was of Georgian origin and supported by Virginia. Four years later, when John Quincy Adams was casting about for a Southern running mate to strengthen his ticket against the invincible Jackson, Macon was the man to whom overtures were made notwithstanding the wide divergence of opinion between the two. Macon declined to entertain the proposition, quickly discerning its incongruous features. However it was no small tribute from Adams and his friend, especially when it is remembered that Macon had voted in the Senate against every important measure of the Administration. Between 1824 and 1828 Macon was chairman of the committee on foreign relations, and was three times President *pro tem.* of the Senate.

But the sands of his long political career were running out; he had firmly agreed with himself that he would retire when he reached the age of seventy. He was as good as his word, and

when the time arrived he sent his resignation to the General Assembly giving up an unexpired term of two years. His short statement of his public career inclosed with his resignation is a remarkable document because of what it said and because it is absolutely true from beginning to end. He left public life sorely regretted by thousands and at a time when North Carolina would gladly have kept him in his place. He retired to Buck Spring, his remote country estate, to spend a short ten years in undisturbed repose.

But the fierce campaigns of 1828, the weakening of Clay's hold on the nation, the agitation during these years of the right of a legislature to "instruct" Senators in Congress, the break-up of Jackson's first cabinet and the resulting contest with South Carolina on the question of "nullification," all engaged his attention and in some instances drew from him characteristic opinions. However, he refused to manifest any public interest in these contests until 1836, when Van Buren's election seemed doubtful in North Carolina. Notwithstanding his opposition to Jackson in 1824 and 1828, he supported him in 1832 and "came out" for Jackson's protégé in 1836 and headed the electoral ticket in his State. He made no canvass, as indeed he had never done, but he allowed his decided opinion to go forth to the people. All the influence of Calhoun and his friends, John Branch and Willie P. Mangum, was exerted to the utmost to defeat Van Buren in North Carolina, but to no avail. Macon's influence was still enormous among the masses. The Democratic ticket was elected by a small majority in the State; in the nation it was also successful. It can hardly be doubted that Macon's example was decisive for his State. It was to be his last campaign. The last public act of his life was to journey to Raleigh to cast his vote as an elector. He was the object of universal attention on this visit; he was persuaded to express to the public his decided encouragement at the outcome of the bitter fight, and he pronounced once again his doctrine that the people are capable of self-government.

In one other way Macon contributed to the political life of North Carolina during this short decade of retirement. He was

a delegate to the Constitutional convention of 1835 and was made its president by unanimous voice of its members. He was unquestionably the man for the position, though it is quite evident from his speeches that he was already in his dotage. He contributed much to the spirit of forbearance and peaceful compromise so much needed in that body. Some members from western counties had entered the convention with the fixed purpose of seceding from the State unless that section obtained a more equitable representation in the legislature. The demands of the west were not yielded and there was much bitterness of feeling, but happily no revolutionary attempts were made.

In his simple home during these last years Macon appeared at best advantage. He owned some two thousand acres of land, after having given two daughters their marriage portions; his plantation was cultivated by seventy negro slaves; and his yearly income was ample for his simple tastes. He received visitors constantly, and always with the ease and suavity characteristic of his race. His neighbors were naturally proud of him; they relied on him for counsel in their every-day affairs and appealed their disputes to him for settlement. He read a good deal, though he was not a "bookish man," especially the Bible. Macon dressed carefully in clothes made from the best of materials; his linen was of the old-fashioned style and his boots were always of the make suited to a gentleman of 1776. He loved strong drink, though he did not indulge to excess, and he was wont to keep his cellar well stocked with the best of wines. The guest at his table was always "treated to a full bottle," with the contents of which he was expected to aid his digestion.

Macon was a Baptist, though the Methodists of North Carolina and Virginia did him the signal honor to call their new seminary of learning, just now being established, Randolph-Macon College after him. This turns out, by the way, to be the only monument ever erected to the memory of this good and high-toned North Carolina leader. He was sensible of the honor bestowed, but he seems never to have given the institution any considerable sum of money. Macon's religion was of the simplest kind—after

the manner of his Huguenot ancestry; he heard a sermon once a month, but read the Bible to his slaves every Sunday morning.

Death came at last, and the old Revolutionist knew its approach was near. He was not afraid, but called in his servants and gave them instructions about his final resting-place, which was to be a barren hill-top in the midst of his plantation. The carpenter, too, was called and ordered to construct a plain pine coffin and to present his bill for the same at once. This was done, and Macon paid the last debt that man could owe his fellows. These details being over he dressed himself in the way he desired to be buried, and in a few hours life passed away. The spirit of a remarkable man had taken its flight. Honesty, faithfulness to his vision, had been his unchanging traits; scarce another such a man has ever lived. His impress upon North Carolinians has not yet been effaced. His traits became in a large measure theirs; he was their greatest teacher, one whose word and deed were always uplifting, who never flattered any man or party and yet retained the love of good men everywhere. In Washington he had been honored with high station; he had contributed something to the tone of our early national life; both the House and the Senate acknowledged long after he had departed the value of his example. His place had not been filled at his death; there was no other Macon, nor is it to be expected that vastly changed conditions could produce another such man and patriot. *He actually believed in and practised Democracy.*

*William E. Dodd.*



## FRANÇOIS-XAVIER MARTIN



FRANÇOIS-XAVIER MARTIN, printer and editor, lawyer and jurist, was born in Marseilles, France, March 17, 1762, and his boyhood was spent in that city. The two most authoritative sketches of his life do not agree, however, as to the character and incidents of his early training. Judge Howe, whose sketch is prefixed to the second edition of Martin's "History of Louisiana," published in 1882 (New Orleans), is much fuller on many points; he analyzes more carefully and minutely the character of his subject, tells anecdotes of his life and points out his weaknesses. The man who walks before us in his pages is a living, moving organism, and the sketch bears every evidence of being the work of a scholar who sought earnestly for the truth. On the other hand, Judge Bullard (vol. 2, French's "Historical Collections of Louisiana," Philadelphia, 1850), presents a sketch written in the style of two generations ago, dignified, formal, stilted and with less of human interest to attract, but the author was for many years an associate of Martin on the Supreme Bench of Louisiana and had every opportunity of learning his early history. According to Howe, Martin's "family seem to have been plain and quiet people, from whom he derived as his sole inheritance a rugged physique, a keen intelligence, and a robust will;" of his education he has no exact knowledge. But Judge Bullard says Martin was descended from one

of the most ancient and respectable families in Provence; that his father was a merchant of high standing, of piety and extreme exactness in the management of his business; that the son's early studies were strictly domestic and conducted by a learned ecclesiastic who also acted as chaplain to the family; that he acquired a critical knowledge of Latin and the elements of English and Italian, and that he was intended for a commercial life.

Judge Bullard says further that Martin had an uncle in Martinique who supplied provisions to the French navy, and in that way acquired a considerable fortune, and that the nephew set out to Martinique when eighteen years old to go into business with this relative. It was not long before the uncle withdrew his funds from business, returned to France and died; the nephew was left sufficient means, however, to commence an establishment on his own account, but youth and inexperience brought financial disaster. Martin remained in Martinique probably about three years; he had in the meantime become interested in a commercial adventure to North Carolina; his partner had died and he proceeded to North Carolina himself in the hope of recovering something of the sums due him.

The date of his coming to our State has not been fixed. It is said that he became a volunteer in the Continental army. This would indicate that he was in the State as early as 1782. We know that he was here in 1783 (*History of N. C.*, II., 265). He failed to recover the money due, and found himself a stranger in a strange land and with but an imperfect knowledge of the language. But North Carolinians, then as now, were ready to welcome and aid the man who showed that he had within himself the elements of courage and will. Martin first supported himself as a teacher of French, but seeking more remunerative fields determined to become a printer. He knew nothing of that business, but applied for a position. There seems to have been at that time but one printing establishment in the town, that of Robert Keith and Company, who on August 28, 1783, revived the *North Carolina Gazette*, or *Imperial Intelligencer and Weekly General Advertiser*, using the types and press of James Davis. Judge

Bullard says that Martin served his apprenticeship with James Clark, but there was not a printer in the town by that name. It is possible that Judge Bullard meant to say James Davis, but it seems that Davis had at that time retired from business, that his son, Thomas Davis, was established in Halifax, and that Martin's first service was with Keith, for we know that about this time Keith advertised for a "couple of lads fourteen or fifteen years of age" to learn the business.

At any rate Martin learned the printer's trade in New-Bern; by characteristic frugality and industry he soon got a start in life; by the aid of friends secured a press, probably Keith's, and later acquired his newspaper, the *North Carolina Gazette*. We do not know at what time he became editor of this sheet, but he was editor March 23, 1793, most probably several years before that date. After securing his press Martin printed his newspaper and is said to have also printed almanacs and school books, and to have peddled them through Craven and the adjoining counties, but none of these imprints have come under my observation. If this was ever done it was perhaps soon outgrown, for as early as 1785 he had attained the dignity of a publisher, and on November 22, 1785, "Martin and Company, printers in the town of New-Bern," were applicants for the public printing (State Records, XVII., 279). He seems to have engaged in other business also, for in 1786 the French consul in Charleston gave judgment against him for 589 pounds in the case of J. J. Coulougnac of New York, by whom Martin had been employed in that city in 1785. In time his printing business became lucrative; Ogden was admitted as a partner and the business was continued as long as Martin remained in North Carolina.

But even in his earlier days printing and peddling books and almanacs and editing a newspaper were not enough for the active mind of François-Xavier Martin. He began the study of law, encouraged to the step by Abner Nash, who had learned his inherent worth. He was admitted to the bar in 1789 when twenty-seven, and took position not as a brilliant advocate, but as a student of laws and of jurisprudence who was destined to become a

jurist. That he had already attained an honorable position in the aristocratic society of New-Bern is shown by his presence on the committee to receive General Washington on his visit in 1791.

Martin's practice of law helped him as a printer of legal works and vice versa. In 1791 he issued his first legal compilation, "The Office and Authority of a Justice of the Peace," so far as known the first law book coming from his press. This was followed in 1792 by his "Statutes of the Parliament of England in force in North Carolina." This was an official collection, prepared in obedience to a resolve of the legislature. It involved a vast amount of labor, but was sharply criticised by the compilers of the Revised Statutes of 1837, who say that his work is poorly done, that statutes are inserted that were never in force and others omitted that were, while his amazing ignorance of the law literature of the State is seen in his statement that he had no guide to indicate what British statutes had been made to apply to North Carolina, although chapter 1, Laws of 1749, gives such a list. In 1793 he translated and published "Latch's Reports;" in 1794 he published, under a resolution of the Assembly, a collection of the "Private Acts of North Carolina," and in 1795 appeared his "Acts of the General Assembly of North Carolina," 1791, 1792, 1793 and 1794. This was a reprint of the session laws for those years with a few omissions, was intended as a supplement to Iredell's Revisal of 1791, and was issued privately. In 1797 appeared his notes of "Decisions of the Superior Courts of North Carolina." In 1802, the firm name now being Martin and Ogden, he published his translation of Pothier on Obligations, the first done into English, and anticipating by four years that by Evans in England. Martin's edition had an extensive circulation in the United States. It is said that he was by this time such an expert compositor that the English translation was never reduced to manuscript, but was set directly from the French original. He also compiled and printed a volume on Sheriffs, another on Executors, and published a number of novels, including "Lord Rivers," "The Female Foundling," "Delaval," "The Rural Philosopher, a Poem," and some others like "Stephanie de Bourbon" that were transla-



tions from the French. In 1804 he published under direction of the legislature, a revision of the laws of the State in two volumes, known as Martin's Revisal. The two volumes are usually bound together. The first reprints the laws of 1715-1791 then in force, and covers the same period as Judge Iredell's Revisal of 1791; the second covers the period 1791-1804, and appendices bring some copies down as late as 1807.

Martin also published a "History of North Carolina," in two volumes (New Orleans, 1829). He had begun collecting materials for this work as early as 1791 and had brought them all together before he went to the Southwest in 1809. His volumes as issued are a dull compilation, mostly from printed sources, but with no exact reference to authorities; they are arranged largely in the form of annals and contain much that is irrelevant or of little importance. He had exceptional facilities for his day for this work, but was indifferent to the collection of facts even when his opportunities were of the best—witness his history of printing in New-Bern; he was even willing to change facts to suit a purpose, as he did in the history of the Quakers. He made little effort to set forth events in the relation of cause and effect; he failed to grasp the note of freedom under law and restlessness, under the violation of law that so pervaded and dominated the colonial life of North Carolina, and his work as a history has never been of any value either for its facts or their interpretation, although still quoted by the unknowing.

In 1806 and 1807 he represented New-Bern in the House of Commons. His career in North Carolina was now drawing to a close. He spent 28 years in the State; out of nothing created a competence and an assured position; became a proficient in the common law, in the laws of the United States, and had not neglected those of Rome and of France. His career so far as it concerns North Carolina is that of a printer, editor and lawyer, a reviser of statutes, a compiler of law books and a historian.

In Louisiana he became a jurist, building there on the deep and wide foundations previously laid. On March 7, 1809, President Madison appointed him one of the judges of the superior court

of the Territory of Mississippi; he filled that position for a year and was transferred March 21, 1810, to the bench of the superior court of the Territory of Orleans and removed to New Orleans. He continued to occupy that position till the admission of the State to the Union, in 1812, when the territorial courts ceased to exist. He was appointed attorney general of the new State, February 13, 1813, and served in that position till his appointment as a member of the supreme court of the State. His commission as supreme judge is dated February 1, 1815, and from then till March 18, 1846, he sat on the supreme bench; from the death of Judge Matthews in 1836 he was the chief justice till he left the bench, and as he had been deprived of office by the adoption of the constitution in 1812, so in 1846 he was again to lose office by the adoption of the new constitution of 1846.

During the long service of 31 years on the supreme bench Judge Martin was not content with a mere formal discharge of his duties; he did not permit himself to wither away into a clever clerk. His duties as judge were performed with entire strictness, while his labors in other fields of intellectual work were immense. When he came to the supreme court of the Territory there was a formidable task before him. The Territory of Louisiana had been French, then Spanish, and then again French before it came to the United States. O'Reilly governed by Spanish law and had superseded the French laws. When Louisiana came to the United States habeas corpus, the system of proceedings in criminal cases, and trial by jury, were introduced. In 1808 was promulgated the Digest of the Civil Laws then in force in Louisiana, commonly called the Old Code. That compilation was little more than a mutilated copy of the Code Napoleon, but did not abrogate previous law and was considered as declaratory law, repealing only such as were repugnant to it and leaving partly in force the voluminous codes of Spain. It was therefore necessary to study and compare French and Spanish codes and to consult the Roman law. This was, perhaps, the beginning of comparative jurisprudence in the United States. On coming to New Orleans Judge Martin sought to help on this work by beginning the issue of reports of

cases decided by the superior courts. His first volume appeared in 1811; the second in 1813 and brought the decisions down to the establishment of the State Government. The Code of 1808 was revised in 1825 and a Code of Practice was promulgated. By an act of 1828 all the civil laws in force before the promulgation of the codes, with a single exception, were abrogated. It was decided, however, that the Roman, Spanish and French laws repealed were the statute laws of those nations, and of Louisiana, and that the legislature did not intend to abrogate those principles of law which had been established or settled by the decisions of the courts. The result was that the Codes of Louisiana were interpreted by the decisions of her courts and by the principles of the civil law so far as they could be applied. It will be seen, therefore, that while Judge Martin was on the bench there were many new questions demanding solution which were of unusual difficulty and importance. Conflicts of decisions were to be reconciled; anomalies to be reduced to order; the complications of colonial jurisprudence to be investigated; the problems of territorial government, those of the Code of 1808, the relation between the civil law and the American system, the relation between the Federal and State powers, the constitution of 1812, the Code of 1825, were to be solved; a jurisprudence was to be created. How well Judge Martin performed these varied and complicated duties, what patience, clear-sightedness and vigor he brought to the creation of a system of jurisprudence in Louisiana, is a part of the history of that State.

Judge Martin continued with unabated activity as a maker of books on law. Besides his two volumes of reports of decisions in the territorial supreme courts, he published 18 volumes of decisions of the supreme court of the State, the last of these appearing in 1830; in 1817 he published in two volumes, in French and English, his Digest of the Territorial and State Statutes, later known as Martin's Digest; in 1827 he published his "History of Louisiana" in two volumes, and in 1829 a "History of North Carolina" in two volumes, as we have seen. His total literary output in North Carolina and Louisiana was about 34 volumes, for he was

one of those rare men, says Judge Howe, "to whom study, obstinate toil and the constant exercise of the thinking faculty were the prime necessities of life." In recognition of his great labors he was made a foreign associate member of the Academy of Marseilles in 1817, a LL.D. by the University of Nashville, and in 1841 the same degree was given him by Harvard University. He died in New Orleans December 10, 1846, and was buried there.

In personal appearance Judge Martin was below the medium height, with large head, a Roman nose and a thick neck. He was very near-sighted in his younger days and totally blind for the last ten years of his life. His conversation was entertaining and argumentative and he was fond of the Socratic method. He was always shabbily and sometimes even dirtily dressed, for he never married, having the temperament and habits of a miser and being too much "absorbed in the study of law and the practice of parsimony." He left a fortune inventoried at \$396,841.17, and worth, perhaps, half a million. It was left by will to his brother, Paul Barthelmy Martin, who had come out from France a few years before. The State brought suit to break the will, claiming two things: (1). That the will was void as a legal and physical possibility, for it was in olographic form and unwitnessed, and could not have been written by a blind man; (2). That if not void for that reason, it was void as an attempted fraud on the fiscal rights of the State, since it was claimed that Paul B. Martin was to distribute this property among heirs living in France, and the State required a 10% tax on bequests going to foreign legatees. The contentions of the State were defeated in the Supreme Court, and after the death of the brother a large share of the estate did go to a niece living in southern France who, because of her goodness, was known as the Providence of the community where she resided.

No juster tribute can be written of François-Xavier Martin than that of Judge Howe in the close of his sketch, who speaks of him as a man "who was truly honest, who was soundly learned, and who above all made his laborious life of lasting value to the world."

This sketch is based on the appreciative sketches of Judge Howe and Judge Bullard, mentioned at the beginning of this paper; on my "Press in North Carolina in the 18th Century;" on my "Southern Quakers and Slavery," and on the notes for my Bibliography of North Carolina. There is a portrait of Martin in the second edition to his "History of Louisiana" (New Orleans, 1882), and a marble bust belongs to the Supreme Court of that State.

*Stephen B. Weeks.*





*H. B. Wilson*



## HENRY C. McQUEEN

**T**HE family of McQueens from whom the subject of this sketch is descended on the paternal side is distinguished and widely extended. In the Highlands of Scotland they adhered to the cause of Charles Edward, the Pretender, with loyal and romantic valor, and when his sun went down forever on the fatal field of Culloden many of them left the wild and picturesque scenery which surrounded their early homes and emigrated to America. Among the first of this number was James McQueen, from whom Henry C. McQueen is lineally descended. His father was Edmund McQueen, a physician of eminent character and respected by his contemporaries and associates. He was the first mayor of the town of Lumberton. Endowed by nature with a resolute spirit and unflinching courage, he possessed that singleness of heart and unfailing integrity essential to high character and lofty purpose. A sense of duty and sentiment of honor constituted the spring of all his actions. His mother was Susan Moore, who was of a New York family known alike for its intellectual qualities and moral virtues, and to his mother's guidance her devoted son ever attributed much of his success in life. He was born in the town of Lumberton in the county of Robeson, State of North Carolina, on the 16th day of July, 1846. The early days of his boyhood were spent in the schools of his native town, and later he was sent to the Hillsboro Military Academy and af-

terward to the famous Bingham School at "The Oaks" in Orange County. He passed his vacations and holiday seasons in pastimes and sports not unlike those enjoyed by others in his own station in life. He hunted in the swamps and everglades of Robeson County and fished in its bright and golden waters which ever delight the eye of the traveller, and which can be found only in the region where the cypress abounds.

The section in which he was born was intensely devoted to the fortunes of the South in the war between the States, and he inherited strongly this sentiment with an abiding faith in the justice of its cause. Animated by the martial spirit of the race from which he sprung, he enlisted while a lad in the Confederate Army, and was attached to and became a member of the First North Carolina Battery of Artillery. The boy soldier, whether in camp, on the march, or upon the field of battle, won the affection and admiration of his comrades by the faithful and conscientious discharge of every duty which devolved upon him. On the 15th day of January, 1865, his career as a soldier was brought to an end by the capture of Fort Fisher, when he was wounded and made prisoner. He was detained by the Federal authorities until the close of the war, which soon followed this event so calamitous to the fortunes of the Southern Confederacy, yet so honorable to its glory. Upon his return home, towards the close of 1865, from a military prison, he was penniless and his friends and family were in like condition. However, he was not helpless nor did he despair. He inherited from his father not only the hereditary physical courage and firmness of his race, but from both father and mother what is far more enduring and important, that moral firmness of an exalted nature which enabled him, regardless of self, to stand for the right and combat the wrong. It was the force of this moral power which gave him strength at the close of a great and disastrous war to assume with cheerfulness and resolute will the duties and responsibilities which the result had cast upon him.

He commenced his business career in Wilmington, North Carolina, in 1866, and it has been one of uninterrupted honor and success. He is a member of the firm of Murchison and Company,



distinguished for its fair dealing and without blemish or stain. He has served two terms as president of the Produce Exchange of the city of Wilmington, now known as the Chamber of Commerce. Since 1898 he has been a member of the Board of Audit and Finance of the city of Wilmington, and has been its chairman since 1896. This board has entire control of the finances of the city. In 1899 he originated and carried through to complete success a plan by which a large portion of the debt of the city, although not due for many years, and bearing a greater rate of interest, was refunded at four per cent, saving many thousand dollars, reducing its obligations materially and enhancing its credit, while large sums at the same time have been expended upon improvements. During the same period he has been commissioner of the sinking fund of the city of Wilmington, and his name is indissolubly connected with its financial honor and success during an era which taxed the courage and ability of the bravest and best.

In March, 1899, the Murchison National Bank of the city of Wilmington was organized. Its founders were strong men, skilled in finance and thoroughly conversant with the business interests of the country at large, as well as of their own immediate section. With one accord they named Henry C. McQueen as its President. He has ever executed the trust which was confided to him with unquestioned integrity and with rare skill and ability. Its success has been remarkable and unexcelled in the financial history of the State. To-day not a single bank in North Carolina has so large a deposit account, and none is held in higher repute. From the day when its doors were first opened for business to the present time it has felt the lasting impress of the splendid financial capacity and superior management of its first and only president. Nor has the success of that other great financial institution of Wilmington always under his guidance and control been less marked. Organized in April, 1900, the People's Saving Bank reached a degree of prosperity which has made it a marvel to its friends and to the public. He has been for many years a member of the directory of the Carolina Insurance Company of Wilmington, which has a high and honorable record. He was one of the

organizers of the Bank of Duplin at Wallace, North Carolina, in 1903, and became its president, which position he still holds. He is actively connected with various other important enterprises in Wilmington and its vicinity.

The personality of Henry C. McQueen is most attractive. He combines a quiet dignity and reserve with gentleness and courtesy. His frankness and sincerity at once enlist confidence. Perhaps the most marked feature of his character, next to his moral firmness, is his unaffected modesty, which has endeared him to his associates and won for him universal respect wherever he is known. In his intercourse with his fellow-men he is singularly free from selfishness, and his chief incentive in the struggle of life has been a supreme sense of duty and tender attachment for his wife and children. His success has been won without willful wrong to any one of his fellow-men and without self-abasement or compromise of right. Above all he is a consistent Christian with an abiding faith in the life to come and an absolute confidence in its immortality. He has been for many years a member of the First Presbyterian Church of Wilmington, and since 1898 has been chairman of its Board of Deacons.

He was married on the 9th day of November, 1871, to Miss Mary Agnes Hall of Fayetteville, North Carolina, a woman whose Christian virtues and gentle heart made her the charm and delight of the circle in which she moved. She was the daughter of Avon E. Hall, a merchant of high repute. The maiden name of her mother was Margaret Bell, a most accomplished lady, whose father was a distinguished architect. From the time of their marriage until her death in January, 1904, their home was one long happy dream where discord was unknown. It was embellished by the generous hospitality of a gentleman, the benevolence of Christianity, and that unaffected kindness to all which ever attracts those of gentle birth and honorable ancestry. Its simplicity was the reflex of the refined and quiet life which Mrs. Mary Agnes McQueen had always led. It had been a life filled with the sweetness of kind and generous deeds.

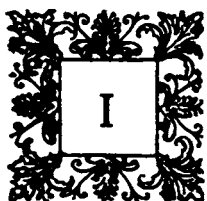
*Charles M. Stedman.*



*Thy friend.  
Nerey Mendenhall.*



## NEREUS MENDENHALL



IN 1759 James Mendenhall of Pennsylvania settled on the banks of Deep River, purchased a tract of land of Earl Granville, and founded a village, subsequently named Jamestown by his son George. James moved further south, settling finally in Georgia.

George Mendenhall married Judith Gardner. Among the children born from this marriage were the distinguished lawyer, George C. Mendenhall, and Richard, who was the father of Dr. Nereus Mendenhall, the subject of this sketch.

His mother was Mary Pegg, a woman of remarkable beauty, industry, and strength of character. The home which Richard built stands in Jamestown, and was noted for the generous hospitality which reigned therein through a long and interesting period of North Carolina history. Statesman and philanthropist, men of almost every nationality and every phase of humanity, from a commodore to a street beggar, have there found food and shelter. Richard Mendenhall was a man of excellent intellectual ability, sterling integrity of character, and a leading member of the Society of Friends in North Carolina.

Nereus was the fourth child in this home, and was born on the 14th of August, 1819. His father considered it his duty to provide for the education of his children, and saw that a good school was maintained for his own and for the children of the

neighborhood. Nereus early showed remarkable mental power, and learned his lessons with such ease and quickness that his instructor, the well-known Andy Caldwell, "did not see when that boy learned; he did not study hard."

His love of learning displayed itself in his boyhood days. He and his two brothers, Cyrus Pegg and Richard Junius, were expected to cultivate the large garden. Nereus's part was always well done; and when rest time came and the other boys sought the street and marbles, he climbed to a seat he had prepared in the large fig tree and read his books. The thoughtful boy with his deep blue eyes full of wonder, poring over the learning of the ages, the fig leaves shutting him in from the sun and from the passers-by, presents a picture which foreshadows his future life.

At the age of thirteen he was sent to Greensboro to learn the printer's trade, and was intimately associated with Lyndon Swaim, whom he ever afterwards held in the highest esteem. He worked faithfully at his trade and saved his money to pay his way at Haverford College, Pennsylvania, which institution he entered in 1837. He entered the freshman class and did two years' work in one; and in one year more he performed the work in the junior and senior years, graduating in 1839 at the head of his class. Although the regulations at Haverford were much more strict than we should find at a similar institution to-day, Nereus Mendenhall passed through his course without the violation of any rule, and by his unswerving devotion to truth and righteousness, as well as by his brilliant intellectual powers, attracted the attention of the faculty and board of managers, and drew to himself their life-long affection and respect.

To show that his spiritual life kept pace with his mental development the following testimony is given, which Dr. Mendenhall near the close of his life gave to his classmate and devoted friend, Doctor Richard Randolph, of Philadelphia :

"The revelation which in my little dormitory at Haverford came to me when a student there, as alone at the narrow window I read Psalm XXXIV 10: 'The young lions do lack and suffer hunger. but

they that seek the Lord shall not want for any good thing,' however unable at some times to see how it is true, from that time to this I have never relinquished nor ceased to cherish."

In 1845 he graduated at the Jefferson Medical College in Philadelphia. He was successful in the practice of medicine, but his health could not stand the strain arising from his sympathy with human suffering. He therefore gave up the practice and was employed as principal of New Garden Boarding School, founded by the Friends of North Carolina, and opened in 1837.

As an instructor Dr. Mendenhall soon became famous. His knowledge of all branches of learning was profound and his clear insight into character, mental and spiritual, naturally fitted him to adapt his instruction to the student's capacity. Under his system of teaching, so thorough as to give a lasting reputation to New Garden School, the institution flourished; and many young men and women from him received an inspiration which led not only to more extended study elsewhere, but to an appreciation of the benefits of education that in many cases has marked the career of his pupils, and made them standard-bearers in educational work in this and in many other States.

In 1851 Dr. Mendenhall was married to Oriana Wilson, a woman of quick discernment, excellent judgment and warm sympathy with all who from any cause were in need. Her devotion to her husband during a period of enfeebled health was most marked, and doubtless was instrumental in his restoration.

Finding the confinement incidental to the profession of teaching too taxing on his health, he gave up his place at New Garden School and became a civil engineer, for which his decided mathematical genius specially fitted him; and his work in the survey of many of the railroads in the State and in South Carolina proved of great service. Notably was this the case in the location of the road from Salisbury to Asheville.

Whatever his occupation, he was successful. This was due to his minute knowledge of details and to his persistent effort. He yet found time for study, and while on surveys difficult and laborious read much in almost every field of learning. The Latin lan-

guage he read with great ease. He also possessed an accurate knowledge of Greek and Hebrew, both of which languages he studied largely for the sake of better understanding the Bible, of which he was a life-long student. He subscribed to the great English Reviews and read them eagerly. His mind was full of questioning, and at one period tossed by doubts which nearly every thoughtful mind encounters in greater or less degree. The result of investigation always brought him to a sure basis, and like Whittier,

"To one firm faith his spirit clung,  
He knew that God was good."

In 1860, through the urgent request of the trustees of New Garden School, Dr. Mendenhall returned as principal and remained as such through the stormy days of the Civil War. In all that time the school was maintained. Dr. Mendenhall by inheritance, by education, and from his own profound reflection was opposed to slavery, and if any question of righteousness was involved, never hesitated to say so. As a member of the Friends' Church he was also opposed to war. He therefore had to encounter a double-headed evil during the struggle which ended in the freedom of the slaves. While he disapproved of withdrawing from the Union, and the establishment of the Southern Confederacy, the ways of the Reconstructionists of 1867 were so repulsive to him that he gave his sympathy and support to the Democracy of the State, and was elected twice by the Democratic Party to the State Legislature, where his wide information and deep interest in the educational and in every other interest of the State made him a most valuable member.

Dr. Mendenhall was a prominent member of the commission appointed by the State for the location and construction of the hospital at Morganton. His knowledge as a physician of the requirements of such an institution, his marked ability as a civil engineer, and his excellent judgment of material and work, made his services for the State on such a commission invaluable. The full board was composed of Governor Graham, Dr. Mendenhall,

Captain Denson, Dr. Whitehead, Dr. Grissom, and Thomas G. Walton. They laid the foundations broad and deep, such that future builders would have to build upon them, and acted in much wisdom with everything that was connected with the beginning of the institution. They spent one-third of the original appropriation to obtain a supply of pure water from the mountains. They even went so far as to purchase the watershed from which the supply was obtained. Future generations will bless the men who did this noble work.

The late Mr. James Walker of Wilmington, the contractor, a native Scotchman, a stone mason by trade, a competent and honest man, repeatedly stated that the leading spirit in all this was Dr. Nereus Mendenhall.

In 1876 he received an appointment as a member of the faculty of the Penn Charter School in the city of Philadelphia, where he spent two years. He was then made a member of the faculty of Haverford College and taught two years in his Alma Mater. His health did not permit him to continue longer in the schoolroom. While there he was elected alumni orator; and being always deeply interested in religious questions, he prepared an address in which he expressed the results of his investigation in science, literature, and religious history, so far as these subjects relate to faith and practical religion.

In religious belief he was a Friend, though tolerant towards all denominations and beliefs. After much reflection and research, the Christian doctrine and philosophy preached by George Fox and expounded by Robert Barclay and William Penn he fully indorsed, and believed that these eminent Friends promulgated in its essence the doctrine of primitive Christianity.

Though in feeble health the last few years of his life, Dr. Mendenhall maintained to the end a deep interest in all matters pertaining to the welfare of his fellow-men, and was specially interested in education and in religious philosophy. He was for many years the chairman of the board of education of Guilford County and held that position at the time of his death.

His interest in the Bible never abated. He kept the English



Bible and a copy of the Greek New Testament by his bedside during his last illness, and evinced to those who were interested in Biblical scholarship his acquaintance with the latest investigation and interpretation of modern scholars. He welcomed research, whether in science or in history or in Biblical literature, and had no fear of the results of modern scholarship on the proper relation of the Bible to Christianity. Indeed, it had long been his belief that no interpretation of the Bible could set aside a well-established scientific fact, and he rejoiced to see the renewed interest in Bible study and religious questions which has grown out of the doctrine of evolution and the consequent idea of progression in religious history.

In the beautiful autumn days of 1893 his life gradually ebbed away, and October the 29th at sunset his spirit passed to the "upper room."

Dr. Mendenhall knew almost all forms under which the human worships the divine, and welcomed light from every source. From all his study he came back with Whittier "to what he learned beside his mother's knee—'All is of God that is and is to be, and God is good.'"

From the poems of Whittier he gained much consolation, often remarking, "He has traveled over the same ground." The poet's conclusions were very gratifying to him, and these lines from the "Shadow and the Light" were often upon his lips:

"Nor bound nor clime nor creed Thou know'st,  
Wide as our needs Thy favors fall,  
The white wings of the Holy Ghost  
Stoop seen or unseen o'er the heads of all."

*I. L. Hobbs.*



## ROBERT JOHNSTONE MILLER

**R**OBERT JOHNSTONE MILLER, third son of George and Margaret Bathier Miller, born at Baldovie, near Dundee, Scotland, July 11, 1758, and reared in the "Jacobite" Episcopal Church, under the ministry of the venerable Bishop Rait of Brechin, was designed for the ministry and sent to "the classical school" at Dundee; but in 1774 came to America upon invitation of an elder brother, a prosperous East and West India merchant in Charlestown, Mass.

When the Revolutionary struggle began he declared himself a friend of liberty, joined General Greene's army when it passed through Boston, and took part in the battles of Long Island, Brandywine and White Plains, in the first of which he received a severe flesh wound in the face. He was with the army during the dreadful winter at Valley Forge. He came South, probably when Washington made his famous campaign on Cornwallis, and was in Virginia near Yorktown when mustered out of the service. He settled in Southside, Virginia, near Bute County, later Franklin County, North Carolina.

In 1785, through the instrumentality of Dr. Coke, he joined a Conference held in Franklin County and became a Methodist preacher on Tar River circuit. Disapproving the policy of separation from the Church of England, however, he withdrew from the Methodist Society in about one year.

His health failing in 1786, he removed to Whitehaven, Lincoln County, where he became lay-reader to a congregation of Church of England people, who chose church wardens and elected a vestry. Here, greatly respected and beloved, he became their pastor, save in the matter of administering the sacraments, which they received at the hands of a Lutheran minister who lived in the vicinity. Quite naturally Mr. Miller was also teacher of a "classical school." During eight years that this relationship existed he became intimately acquainted with this Lutheran minister and his clerical brethren in Rowan, Guilford and Randolph. To aid in counteracting a prevalent evil (indiscriminate preaching by unauthorized persons), Mr. Miller, urged by his congregation and advised by the Presbyterian clergy, agreed to accept ordination of the Lutherans, distinctly reserving his Episcopalian beliefs.

On May 20, 1794, he was ordained, and in his letter of orders was held to be "obliged to obey ye rules, ordinances and customs of ye Christian Society called ye Protestant Episcopal Church in America." At this time efforts were made to organize the Episcopal Church in North Carolina. Mr. Miller had been elected a member of the standing committee by the Tarboro convention of November 21, 1793. He attended the Tarboro convention of May 28, 1794, as a clerical member, read the morning service on the second day of the convention, voted with the other clergy for Bishop, and signed as one of the clergy the certification of Rev. Charles Pettigrew's election as Bishop. Dr. Pettigrew was never consecrated, and it was twenty-one years before another Episcopal convention was held in North Carolina.

During this period Mr. Miller's work naturally followed along Lutheran courses. Secretary of the Synod in 1803 and 1804, president in 1812, author of the Constitution adopted by the Synod of 1803 upon the lines laid down by the Episcopal General Convention, and as a laborious missionary among them, he was a leading spirit in the Synod. Dr. Bernheim, the Lutheran historian, magnanimously says: "Our Church owes a debt of gratitude to his memory which cannot be cancelled or forgotten."

On March 12, 1787, Mr. Miller married Mary Perkins, daugh-

ter of John Perkins, Esq., of Lincoln, whose wedding gift to his daughter was a fine plantation in Burke, two miles from Lenoir (now in Caldwell County), which Mr. Miller named "Mary's Grove" in honor of his wife. Hither he moved from Whitehaven in 1806, whence his work with the Lutherans continued until 1821. Without receiving, asking for or expecting salary, he labored incessantly, serving his charges at Whitehaven, Smyrna and St. Peter's in Lincoln, St. Michael's in Iredell, Christ Church in Rowan, and Trinity in Burke, besides making long journeyings into other States. To illustrate the extent of his missionary tours beyond the State, one made in 1811 may be noted, when he traversed South Carolina, the present State of West Virginia, the Shenandoah Valley of Virginia, and the eastern part of Tennessee, travelling 3000 miles, baptizing 2 adults and 60 children, preaching 67 times, and receiving \$70.44 for his support without asking for a cent! He was absent on this journey four months.

In 1817 the Episcopal Church was organized in North Carolina and, at a convention held in Raleigh, April 28, 1821, Bishop Moore, of Virginia, presiding, Mr. Miller presented his letter of Lutheran orders and on May 1st was ordained a deacon and advanced to the priesthood. The hopes of his youth were realized, but he was now an old man and the best years of his life had been given to Lutheranism. It was the misfortune of Episcopacy and not his fault that his missionary labors of thirty years had not been performed for his own church. In 1823 John Stark Ravenscroft was made the first Bishop of North Carolina and rested from his labors in 1830. He was succeeded by Bishop Ives. Mr. Miller served under both Bishops.

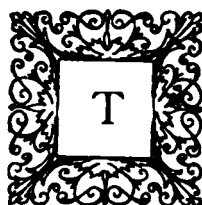
His bodily strength gradually decayed with increasing years until May 13, 1834, when he fell on sleep. He was buried in the family graveyard at "Mary's Grove."

"Parson" Miller, as he was universally called in his later years, was by tradition accounted an eloquent, earnest and effective preacher. His sermons, many of which have been preserved, prove him to have been a man of deep piety, learning and culture.

*W. W. Scott.*



## WILLIAM MILLER



THE evanescence of earthly fame is well illustrated by the career of William Miller, sometime Governor of North Carolina, for little can we now learn of his life save by reference to the works wherein his public actions are recorded. He was a citizen of the County of Warren, and in 1802 (if not earlier) was a student at the University of North Carolina. He entered upon the study of law, and was later licensed to practise. By 1810 he had won a high place at the bar and was appointed Attorney-General of North Carolina to succeed the Honorable Oliver Fitts, who had resigned. Mr. Miller's commission as attorney-general having expired in the year he received his appointment, he was elected to represent Warren County in the lower house of the General Assembly which met on the 19th of November, 1810. He was also a member of the House of Commons of the State in the years 1811, 1812, 1813 and 1814. At the sessions of 1812, 1813 and 1814 he was Speaker of the House. During his service as Speaker in the session of 1814 he was elected Governor of North Carolina on the 30th of November, and took the oath of office a few days later, on December 7th.

At the time of Governor Miller's entrance upon his duties as chief magistrate, the second war with Great Britain was in its last stages. On December 24, 1814, the treaty of peace was signed at Ghent; but, owing to the slow means of travel at that time, the

news was some weeks in reaching America, and hostilities continued in the meantime. The bloody battle of New Orleans, as is well known, occurred two weeks after the contending countries had agreed to cease hostilities. When the General Assembly of 1815 met, Governor Miller in his official message (November 22d) referred with pride to the outcome of the war, saying:

"The names of Niagara, Champlain, Plattsburg, Baltimore and New Orleans renew ideas precious and consolatory. They show to kings and parasites of royalty that the rights of man are the precious gifts of Heaven. In fine, the war, with all its calamities, has illustrated the capacity of the United States to be a great, free, and flourishing nation. It has put to flight the stale objection of the imbecility of republics for warlike operations, and furnishes additional evidence, if any were wanting, of the superior capacity of freemen for the exertion of every species of corporeal and mental energy."

At the southern terminus of Fayetteville street in the city of Raleigh was once the building erected for a governor's mansion, which in 1876 became a public school and was later demolished to make room for a more modern school building. The erection of the old mansion was begun during the administration of Governor Hawkins, but Governor Miller (the immediate successor of Hawkins) was its first occupant. The present mansion in Burke Square at Raleigh was begun by Governor Jarvis, but not completed until the administration of Governor Daniel G. Fowle.

The administration of Governor Miller ended in December, 1817, when his successor, John Branch, was inaugurated. While serving as governor, Mr. Miller was *ex-officio* president of the board of trustees of the University of North Carolina. In 1817, just after his term as governor had expired, the Legislature elected him a member of that board, and he remained thereon until his death nearly ten years later.

At the sessions of the General Assembly of 1821 and 1822 Mr. Miller served as State Senator from the county of Warren.

At the session of the Senate of 1822 a proposition was made to establish the county of Davidson, and Governor Miller, with a

broad and enlightened spirit, and perhaps recalling the favors shown him by the Western people, voted for the measure. At the succeeding election he was brought forward again by his friends for State Senator, but now a great clamor was raised against him. He had voted to establish a western county! That would give the west another representative, and might enable the west to call a constitutional convention; and by the same vote that a convention could be convened, the convention could be controlled; and "we would lose our Constitution." Thus it was that the friends of General M. T. Hawkins, his opponent, pressed the point that Governor Miller had endangered the safety of the east and put in jeopardy "our Constitution." The opposition engendered was irresistible, and General Miller went down before it. The incident serves to illustrate a phase of the conflict between the east and the west that was in progress from the opening of the century, that led to the holding of "a western convention," with the threat to break the State in twain, and which was continued with great bitterness and wrath until by the votes of Otway Burns and Judge Gaston the convention of 1835 was called. Even then the amendments agreed on received in some of the eastern counties not a single vote, and Otway Burns, the popular hero of his people, was never again honored by their suffrages.

Governor Miller being rejected by his county, doubtless suffered severe mortification, but his State influence was not lessened.

On the incoming of the new administration in 1825, President John Quincy Adams appointed him *Chargé d' Affaires* to Guatemala in Central America, which he accepted.

The *Raleigh Register* of July 15, 1825, mentions the departure of Governor Miller and of Dr. Baker, the Secretary of Legation, saying: "They are at Norfolk, whence they will sail in a few days in the Government vessel 'Decoy.'"

Governor Miller, however, did not survive his arrival in Central America many months. His death occurred at the capital city of Guatemala shortly after his arrival, about the opening of the year 1826.

*Marshall De Lancey Haywood.*

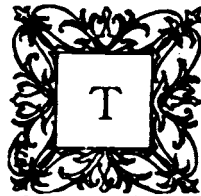


*John J. Mott.*





## JOHN JAMES MOTT



THE Mott family is of Nova Scotia origin, the founder of the American branch having been a London merchant by name John, who removed before the revolt of the Colonies to Halifax, continuing business there. His descendant, the Rev. Thomas Smith Webb Mott, was the father of the subject of this article, and was well known to the best people of North Carolina in the years prior to the Civil War.

As a priest of the Protestant Episcopal Church he ministered to various charges in the State, and it was while rector at Hillsboro, North Carolina, that his son, Dr. John James Mott, was born on May 7, 1834.

The reverend gentleman afterwards taught a high school at his residence on Lower Creek, near Lenoir, North Carolina, and prepared many of the youths of the Piedmont section for college, or for the struggles of life where a college education was denied. He was reputed a stern commander, rich in book lore and enthusiastic in his calling. Of his family three sons became physicians. His wife was Miss Susan Amanda Phillips, whose strong traits of character was transmitted to her sons, as it is an accepted theory that from the female side boys do most inherit. The influence of his father was also a marked factor in determining the life of our subject, since no stronger man has ever been seen in the Episcopal priesthood in North Carolina than the Rev. T. S. W. Mott.

The youth of Dr. Mott was passed at his paternal home in the lovely valley of Lower Creek, in clear view of those beautiful twin mountains, Hawks Bill and Table Rock, and engaged in exercises best fitted to make a strong manhood. Shooting, hunting and horseback exercise were his passionate delight, while he developed a fondness for flowers and animals of all kinds which has never forsaken him, and which in his later years has served to keep old age green and flavor it with a spice of youth. From his father's school young Mott took a course in Catawba College, Newton, North Carolina, whence to prepare himself for his chosen profession he went to the Jefferson Medical College at Philadelphia.

The active work of life was begun in 1856 at Beattie's Ford, North Carolina, and on the 8th of July of that year he married Miss Theodosia Caroline Hendrix of the Wilkes County family of that name. To them were born nine children, of whom six now survive, one of these being the very brilliant Marshal L. Mott, now district attorney in the Indian Territory.

The life of Dr. Mott in the years succeeding his marriage up to and including the years of the Civil War in no wise very greatly differed from that of the country physician in the South. He enjoyed the best practice in his section by long odds and made a name in his profession beyond the bounds of his practice.

His friends were many, though not of the influential class as a rule; but they were true to him through all the succeeding years of war and reconstruction, and his name is still remembered with respect and affection in that section from which he has been absent more than thirty years.

In politics Dr. Mott was a staunch Whig in those days, and the incident is yet remembered by the older people about Lenoir how that during a term of court at that place he hurrahed on the public square so lustily for Millard Fillmore as to cause the Democratic Judge Ellis, afterwards Governor, to order his arrest for contempt of court. The story goes that cries for Buchanan similar in character had gone unnoticed by the court, and this riled Mott to the point of resistance, so that placing his back against the

court house, and drawing a knife, he successfully defied the parties sent to take him before the court.

The late Webb Austin of Lenoir, who was eye-witness of the resistance and of its reason, said that Colonel B. S. Gaither of Burke, himself a Whig, but a friend of the Court, before which he had a large practice, interfered to establish better relations between the contemned and the contemner, and finally accomplished the task in some way unknown to Austin.

Dr. Mott, like so many North Carolinians of that era, whose position, it would seem, is never to be understood either by the North or the South, was opposed to secession and the disruption of the Union, and took no part in effecting that unfortunate schism, and yet he could but feel sympathy for the brave men, his friends and neighbors, who were battling against terrific odds to make that schism good and permanent. Constitutionally intrepid, he did not fear to express his views in the very heat of war, and openly supported Mr. Holden for Governor in 1864 upon a platform looking to peace; but he rendered obedience as a citizen to the Confederate authorities, State and National, and maintained uninjured his relations with his clientage of the sick and suffering as became his profession.

The appreciation of these facts on the part of the people of Catawba County sent him as their representative to the Legislature elected under the Andrew Johnson reconstruction, and this is the only elective office he ever held. The ashes of the volcano were then warm under foot, the Howard amendment was rejected by the Legislature, and the worse times prophesied from its rejection came in the guise of congressional reconstruction and with it unrestricted instead of restricted negro suffrage.

In the face of obloquy and ostracism Mott took his stand with the Republicans, who then first organized in North Carolina. To that party, through many succeeding years in victory and defeat, he maintained a loyal allegiance. On one question only did he subsequently differ from it. That was the currency question. He voted for Bryan in 1896, though he did not support him in his second campaign, for what reasons I am not advised.

In 1870 Dr. Mott changed his residence from Catawba County to Statesville, in the neighboring county of Iredell. A controlling consideration in this change was doubtless the fact that in 1868 he had been chosen by the board of directors of the Western North Carolina Railroad their president.

His election was accomplished under circumstances unusual in those peaceful days, and after a struggle for control marked by all the bitterness and savage partisanship which distinguished the reconstruction era. This is no fitting place in which to express personal opinions as to the right or wrong of views then held by the champions of the two parties who met in Statesville in August, 1868, to decide the question of controlling the patronage of this State enterprise. Governor Tod R. Caldwell was in command of the eight State directors, then newly named by Governor Holden, Governor Vance opposing at the head of the four stockholders' directors. The battle of words was long and furious. Every point of parliamentary law was fought over. The chair was filled by Judge A. S. Merrimon, serene, courteous, granitic in purpose and ruling. The old court house was filled to the windows with representative citizens from all that fine section of country which lies between Salisbury and Asheville. The Democrats headed by Colonel Samuel McD. Tate, the then president by appointment of retiring Governor Jonathan Worth, sanctioned by the unanimous vote of the private stockholders, were in possession, which is said to be nine points in law. The Republicans were new men for the most part and small holders of stock, but with the great seal of the State to their commissions.

All the precedents were with the Republicans, but certain changes in the by-laws of the company of recent date, and perhaps made in view of the contingency of reconstruction, gave a practical veto upon the State's proxy to the united vote of the private stock. Upon this state of the law the quarrel hinged. Caldwell with all the fervor of his Irish nature threw down the gage of battle, and Vance met it in the confidence of many past victories and with scornful derision for his foe. The chair was with Vance, but not eager to be, controlling most admirably an excited body of men,

who were eager not alone to be with him, but to frown upon any who were not with him. Roman stiffness was needed by the opposition and Caldwell did not lack for it in himself, but he was not so fortunate among his followers.

There was among the State directors one name unknown to the people outside his county, but since given the fitting christening of the Iron Duke: that was the name of J. J. Mott, who upon that occasion came to the front of the stage in a marked manner. Dr. Mott had not been thought of in connection with the office to which he was then chosen, nor had he, perhaps, thought of it himself; but when the determination of the Democrats to resist to the last ditch any surrender of what they regarded as their own property became evident, the keen glance of Caldwell rested upon the placid features of Mott unmoved amidst all the excitement, and the Republican directors, following Caldwell's lead, voted him president.

The Hon. Nathaniel Boyden, then the Republican Congressman from the Iredell district, took the floor and made a passionate appeal for harmony and the completion of the road to the Tennessee line. He was a large property owner, a lawyer of State reputation, and had recently left the presidency of the North Carolina Railway to take a seat in Congress. Venerable in years and dignity though he was, his words fell upon hostile ears. Finally a compromise was arranged outside the doors by which Mott became the acknowledged head of the road in control of its patronage; but the financial management was left with Colonel Tate, for whom the new office of financial agent was created by a stock vote. Both Merrimon and Vance were continued as private stockholders' directors. Colonel Tate and Dr. John C. McDowell of Burke were the other directors of that interest.

Thus ended a sample struggle between the outs and ins of that day and time.

In 1872 Senator Pool, then in chief control of North Carolina patronage, named Dr. Mott collector of internal revenue for the 6th district in place of Samuel H. Wiley of Salisbury, who had held that very lucrative position since the organization of the State by Andrew Johnson. The headquarters of the office were

removed to Statesville, and there for the next ten years the affairs of the State Republican Party were largely administered. When Mott retired from this office, he named his successor, Thomas N. Cooper, Esq., and it is not too much to say that for twenty years the subject of this sketch wielded a power and influence in our State such as neither Mangum, Badger, Graham, Vance or Ransom ever aspired to, much less exercised.

Caldwell was elected Governor in 1872 largely by his aid. In the Legislature of that year he was of material value in bringing about the election of Merrimon as United States Senator over Vance, a result due to the solid Republican vote in union with 18 bolting Democrats. He organized and was chiefly responsible for the Liberal movement of 1882, by which the great Tilden majority of 17,000 was whittled down to a beggarly 800, in favor of Judge Bennett over Oliver Dockery for Congressman at large in that year. His home district was among the most active seats of rebellion against former political leanings, and returned Dr. Tyre York, a Republican, to Congress over the Hon. W. M. Robbins, before considered immune from defeat. While the States south of us in those years were surrendering even the pretence of a Republican organization, Chairman Mott was contesting North Carolina inch by inch with his political foes. I omitted mention of the fact that after 1876, up to and including 1886, he was the chairman of the State Republican Committee.

In national conventions of his party our subject was ever a conspicuous figure, being often chairman of his delegation or assigned prominent committee work. He was during several conventions the staunch friend of Senator Sherman for the presidential nomination, and he favored Arthur against Mr. Blaine in 1884. He heartily united with the political fusion of 1894 by which the State passed for the time from its old moorings. Never a stump speaker, this man's power with the pen has more than supplied that deficiency, for such it must be accounted in American public life.

This writer has long regarded the late Judge Edwin G. Reade as the most incisive and pungent prose writer of whom the State

can boast. If this opinion be at all well founded, then the further opinion may be worthy of respect when it is said that Dr. Mott falls but little behind the Judge as a writer of English undefiled. Unlike the Judge, his work will have no permanent place in the State's history, being composed as it is of fugitive articles for the press, letters of advice upon public questions written at the request of presidents and cabinet officers and never intended for publication, together with editorials in the party organs during his chairmanship of a party committee for which credit was purposely given to others.

The *Charlotte Observer* has frequently printed letters from him upon subjects of general, not party, interest, and one in particular, originally appearing in a Chicago magazine, but taken into the *Observer* for North Carolina readers, deserves more than a passing notice. It related to the subject never ending, never to be solved during this generation—the negro question. In that the writer took strong ground in favor of the gradual colonization of the Afro-American. In lucid manner he detailed imaginary speeches by the negro to his former owner in which the true inward feeling of the non-slaveholder or “poor white” of the South towards him was pointed out, the underlying selfishness of Northern philanthropy was more than hinted at, and the neglect of duty by the old master painted in colors touching the tenderest fibres of our nature.

It was the cry of wandering Israel denied a resting-place for her weary feet and vexed by the police cry to move on. The article was written at the instance of General Green B. Raum of Illinois, who after talking upon this subject with Dr. Mott, and impressed by his viewpoint, urged that the people of the Northwest needed enlightenment upon a question which, though frequently discussed by them, he, Raum, was sure they were in the dark about. The article was in truth an eye-opener, even to well-informed men in the South.

With some acquaintance with North Carolina's public men of the present time, this writer ventures the opinion that the philosophy of representative government is not better understood or more

carefully considered in giving judgment upon issues by any one among them than by the farmer politician of Iredell. His reading, though not voracious, has been accurate and confined chiefly to Shakespeare, Greek, Roman, English and American history. In these he is at home. Allusion is made to our subject as a farmer, and it may be observed that he is a most excellent farmer and has never faltered in his love for the fields. He is regarded as one of the best wing shots in the west, and dog and gun have a charm that yield to naught save his love for a fine horse.

At his home two miles east of Statesville may be found the best strains of blue-grass flesh, while every animal, from the tiniest fowl to the lordly bull, is selected for its blood. Though seventy years of age, the Doctor will mount no steed that is not full of fire, and he is seemingly in touch with every form of animal nature. These incidents are mentioned chiefly to illustrate the value fondnesses of this nature, acquired in early life, have in keeping green the old age of a devotee. In recent years the Doctor has withdrawn himself from any active participation in public affairs, but this by no means implies that he is a misanthrope or indifferent to the welfare of his country. No shrewder critic of passing events is to be found. He is profoundly convinced of the absolute need to our future national well-being that the South shall have within it two well-organized combative political forces, and that if the folly of successive Northern administrations of the Government continues indifferent to this need, the growing wealth of our section will ere long give us the Government to be administered sectionally in turn, and thus realize again Washington's one fear of the Republic from which our first deliverance through seas of blood has been so recent.

Is there not reason for this opinion to be found on any street corner North or South?

It is in private circles that Doctor Mott shows his best side. Reminiscent, humorous after the style of the old South, eighteen carat gold in loyalty to those he loves, philosophic or suggestive when fitting, well-bred in manner, chivalric in respect to women, he is in all things a delightful host or comrade.



In person the man would be remarked in any crowd for his tall, willowy figure, carried without stoop despite his seventy years, and evidencing great sinewy strength. A pale countenance lit up with dark eyes, quick to show anger or esteem, with a fine mouth of shining white teeth, and you have the man. Tossed for a quarter of a century on the rough seas of reconstruction politics, he has preserved his name pure and fought down an opposition unknown to the men either of the present generation or of that preceding the war. In the peaceful refuge of home he looks back on those times and the men who figured in them without the bitterness which once distinguished him. Never unappreciative of honest differences in opinion, the mellow reflex of his setting sun inclines to charity and its kindred virtues. As a striking force in the political history of the State in an era isolated from the common current of our civic life, he deserves a place among the men of mark who have for good or ill affected our well-being.

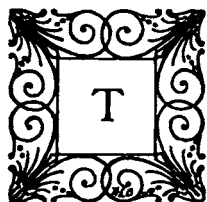
The Iron Duke, as friend and foe dubbed him, has been a hard fighter; but this writer is of opinion that never knowingly did he aim a blow to the injury of our common mother, North Carolina, whom he loves as well as the rest of us.

*W. S. Pearson.*





## ARCHIBALD DE BOW MURPHEY



THE spirit of patriotism which had impelled men to risk all for the sake of independence, and which had called forth a splendid statesmanship in the struggle over the Federal Constitution, inspired men at the close of the War of 1812 with equal urgency to consider the crying needs of the several commonwealths, to conserve their services and to develop their resources. This spirit found in North Carolina admirable expression in Archibald De Bow Murphey, born in Caswell County in 1777, the son of Colonel Archibald Murphey, a North Carolina Revolutionary officer, and graduated with the highest distinction at the infant State University in 1799, where he taught for two years. Murphey began to practise law in 1802, and rose rapidly to the position of a recognized leader of the most brilliant bar in the legal annals of the State. In 1812 he entered the State Senate as representative from Orange County, and no man ever brought into that body a truer patriotism, a statesmanship more philosophic and far-seeing, or exerted, during the same period of legislative activity, a more powerful influence on his contemporaries or the legislation of the State. He sought to awaken North Carolina to a knowledge of her own resources and character, to arouse a State pride that would bring to an end the westward emigration which was draining her population, and to profit by the universal calm to recover the position of



Very truly Yours  
A.D. Murphy.

importance in the Union which the rapid growth of other States and her own supineness were fast undermining. "Rising above the influence of little passions," he said, "let us devote our labors to the honor and glory of the State in which we live by establishing and giving effect to a system of policy which shall develop her physical resources, draw forth her moral and intellectual energies, give facilities to her industry and encouragement to her enterprise." In the lack of transportation facilities, and in the scattered commerce which enabled adjoining States to reap its profit and to control her circulating medium, he discovered the cause of her declining fortunes and brought forward internal improvement in the legislature of 1815, as a comprehensive project of State activity. The main features of his plan, as matured a few years later, were to deepen the advantageously located inlets and sounds of the treacherous coast; to render navigable the principal rivers and their tributaries far into the interior for boats of light draft; to join by canals the rivers Roanoke, Tar or Pamlico, and Neuse, and the Neuse with the sea at Beaufort, and to concentrate at one point the commercial product of the country watered by each of them; to join in like manner the Cape Fear, Lumber, Yadkin, and Catawba Rivers, and to concentrate their commerce upon the Cape Fear; to connect by turnpike roads these waterways with the more remote places and also certain rivers where canals were impracticable; further to drain the swamps in the southern and eastern counties and reclaim them for agricultural purposes. This bold, comprehensive, and well-connected system of internal improvements, equal in breadth of conception to the great scheme that De Witt Clinton was then launching in New York, was designed to provide by the best methods then known to science, and by the aid of natural advantages for inland navigation enjoyed by no neighboring State, cheap and easy transportation from all sections to the best inlets of the sandy barriers which locked out the commerce of the world, and to build up a home market by the concentration of trade at a few points within the limits of the State suited to the growth of large cities. This was to be the plan of operations, and the practicability of each enterprise was a question for

the engineers. The State hesitated to embark in the undertaking, but companies for improving the navigation of the principal rivers were incorporated or enlarged in scope and aided by direct appropriation or by subscription of stock. Numerous surveys were made, and in 1819 Hamilton Fulton, an English engineer of distinction, was engaged to superintend public works. Fulton reported favorably on the plans drawn up for him by Murphey with remarkable completeness of detail, and conducted surveys of harbors, rivers, and routes for roads. A fund for internal improvements was established, consisting of the proceeds from the sale of land acquired from the Cherokee Indians, and a board was appointed to manage the fund. North Carolina hailed Murphey as the successful promoter of inland navigation, the hope and pride of the State, and his plans attracted wide attention and admiration in the country at large. But narrow views, sectional prejudices and jealousies, incompetent management, and the pecuniary embarrassment prevalent in the State, a condition largely due to the very evils that were to be remedied, conspired to thwart all attempts. So bold and so vast a scheme seemed visionary to many, and it lacked the united support essential for success. The growing western part of the State stood most in need of projects for opening up its resources, while the east, blessed with fine rivers, and with an influence in the General Assembly, under the Constitution of 1776, out of all proportion to population, was unwilling to be taxed for improvements in behalf of the common good that the west pleaded for. The inequality of representation, which for years baffled the efforts of many distinguished legislators, provoked a demand for a change in the Constitution. The movement shaped by Murphey's proposition in the legislature of 1816 for a constitutional convention developed a bitter struggle between the east and the west which led to an unsuccessful convention of the friends of reform in 1823, and culminated in the constitutional convention of 1835. To conciliate favor, therefore, instead of applying the fluctuating fund to the execution of one or two enterprises at a time, as Murphey had proposed, inadequate appropriations were made for various parts of the general plan in all sec-

tions, and disappointment was inevitable. The costs of the work proved far in excess of the estimates of the principal engineer, while the navigation companies suffered from the neglect of the State and stockholders, the absence of capital seeking investment, and injudicious management, and several failed. The enthusiasm aroused by the splendid exertions of Murphey gave way to timidity, and after a few years the undertaking was abandoned. With the coming of railroads the utility of many of its features was lost. "But the fame of its author as a patriot, statesman and sage," said Governor William A. Graham, a leader in another era of internal improvements, "should not be dimmed by mistakes or failures in the details of its execution or the advances made in the science of engineering in a subsequent age." The expenditures on the work were amply repaid by the topographical and statistical knowledge obtained, and by the stimulation given to public spirit and enterprise. Murphey's report on internal improvements in 1815 contains the first suggestion of a geological survey under government auspices in America, and the geological work in North Carolina during this period marks its beginnings.

Internal improvement, although the field of his greatest and most persevering efforts, was but a part of the policy of commonwealth upbuilding inaugurated by Murphey, and it is his early and enlightened labors in the cause of education which serve most potently to keep fresh the memory of his name. The first Constitution of North Carolina, like that of Pennsylvania, was distinguished by a provision for elementary and higher education, but only the university it contemplated was established, and that depended largely on private munificence for support. Since 1802 successive governors had called the attention of the General Assembly to the need of schools. Governor Miller's message of 1816 was referred to a committee of which Murphey was chairman, and he drafted a masterly report urging the establishment of "a judicious system of public education," which should "include a gradation of schools, regularly supporting each other, from the one in which the first rudiments of education are taught to that in which the highest branches of the sciences are cultivated."

The eloquence and logic of his plea for education resulted in the appointment of a committee with Murphey as chairman to digest a system founded on the principles stated. Inspired by his theme with a zeal that brought all his varied talents into play, and maturing his ideas by a study of educational systems and methods of instruction in America and Europe, he submitted a plan of education, in 1817, as comprehensive, compact, and definite in detail as the scheme of internal improvement he was then advocating. Murphey made the primary school the foundation stone of his system and proposed to establish in every locality that would provide a suitable house and lot a primary school in which teachers paid by the State should instruct poor children free of charge, and others at fixed rates. "These schools," he said, "would be to the rich a convenience, and to the poor a blessing." For secondary education he proposed to erect ten academies and to divide the expense of establishment and maintenance between the State and ten academical districts. The State University, then in its twenty-second year, crowned the whole system, and liberal plans were devised for its improvement. Courses of studies, modes of instruction, and government of schools were discussed in the report with singular foresight. A board of public instruction, consisting of six intelligent and efficient men elected by the General Assembly and the Governor, *ex-officio*, as chairman, was to put the plan gradually into effect, to superintend its operation, and to manage a fund for public instruction. But Murphey's characteristic humanity carried him too far. "Poverty," he said, "is the school of genius; it is a school in which the active powers of man are developed and disciplined, and in which that moral courage is acquired which enables him to cope with difficulties, privations, and want. But it is a school which, if left to itself, runs wild; vice in all its depraved forms grows up in it. The State should take this school under her special care, and, nurturing the genius which there grows in rich luxuriance, give to it an honorable and profitable direction. Poor children are the peculiar property of the State, and by proper cultivation they will constitute a fund of intellectual and moral worth which will greatly subserve the public interest." He pro-

posed, therefore, that the State should advance into the academies and the University, and feed and clothe while there, as many poor children who gave the best assurance of future usefulness as the fund for public instruction would permit. The report of 1816 suggested that teachers be selected from these youths, who should teach poor children gratuitously at the primary schools in return for their own education and support at the public expense. The bill embodying the provisions of the report passed its first reading in both Houses, but the impracticable clause for the maintenance as well as education of poor children, which its friends declined to eliminate, caused this magnificent plan, perhaps the nearest approach to the American public school system possible at that early day, to sink into the obscurity of the public archives, where lie the other matchless monuments of the progressiveness, scholarship, and patriotism of its author. Five years later Bartlett Yancey, a former student in Murphey's office, drafted a bill which established a fund for common schools, but not until 1840 did North Carolina have a school system, and then she turned back to her statesman of 1817 for a model. An asylum for the instruction of the deaf and dumb was also included in his plan.

Murphey retired from the State Senate in 1818 and was elected judge of the Superior Court, but remained chairman of the board of commissioners of inland navigation. He resigned from the bench in 1820 after a brilliant career as judge, giving up bright prospects of elevation to the Supreme Court, in which he sat by special commission in several cases, to repair his private fortune, once considerable, but now threatened with ruin because of his over-sanguine investments in navigation companies and western lands, unfortunate liabilities as surety, and the hardness of the times. While engrossed in the duties of a large practice at the bar, he was called to render a new service to his Alma Mater, whose interests he cherished as his own. In the deed of cession to the United States of the territory of Tennessee, North Carolina had reserved the right to grant lands for Revolutionary services and had given to the university as its chief endowment from the State the lands of her soldiers who left no heirs. Tennessee now



asserted her sovereign rights as a State. Judge Murphey was sent by the university to confer with the Legislature of Tennessee, and by adroit management obtained a compromise by which the lands were divided between the University of North Carolina and the College of East Tennessee and the College of Cumberland. At this time and until the close of his life Judge Murphey was engaged in a final project for promoting the interests of North Carolina, an elaborate work on the political, civil, natural, and aboriginal history of the State. "We want such a work," he wrote a friend. "We neither know ourselves nor are we known to others. . . . I love North Carolina, and love her the more because so much injustice has been done to her. We want some great stimulus to put us all in motion, and induce us to waive little jealousies, and combine in one general march to one great purpose." Judge Murphey's indefatigable energy, his broad culture and philosophic cast of mind, his literary taste and attainments, and the ease, simplicity, and elegance of his style, fitted him preëminently for this task, and he had access to a wealth of material of which comparatively little has come down to our day. The work would have been of priceless value had he lived to complete it. But pecuniary difficulties pressed heavily upon him, and in the summer of 1824, while in Tennessee, he was overtaken by a sickness which afflicted him during the rest of his life. Twice he appealed to the General Assembly for aid in publishing his work, but it would do no more than to procure for him, through our minister, Albert Gallatin, a list of documents relating to Colonial North Carolina in the British archives in London. The Legislature of 1829 declined his offer to collect and publish the early archives of the State, and sixty years passed away before this effort bore fruit. Poverty and disease ended his brave struggle with fate. He died in Hillsboro, February 1, 1832, his ambition unrealized, his labors unappreciated.

Murphey was in advance of his age. The time was not ripe for the realization of his large plans, and he never knew the satisfaction of success. To the fulfillment of his design he dedicated his life and fortune, remarkable versatility of talents, and a com-

prehensive genius of a high order. A generation after Murphey left her legislative halls, when the State had become noted for its wretched transportation facilities and for the greatest illiteracy in the Union, North Carolina recalled his message. At the bar Judge Murphey had no superior among his contemporaries as an adept equity pleader and a master of the art of cross-examination. His manner of speaking was like earnest, emphatic conversation, but when warmly enlisted in the cause of a greatly wronged client he displayed great oratorical powers. In the breadth of his culture and the chaste elegance of his literary style he was unrivalled, and among men in professional and public life he had few superiors as a literary character in the nation. The nobility of Judge Murphey's character, his simplicity, grace, and dignity of manner, his kindly, benevolent nature, and the sad pathos of his life endeared him to all. Notwithstanding the failure of his plans and the disappointment of his life, his influence became singularly far-reaching, and it has remained for men of another age to properly appreciate his greatness and to render him honor. Murphey was a prophet, it has been well said, and receives the prophet's reward.

Archibald De Bow Murphey was the second son of Colonel Archibald Murphey (1742-1817), who settled on Hyco Creek in what is now Caswell County, North Carolina, in 1769, and a grandson of Alexander Murphey of York County, Pennsylvania. His mother, Jane De Bow (1750-1827), daughter of Solomon De Bow of Caswell, was a native of New Jersey and descended from Hendrik De Boog of Amsterdam, Holland, whose four children emigrated to New Amsterdam about 1649. Judge Murphey married, November 5, 1801, Jane Armistead Scott, and had four sons and one daughter. William Duffy Murphey (1802-1831), the eldest (A. B., University of N. C., 1821), died without issue. Victor Moreau Murphey (1805-1862), the second son (A. B., University of N. C., 1823; A. M., 1829), studied medicine in Philadelphia and settled in Macon, Mississippi, in 1835, where he represented his county in the legislature of the State, 1838-'39, and enjoyed a high reputation as a physician. He left three sons and three daughters, four of whom are living. Cornelia Anne Murphey (1806-1840),

only daughter of Judge Murphey, married, first, John Paine Carter, and, second, John Murphey Daniel. She was one of the most beautiful and accomplished women of her day in North Carolina. From her son and two daughters, children of her first marriage, are descended many of the Aikens, Carters and Worths of North Carolina and Virginia. Peter Umstead Murphey (1810-1876), third son of Judge Murphey, attended the University 1824-'25. He entered the navy as midshipman in 1831, served during the war with Mexico, and held the rank of lieutenant at the outbreak of the Civil War, when he resigned to enter the Confederate service. His gallant conduct as commander of the "Selma" in the Battle of Mobile Bay was highly commended by both Union and Confederate officers. Captain Murphey married first, Catherine R. Bancroft and had one son, now dead, and one daughter, Mrs. Theodore O. Chestney, of Macon, Ga. He married, second, Emily R. Patrick of Philadelphia, and had two children, Mrs. Frederick A. Hoyt, of New York, and Randolph Clay Murphey, of Fanquier Springs, Va. Alexander Hamilton Murphey (1812-? ), youngest son of Judge Murphey, was educated at the Bingham School and moved West after his father's death. He had a son living in 1840.

*William Henry Hoyt.*

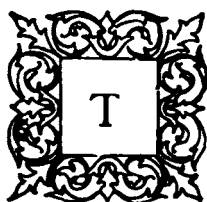




W. S. Parker



## WALTER SCOTT PARKER



HE men who cleared away the ashes of old Chicago and filled the world with wonder over their marvellous new city, displayed no greater courage and enterprise than did the young sons of Carolina, who, putting aside the dead ashes of the old régime at the close of the civil war, have built upon the old foundations a new and better State, where religion and education join hands in their great character-building processes, and the busy stir of trade and the hum of wheel and spindle mark a new era of material progress. No record of these men would be complete without honorable mention of Walter Scott Parker, of Henderson.

He was born in Wilson County, North Carolina, December 1, 1849. His grandfather, Solomon Parker, was a man of means, and at his death left each of his sons in comfortable circumstances.

His father was Theophilus Parker, a man noted for large charity and strict integrity. He was a founder and leading member of Salem Baptist Church in Wilson County, and was possessed of a fair estate, owning lands and slaves.

His mother was Gabrielle Wilkinson, a daughter of Benjamin Wilkinson, who repeatedly represented Edgecombe County in the General Assembly of North Carolina. She was of Scotch descent and possessed the thrift, enterprise and strength of character so characteristic of her countrymen. She died about the beginning of

the civil war, at a time when her young son had greatest need of her guiding hand.

Young Parker was a youth of eleven years when the war began. At its close the spirit of a man had come upon him while he was yet a boy. When he was fourteen an accident had disabled his father, and the overseer had gone to the war, so that the management of the farm and slaves was cast upon him. Upon his father's recovery in 1866, he clerked for a short time in a store near his home, but the experience of his boyhood and the conditions that followed the war stirred him to larger enterprise. As he expressed it: "The general poverty of the people in 1866 was inducement enough to stir the energies of a boy who wanted to do something." At the age of sixteen he borrowed a few hundred dollars from his father, who had succeeded in saving something from the wreck of the war, and began business on his own account at Joyner's Depot, which he prosecuted with such diligence and ability that when he reached the age of twenty years he found himself able to incur the expense of a course at college. His education as a boy had been limited to the opportunities of the ordinary country school of that period, the nearest being four miles from his home, and one year at a military school taught by a wounded soldier. Such leisure as he had from the farm and store was given to reading and study, which greatly stimulated his purpose to make life a success. In 1870 he left his business in charge of a partner, who had been admitted for that purpose, and entered Trinity College for such a special course of study as would fit him for success in the higher departments of business. The taste for reading and study thus early cultivated has proved a lasting acquisition, and his interest in the literary and intellectual movements of the day keeps well abreast of his more material concerns.

His college work done and his business prospering, Mr. Parker was now in a position to gratify his domestic tastes, and in 1876 was happily united in marriage with Miss Lucy A. Closs, daughter of Rev. William Closs, D.D. Dr. Closs was for nearly fifty years engaged in the Methodist Episcopal ministry. He

possessed ability of a high order and at an early age attained prominence in the North Carolina Conference, which soon extended to the General Conference. He was a man of large view and surpassingly fine judgment. Bishop Pierce pronounced him the lawyer of the Southern Methodist Church and the greatest debater in the General Conference. He died in 1882, in his seventy-fourth year, and is buried at Henderson. It is a distinct loss to North Carolina that no adequate record of his life has been written. Mrs. Parker was a bright and accomplished woman, possessing a large measure of her distinguished father's intellectuality. She had fine social and domestic tastes, and was an admirable helpmeet to the aspiring young man. This union proved most happy and congenial and has been blessed with four children, three of whom are now living.

The necessity for a larger field of operations induced his removal to Enfield in 1878, where success still followed upon his efforts; but his activities demanded yet larger scope and led to his locating in Henderson in 1884. Here he found a wide-open door and ample employment for all his faculties, and for twenty years he has been a large factor in the social and commercial life of the town. For a time he conducted a general retail store, but in 1890 he closed out the retail business and established the only exclusively wholesale house in the State outside the city of Wilmington. Nine years later the jobbing trade in the State had developed to large proportions, a meeting of representatives of the trade was held at Asheville in 1899, and the North Carolina Wholesale Grocers' Association was organized with Mr. Parker as president.

Mr. Parker possesses fine business sense and judgment and large comprehension joined to fine capacity for detail. These, with great industry, enterprise, and strict integrity, have made him a prosperous man while yet "in love with life and raptured with the world, and young enough to enjoy the fruits of his energy and thrift." It is worthy of note that those in his employ find him liberal and share in his prosperity. He rarely changes his business help. The men in his wholesale store in Henderson are looked upon as fixtures. Residents of the town scarcely realize that there

was a time when they were not there; and they have their own homes.

The business community has been eager to show its recognition of Mr. Parker's excellent qualities and to utilize his gifts in the management of its most important financial institutions. He was director in the Bank of Henderson until its consolidation with the Citizens' Bank, and is now director of the Citizens' Bank, Henderson, and also of the First National Bank of Weldon since its organization, and of the First National Bank of Rocky-Mount. All these institutions are highly prosperous, efficiently and ably administered, and possess the confidence of the communities where they are operated. About 1894 he became interested in cotton manufacturing and organized the Roanoke Mills Co., Roanoke Rapids, with a capital of \$200,000, since increased to \$272,000. He has been president since its organization, and has administered its affairs with such signal ability that the plant is now worth in the neighborhood of half a million dollars. He is also treasurer and manager of the Patterson Store Co., Rosemary, North Carolina, having stores at Roanoke Rapids and Roanoke Junction.

So little is known of Roanoke Rapids, but lately sprung into prominence as a manufacturing settlement, that it will not be improper in this connection to give it a passing mention. Long before the day of railroads, the Roanoke Navigation Company, first chartered in 1812, did the carrying trade of the Roanoke River, whose navigable extent, including its tributaries, the Dan and Staunton, was something like three hundred miles, being greater than was "known to be used anywhere in the United States." The Roanoke Canal, at and above Weldon, provided a great water-power. The directors of the Navigation Company stated in 1824, "There is perhaps no place in the United States, approached by steamboats, where there is more extensive command of water, and where it can be more conveniently applied to machinery. Here we have eighty feet of fall, with a volume of water thirty feet wide and three deep, from a never-failing source." The advent of railroads, and, later, the civil war, destroyed the shipping interests, and the canal was suffered to fall into disuse. All suggestions for



utilizing the canal were fruitless until a company, formed by General Mahone and Senator Cameron, undertook to re-open it about 1890. Near the same time, possibly a little later, Major T. L. Emry, of Weldon, organized the Roanoke Rapids Power Company, which constructed a canal near the line of the old one, and developed some seven thousand horse-power. Mr. Parker became interested in this latter enterprise in a small way, but sufficiently to draw his attention to the advantages of the place for cotton manufacturing and lead to his initiation of the company already mentioned. About the same time a party of Northern capitalists organized the United Industrial Company for operating a knitting mill. These mills were organized in the woods and the materials for their construction were hauled in wagons from Weldon, six miles distant. Other enterprises followed, including the damask and silk mills. There is now a mill village of some two or three thousand people, with good railroad facilities, schools, two Baptist churches, one Methodist Episcopal and one Episcopal. The splendid water-power, and the impetus of enterprises already in successful operation and those projected for the near future, give promise of great enlargement of this young manufacturing settlement.

Farming is Mr. Parker's out-door recreation and gives him greater delight than any of his business enterprises. Unlike most persons who engage in this occupation for pleasure, he realizes a profit from his investment. His only known failure has been in Angora goat-raising. In this he found neither pleasure nor profit, and very feelingly exposed through the *News* and *Observer* the fallacious theory of those who urge the advantages of goat-raising in North Carolina. His conclusion is that it doesn't pay to do everything the experts advise.

In politics Mr. Parker is an intense and uncompromising Democrat. He has not yet seen any Democratic blunder so bad as the fundamental unsoundness of Republican policies. He loves the campaign and the convention, rarely fails to attend the precinct primary, and always has a candidate whom he supports with unwavering loyalty. He asks nothing for himself but a fair tax

rate. He has been mayor of Toisnot and was an alternate delegate to the National Democratic Convention in 1900.

It is in his home and family, however, that he finds greatest pleasure. Though a member of the Croatan Club, and one of its board of managers, his leisure is given to his family and to his choice library, in which he takes great delight. His taste in reading takes a wide range. As a student and bookman he passes many hours with the old classics in communion with the master minds of past days. As a business man he is alert to know every new achievement in the scientific and intellectual world of to-day. As a man of broad sympathy, and in intimate touch with men and women, he finds their fancied experiences as represented in fiction real to his imagination. He sows beside all literary waters, and reaps a harvest of large mental culture and varied information.

His elegant home on Andrews Avenue is the centre of a bountiful and easy hospitality. His accomplished wife and daughters are active and prominent members of the patriotic societies and women's clubs, and the brightest and most influential women of the town and State are often gathered in their parlors in conference or entertainment. Mrs. Parker inherits from her father the friendship of the older Methodist preachers, and the older presiding elders and bishops of her church find the prophet's chamber always in order for their coming.

In Mr. Parker and his family are combined the traditions and ideals of the old South with the progressiveness and larger accomplishment of the new South.

Mr. Parker was asked for suggestions to young Americans out of his own experience and observation. He replied: "Industry and integrity are the main essentials for success; self-denial, hard work and good habits. Close attention to detail has governed in all my undertakings."

*Thomas M. Pittman.*



Yours truly  
Hugh Parks sr



## HUGH PARKS, SR.

**W**HEN the subject of this sketch passes in review before the mind's eye the writer is reminded of the "old oak" so often seen standing like a sentinel about the dwelling house on the typical little farm of Piedmont, North Carolina, sturdy and stately in its matured strength, and majestic in its grim defiance of every assault from mad wind or angry storm. At the end of nearly fourscore busy years Hugh Parks, Sr., in the zenith of his matured powers, resembles the oak in the solid strength and majestic symmetry of his severely built and well-rounded character.

In a scant home, on a lowly farm, cut and hewn out of the primeval forest that covered southeastern Randolph, on the 8th day of February, 1827, his tender ears first caught the sound of the music of the running waters of Deep River, on whose banks he has wrought and toiled in the battles of these eventful years. Like the great majority of the boys of his day and place, he was without the means necessary to obtain a collegiate education, and his early advantages were such only as could be obtained in a sparsely settled "neck of the backwoods" remote from all commercial and educational influences. The boy of that day never read a newspaper or a magazine, and a railroad was to him what the "navigation of the air" is to the small boy of to-day. The environments of eighty years ago—"the paths our fathers trod"—are paths

along which the teacher of to-day may wander with profit and gather figs instead of thistles for his pupils.

It was in the severe training of the farm during the first twenty-five years of his life that Mr. Parks acquired his habits of work, and during these years from occasional attendance at the common schools and one term each under John D. Clancy and Mr. J. H. Brooks at Asheboro he was enabled, largely by his own efforts, to obtain what was called in those days a "common school education." This was supplemented by the study and experience of about four years in teaching in different districts. It was in 1852 that he entered the general store of Mr. Isaac H. Foust, in that day one of the largest merchants and planters of the country, and began work as salesman and merchant. Here he continued until 1858, when, in partnership with G. W. Williams and John D. Williams of Fayetteville, North Carolina, J. M. Coffin of Salisbury, North Carolina, and his employer, Mr. Foust, he bought the plant of the Randolph Manufacturing Company, then known as the Island Ford Mills.

Here began his life's work—the erection of the monument which shall perpetuate his name. The purchase of this property fulfilled the dream of his youth. The day he assumed the management of this property was the proudest of his long life. He planted there every hard-earned penny he had brought from the farm, the school and the counter. In the prime of his young, robust manhood, hardened and severely trained by the toil of his earlier years, inspired by the confidence reposed in him by his partners (the best and most successful men of their day), ambitious to achieve success, he seized with the grip of a master this opportunity of his life, and, practically unaided and inexperienced, launched into the manufacture of cotton goods, mastered every detail of the business, and made dividends for his partners and a fortune for himself. He is now the sole survivor of that group of splendid men, and years ago became the sole proprietor of their interests in this company. He held the position of secretary and treasurer of this company from 1858 to 1903, when he voluntarily surrendered the same to his son, Hugh Parks, Jr., and assumed the presidency, in which

position he still gives to the company the ripened wisdom of his declining years.

Under his management the Island Ford Mill, a quaint old wooden factory building with about twenty-five looms and 1700 spindles at the time of the purchase in 1858, has grown and expanded in name and size until to-day it stands in the name of the Randolph Manufacturing Company, one of the strongest corporations of Randolph County, equipped with spacious modern structures of brick and filled with looms and spindles of the latest improvement. Within a half a mile of this plant stand the flourishing mills of the Franklinville Manufacturing Company, of which Mr. Parks is president and a director, and whose genius has contributed largely to its building, expansion and success. These two mills are located on Deep River, around which the prosperous village of Franklinville has been built on a branch line of the great Southern Railway. These mills, under the directing genius and conservative management of their owners, have not only made money and wealth for themselves, but have contributed particularly to the substantial prosperity of the agricultural country adjacent to and surrounding them by providing an ample market for the products of the farm, and generally to the uplifting and up-building of the whole county.

For nearly the half of a century these mills stood without a railroad on the quiet banks of the river, building slowly but surely for themselves and the county. Their stock was not heralded in the money markets. No bank was troubled to clip their coupons. No trust company was asked to accept their mortgage. They gave none. They relied upon their own resources. The judgment docket of the court was never adorned with their names. The word of Hugh Parks was as good as his bond, and his bond is and always has been above par.

These mills with their mercantile establishments, lands and other belongings, constitute his life-work, and they are the living record of that economy, energy, perseverance, honesty, truth and good moral deportment "with which," he himself has wisely said, "any young man may win success." They are the crowning evidence

of the virtues, the self-denials, the sacrifices and the struggles of a sturdy, sober and strenuous life.

It is to be noted that no summary of his achievements would be complete without the recital of two facts. First, he never left the community in which he was born and reared. There, among his fellows with whom he started in the race of life on the same old hills, he has wrought, toiled, won and now towers as the leader.

Secondly, he was a pioneer in his special line. He blazed the way. It was nearly two decades after he started before John B. Randleman, John H. Ferree, O. R. Cox, Dr. J. M. Worth, J. E. Walker, T. C. Worth, W. H. Watkins, Robert P. Dicks, J. A. Cole, A. W. E. Caple, T. L. Chisholm, S. Bryant, S. G. Newlin and other manufacturers of that county embarked in the business. While Mr. John B. Elliott, Mr. A. S. Horney, Mr. George H. Makepeace, Mr. Samuel Walker, Mr. Dennis Curtis, Mr. Benjamin Moffitt, and others, were at different times engaged in the business, none of them made it exclusively their life-work. To Hugh Parks must be accorded the distinction of being the leading pioneer manufacturer of Randolph County.

He could have gone elsewhere, as did Mr. J. M. Odell, Mr. J. A. Odell and others, and made more fame and a greater fortune; for he is built of the stuff that wins anywhere and everywhere, but it is doubtful if he could have been more useful elsewhere in the accomplishment of good for himself and his county. His work and the influence of it have been potent factors in the growth and development of the county of Randolph and in the Piedmont belt of North Carolina.

It is a great thing to live and succeed at any time, but it required superior talent to live and succeed through the dark hours and stirring events of some of the years since 1858. In some of these years there were storms fierce and destructive. Across his pathway winds, mad and adverse, swept with relentless fury. Over many an angry wave he has watched his frail bark with bated breath. The summit on which he stands serene to-day in the majesty of uncrowned age and in the enjoyment of a comfortable fortune cannot be appreciated without a count of the odds and

obstacles which marked the earlier and darker days of doubt and fear.

Two influences added to his courage at all times. His inheritance from his parents, John Parks and Sarah Parks, who were of the salt of the earth, was honesty, truth, justice, industry, and integrity in all things. Into his life on the 22d of July, 1868, there came a new influence—a helpmeet in the person of Miss Eliza Cook, of Fayetteville, North Carolina, who blessed his home with four children, all of whom, save one, have passed into “the narrow aisle.” In the twilight of the evening of his well-spent life these tender memories come back to shed their hallowed radiance over the lengthening shadow.

Another striking feature of the life of Mr. Parks is his modesty and his aversion to anything like display or notoriety. He has never held public office, save that of county commissioner. Purely for the accommodation of his neighbors, he has held the position of a justice of the peace for forty-two years. Time and again he has been tendered political honors, but no inducement, however exalted or enticing, could tempt him to neglect his life-work. And yet, while always attentive to his private business, he never fails to discharge his full duty as a citizen in the primary and at the ballot box. He is a Democrat of the Andrew Jackson class with the courage of his convictions and the conviction of his courage. In the support of his church, the Methodist, in aid of schools and all other movements for the good of his community, he is always broad-gauged and public-spirited, measuring up to the ideal standard of a model citizen. A pigmy may give a mortgage on inherited realty and start a cotton mill with open markets to-day, but it took a giant to launch one in 1858 and keep her above the wave.

History has done scant justice to the real men who have literally shouldered North Carolina since 1865 and put her on her feet. The wondrous achievements of the last three decades are not to be credited to those who have made the most noise and figured most conspicuously in all the newspapers. The student of history, who in the future shall seek the causes or forces which



have contributed most to our industrial enterprises, cannot overlook that quiet, unassuming class of our citizenship who have made possible this revolution and who are doing the real work. Hugh Parks is a leader in this class. To him and men of his class and stamp North Carolina is indebted for what she is and has to-day.

*G. S. Bradshaw.*





ROBERT B. PEEBLES

*R. B. Peebles.*



## ROBERT BRUCE PEEBLES



HE student of English history will not fail to discover that the power and prosperity of the colonial possessions of Great Britain in every quarter of the globe have been largely augmented by the Scotch race. Although devotedly attached in every age to the traditions and glory of their country, with a chivalrous and romantic love for its wild and attractive scenery, their spirit of enterprise and love of adventure has often led them to bid farewell to the land so dear to them and seek homes in other regions, where there was greater reward for their daring, their industry and thrift. They can be found in Canada, Australia, South Africa, India and wherever the flag of the English Empire waves from the rising to the setting sun. Many emigrated to this country in the eighteenth century, and both they and their descendants have ever been recognized as most desirable citizens, attached to free institutions and ready to defend them with their lives. Among those who sought our shores were John Turner Peebles and his brother, Robert Peebles. They emigrated from Peeblesshire, Scotland, and settled in Northampton County in this State. Both were earnest and unflinching advocates of the independence of the colonies. The former was the paternal grandfather of Judge Robert Bruce Peebles. His brother, Robert, was a member of the Provin-

cial Congress, November 12, 1776, and represented Northampton County five times in the House of Commons. . He also served as Captain in the Revolutionary army.

Robert B. Peebles was born July 21, 1840, near Jackson, in Northampton County. His father, Ethelred J. Peebles, was a planter. He was respected by all who knew him for his sterling qualities of head and heart. His mother, Lucretia Tyner, was a woman of great force of character, of a gentle and attractive disposition, who was devoted to the fortunes and interests of her husband and children. She ever exercised a large influence over both and contributed greatly to their prosperity and happiness. Her father, Nicholas Tyner, in his day was a man of influence. He took an active part in the Revolutionary War and participated in the Battle of Guilford Court House.

Judge Peebles inherited from his parents a strong physical constitution, and from the early days of his boyhood he manifested a love for outdoor sports. He has ever been passionately fond of hunting and fishing, especially the latter. Neither the strain of professional work nor political or judicial honors have eradicated or lessened this desire. Whenever a short vacation from work, even in later years, has furnished the opportunity, it mattered not what was the season of the year, he would gather some of his friends and carry them to his home and enjoy with them the fishing in the different ponds of Northampton County, so well known to him, with as much zest and delight as when a boy. But even when a lad he never allowed such pleasures to interfere with his habits of study or his duties. As a youth he was both studious and thoughtful. He was prepared for college at J. H. Horner's celebrated school, at Oxford, in Granville County, and entered the University of North Carolina in 1859. From both these institutions he received the highest honors as a scholar. His stay at the university, however, was cut short during his junior year by the commencement of hostilities between the North and the South. While there he was a member of the Philanthropic Society and of the Zeta Psi Fraternity, in both of which he held high positions. In obedience to what he considered to be his duty,

he relinquished the honors and pleasures of university life and in August, 1861, joined the Confederate army.

His record as a soldier was exceptionally brilliant, even among comrades who were all brave. It deserves a more extended notice than the limited space in this sketch will permit. He first saw service as a private in Company E, 56th North Carolina Regiment. He was promoted for good conduct to a lieutenantcy in the same company and was afterwards made adjutant of the 35th Regiment. He fought at Petersburg, Drury's Lane, Bermuda Hundreds, Plymouth and on many other fields with a disregard for his own life which endeared him to all who loved the cause for which he and they struggled. During the last days of the Confederacy, so full of disaster and yet of glory, he was especially distinguished. He was the last man to leave Fort Steadman on March 25, 1865. At Five Forks he won the admiration of all who witnessed his conduct, and in recognition of his services was on that battlefield made assistant adjutant-general of General Matt W. Ransom's brigade. In the army of Northern Virginia he established for all time a reputation for cool and determined courage, equalled by few and surpassed by none.

At the close of the Civil War he assumed the new burdens which devolved upon him with the same resolution and determination which he had hitherto manifested upon every theatre of action to which duty had called him. While a boy he had chosen the practice of law as his pursuit during life. He had no taste for any other profession or calling. He promptly commenced its study at Chapel Hill under the guidance and instruction of Honorable W. H. Battle, who, for many years, was one of the judges of the Supreme Court of North Carolina, and who contributed by his learning and integrity to its high renown. He commenced his professional career on the first Monday in September, 1866, as attorney for Northampton County in the Court of Pleas and Quarter Sessions, to which position he had been elected and which he continued to hold until that court was abolished in August, 1868. He practised law with great success until he was elected one of the judges of the Superior Court. He appeared as counsel

in many cases of importance, and his services were sought not only by the public at large, but by his brother lawyers, who valued highly his learning and capacity for legal affairs. No man has ever lived in North Carolina who had more completely the confidence of his clients, whom he served not only with ability, but with an aggressive fidelity which attracted both their gratitude and friendship.

He has always been an uncompromising Democrat, firm and decided in his political convictions as in all other matters. In the section of North Carolina in which he lives he has been for many years one of the recognized leaders of his party, and when a cool and fearless man has been needed in any campaign, all eyes at once have been turned towards him, and he has never failed to answer any call. Yet so broad and catholic are his views of life and humanity and so kind and charitable his dealings with his fellow-men, that those who differ with him in their political faith hold him in high esteem and many of them entertain for him warm personal regard. He was a member of the House of Commons in 1866-67 and also in 1883, 1891 and 1895, the name of that branch of the Legislature having been changed to the House of Representatives by the Constitution of 1868. He was a trustee of the University from 1865 until his election as judge in November, 1892.

Judge Peebles was married on December 7, 1875, to Miss Margaret B. Cameron, a refined and accomplished lady of kind and gentle disposition and most attractive personality, who united with her husband in rendering his home delightful to all their friends, who ever received both a most generous and unstinted hospitality. She was the daughter of Paul C. Cameron, of Orange County, a gentleman without reproach in its true and proper sense, who was respected wherever known for his attainments, his integrity and morality. He was recognized throughout the State as an unselfish friend to education and especially to the University. He gave to it of his means freely and was always ready to assist in any way to advance its prosperity and usefulness. Her mother, Annie Ruffin, was the highest type of a Christian

woman, who by her presence made society brighter and purer and by the lesson of her life elevated humanity. She was the daughter of Chief Justice Thomas Ruffin, of the Supreme Court of North Carolina, who was recognized by common consent as the greatest equity lawyer who has adorned the judicial annals of the State.

The personal characteristics of Judge Peebles are marked and decided. He never evades any responsibility, but is positive in all matters when duty requires him to act. He is absolutely sincere, devoid of cant, of pretence and hypocrisy. He is a human man, full of pity for the weak and helpless, for those in distress and poverty, and he has always aided them gladly, freely and generously. To those who know him best he stands for the highest model of physical and moral courage, and he has sustained a reputation for these virtues, with a modesty as rare as it is becoming.

One of his chief qualities as a presiding judge has been a love of truth and fair play. The penniless litigant and most abject criminal in a court over which he presides will have a trial as fair and impartial as the man of wealth and power. Born with an analytical mind, patient in research, with a memory which holds tenaciously and accurately to all the material evidence in every case, with a power rarely equalled to discern promptly and state clearly the legal principles upon which its decision rightfully depends, when elected judge he carried to the bench qualifications of the highest order. Upright, firm and enlightened judges are absolutely essential to the existence of a free government. From the foundation of our republic to the present day the judiciary of North Carolina has occupied a prominent position in the estimation of the good and great of her sister States. In later years, when the impartial historian shall review the official lives of the judges of our Superior Court, he will cause to be recorded upon the pages which shall be written for the guidance and instruction of the youth who shall come after us, his well-considered judgment that Robert Bruce Peebles ranks with the best and greatest of the Nisi Prius judges of North Carolina.

*Charles M. Stedman.*



## FREDERICK PHILIPS



FREDERICK PHILIPS was born in Edgecombe County, North Carolina, June 14, 1838. His father was Dr. James Jones Philips, a man of strong character, culture and ability; his mother was Harriet Amanda Burt, a refined and cultured woman, whose graces of character rendered her a helpmeet to the skilled physician. The influence of both parents was seen in the son, but that of the mother was particularly strong and marked.

The youth was not very robust, but as he took readily to athletic sports, fishing and hunting, and was fond of horseback riding, his strength increased with his growing manhood. But he did not grow into perfect health and strength until he had spent a year in manual labor on the farm.

He studied in the preparatory schools at Tarboro, his county town, and for several years received instruction from Mr. Winbourne, a noted educator. Afterwards he attended St. James's College, Maryland, from which he entered the University of North Carolina at Chapel Hill. He graduated from the University in 1858, and entered at once upon the study of law in Judge Pearson's law school, completing the course in 1860. It will thus be seen that Frederick Philips was given the best training that his time and section afforded.

Young Philips entered at once upon the practice of his profes-





Engr. by E. G. Williams & Son, N.Y.

*Ford Phillips*

sion at Nashville, North Carolina, and was appointed clerk and master in equity for Nash County. He had thus made an auspicious beginning in his life-work when the Civil War broke out, and Frederick Philips was among the first to respond to the call of the State to defend her rights and the homes of her people. He saw active service during the entire conflict, following Lee and Jackson and Pender.

He enlisted in the first company from the county of Edgecombe, which was the Edgecombe Guards, composed of 200 men, and from which company two companies were later formed, our subject being elected as second-lieutenant of the Confederate Guards, with T. W. Battle as captain. The company was made a part of the 15th North Carolina, under the command of General McKinney, and went immediately to Yorktown. In the winter of 1861 Lieutenant Philips was, owing to ill-health, compelled to leave the service and return home, where he remained until after the battles around Richmond, when he again entered the service as adjutant of the 13th North Carolina Regiment, commanded by Colonel F. M. Parker, which regiment was a part of General George B. Anderson's brigade and General D. H. Hill's division.

The regiment was engaged in a number of the most important battles, among which were those of Second Manassas, the one at South Mountain and that at Bloody Lane, where our subject was severely wounded while delivering the message of the death of General Anderson to Colonel Tew, the senior colonel of the regiment. It was indeed a hazardous undertaking, and our subject was compelled to crawl in front of a heavy fire from one end of the regiment to the other to deliver the message to his commanding officer. It was the last message Colonel Tew ever received, for as he arose to signal that he understood the message he was killed.

After being laid up for a number of weeks from the wound Captain Philips received in the scalp while delivering this message, he again returned to the service and was engaged in the many battles in which General D. H. Hill participated, the principal of which were the battles of Fredericksburg, Chancellors-

ville and Gettysburg. In this latter bloody engagement Adjutant Philips was with Ramseur's brigade in the all-night attack.

At the battle of Kelly's Ford, after the retreat of General Lee, Mr. Philips was wounded, having his thigh bone broken, and was permanently disabled. He was compelled to go on crutches for a number of years afterwards. In the fall of 1864 he was assigned to do quartermaster service at Richmond, but was unable to return to the active service of the Confederacy, which he loved and for which he had fought so gallantly.

After the war he returned to Tarboro and began anew the practice of his profession. On the 14th of January, 1864, he had married Miss Martha S. Hyman, and her thorough sympathy and wifely devotion became the most important factor in his life. Starting again at the bottom, and in his home town, he soon built up a lucrative practice, and became one of the foremost lawyers of his section. He began his life-work at Tarboro as junior partner of the late Honorable R. R. Bridgers. He was engrossing clerk of the Legislature of 1864 and 1865, and was prosecuting attorney for Nash County. He was a staunch Democrat, devoted to the principles of his party, true and unfaltering. Many a time he led the forlorn hope of his section with overwhelming odds against him, and he was an active worker in nearly every political campaign for forty years. In 1884 he was nominated and elected judge of the Superior Court for the Second Judicial district, and became known throughout the State for his sound judgment and sterling qualities.

Upon his retirement from the bench he did not resume the practice of law, but gave his time and great executive ability to the management of his large estate, consisting of farms, city property, and investments in various securities. He was ever active in all the affairs of life; a devoted churchman, being senior warden of Calvary Parish, Tarboro; mayor of the town of Tarboro; president of the Pamlico Insurance and Banking Company, and one of the largest stockholders and a director of the Commercial and Farmers' Bank in Raleigh.

He was ever a loyal son of the University of North Carolina,

long a trustee, and for many years a member of the executive committee until his death. He never missed a commencement occasion, and always lent his wisdom and his wit to the serious councils and to the social functions of his Alma Mater.

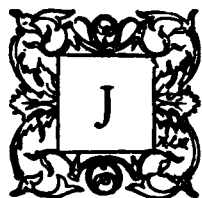
Judge Philips died at his home in Tarboro on January 14, 1905, and North Carolina lost one of her most patriotic and public-spirited sons. He was a gallant soldier, an upright judge, a successful farmer, and a useful citizen. In his home life he was singularly blessed and happy. His wife still lives at the old home in Tarboro, and among the State's most esteemed citizens are their eight children, five daughters and three sons, Mrs. Herbert W. Jackson, of Raleigh; Mrs. Hal. G. Wood, of Edenton; Mrs. Dr. John F. Woodward, of Norfolk, Virginia; Mrs. Albert Pike, of Washington, D. C.; Miss Leila Burt Philips, of Tarboro; Dr. James J. Philips, Mr. Frederick Philips, and Mr. Henry Hyman Philips.

*Collier Cobb.*





## JOSEPH EZEKIEL POGUE



JOSEPH EZEKIEL POGUE, one of Raleigh's successful business men who has been connected in an influential way with much that has contributed to the development of the material interests of the capital of the State, is one of those whose undertakings have generally been marked by success; and not only as a citizen of Raleigh has he exerted a beneficial influence, but in a wider sphere he has contributed to the promotion of agriculture and to the betterment of the State, especially of that section of which Raleigh is the centre and which is more particularly interested in the State Fair. Mr. Pogue is essentially a self-made man, and he has attained his influential position in the capital city of the State by dint of his unaided exertions, his patriotic devotion to the best interest of the community, and to the confidence which his meritorious course in life has inspired among his fellow-citizens. Coming to Raleigh a comparative stranger, he has attained an enviable position and has been of particular service to his adopted city.

His father, John Pogue, was a Methodist minister, resident in eastern Tennessee. He was devoted to his calling and performed his duties in life so satisfactorily as to enjoy the confidence and esteem of those within his pastorate. In particular was he highly regarded for his unswerving integrity, his justness of



THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY

Joseph E. Rague.

views, and his scrupulous regard for the rights and privileges of others. He married Priscilla Carter, whose father had been a soldier in the War of the Revolution, and who treasured the memory of his services in the cause of Independence and instilled into her son sentiments of patriotic devotion to the welfare of his country, while also exercising, along with her husband, a strong influence on his moral and spiritual life.

Mr. Pogue was born at Rogersville Junction, in the County of Jefferson, Tenn., on the 13th of September, 1851. He was raised in the country and blessed with excellent health and indulged in youth in those country sports which so greatly develop the frame and lead to robustness and vigor of constitution. At the time when he should have been put to school, the war was in progress and his educational advantages were limited, and he enjoyed only such training as he received at home and in the neighborhood schools. While still a youth he was employed on the farm and did steady labor for seven years, performing all kinds of manual labor incident to farm life. This work, bringing him in close connection with the laws of nature, resulted in a valuable training, and taught him practically one of the greatest lessons of life, that to succeed he must do well all things that he undertook, and that for the best results work had to be properly performed and done at the right time. The training received on the farm proved of great advantage to him in after life, and much of his success is to be attributed to the energy of character then developed and to the practical experience of those early days.

In 1870 he left East Tennessee and coming to North Carolina, located at Hillsboro, where he became connected with a tobacco factory and traveled as a salesman for it at the South. Becoming conversant with tobacco and its manufacture, in 1875 he moved to Henderson and there engaged in the business of manufacturing tobacco. His design was to manufacture the best goods, and fortunately his venture was a success and his reputation as a manufacturer of high grade tobacco became firmly established, and his sales extended not merely to the towns and hamlets of North Carolina, but throughout the adjoining States as well.

Socially, he was highly esteemed, and he firmly established himself in the confidence of the entire community. Particularly was he regarded as a man of rare business tact and judgment and one of the progressive citizens of the thriving town.

On February 20, 1884, he was happily married to Miss Henrietta Kramer, a lovely lady of Raleigh, and after nine years' successful operation at Henderson, he removed to Raleigh in September, 1885, where he expanded his business and entered on a still more successful career as a manufacturer of tobacco. Busily engaged in his manufacturing duties, Mr. Pogue nevertheless in 1889 accepted an election as alderman of the city of Raleigh, and during his term inaugurated many plans of public improvement. Particularly did he advocate the improvement of the streets which has since been so admirably accomplished and which has added so much to the attractiveness of the city of Raleigh, and he also was largely instrumental in putting the fire department on that fine basis which has ranked it among the best in the United States, and which has resulted in considerably lowering the rates of insurance on Raleigh property. He also introduced the initial resolutions to celebrate the centennial of the city, and his movement culminated in one of the finest displays that has ever been witnessed in any American town of no greater population than Raleigh. Indeed his whole course as an alderman was on a high and patriotic plane and resulted largely to the advantage and improvement of the city. In 1896 he was elected president of the Chamber of Commerce of the city and brought to his work the same laudable enterprise which he manifested as an alderman, and during the three terms that he presided over the chamber he had the gratification of observing the beneficial results of the movements he inaugurated and aided to bring to a successful conclusion. In 1899 he was elected secretary of the North Carolina Agricultural Society, which position carries with it the management of all the details of the State Fair under the direction of the president of the society. Especially has his administration been signalized by an enlargement of the grounds, the purification of the midway, and by rendering that annual gathering more attractive year by year.



The association at the time he became secretary had long been in financial straits and its operations hampered for the want of means ; but his wise and energetic action was rewarded with great success, and the gate receipts have been increased four-fold, and the crowds which have been drawn to the Fair have on some days numbered over twenty thousand. The object of the society is the improvement of agriculture, and the benefits which he has aided in accomplishing for the agricultural interest of the central portion of the State have been notable. And at this writing he has in view the submission of other plans for the promotion of agriculture in the State and advancement of that industry in which so many of our people are engaged.

Mr. Pogue has ever been Democratic in his political affiliations, and he has been active in local politics for the sole purpose of advancing the interests of the city, improving the city government and introducing better methods of administration. Seeking purer methods of local government, he made a bold, strenuous, persistent and successful opposition to ring rule. He is a member of the Independent Order of Odd Fellows and of the Improved Order of Red Men, and he has passed the chairs in both organizations, and has represented the former in the meeting of the Grand Lodge of the State and in the latter he now is the Great Junior Sagamore in the State Council. He is also an honorary member of the Junior Order of American Mechanics.

In the midst of the duties of a busy life Mr. Pogue still finds time to gratify his inclination for reading, and the books which have been favorites of his are chiefly histories. Particularly has he been interested in historical literature dealing with Cromwell and Napoleon, and with the colonial period in America. The exercise which he chiefly enjoys is active outdoor exertions, but still he uses the dumb-bells, which he finds of advantage in the way of physical benefit, and which has tended to maintain his uniform good health.

He regards that his success is largely due to his early training on the farm and the development of his character and capacity while in contact with men in active life. Especially when travel-

ing as a salesman throughout the Southern and Western States, his association with the commercial men with whom he was thrown tended to stimulate his ambition to succeed, and his experience at that time was of incalculable benefit in his business affairs.

Being asked for some suggestion for the advantage of the young men of to-day, he says:

"In this day of strenuous competition it takes the best there is in any man to succeed. The prize, however, is in reach of every young man of average physical and mental capacity. A sound body is the most valuable asset, coupled with the proper intellectual and moral training, together with a correct decision as to what occupation in life his talents best qualify him to pursue. Study the Bible diligently and follow its teachings. Pitiful indeed is the career of any man, however brilliant and successful, who forgets God and is unmindful of his mercies."

Mr. Pogue's married life has been very happy. Mrs. Pogue, educated at St. Mary's, is a lady not only of a lovely personality, but of unusual culture; and she is a general favorite in a wide circle of appreciative friends. They have one son living, Joseph E. Pogue, Jr., whose course at the University of North Carolina has gained him the esteem and admiration of the Faculty and has given great satisfaction to his parents.

*S. A. Ashe.*





*Sincerely yours,  
Lucy H. Robertson.*



## LUCY H. ROBERTSON

**F**OR many years Mrs. Lucy H. Robertson has been widely known in educational circles throughout the State. At the time of her birth the conception of true womanhood was rapidly changing. Happily, the period had passed when the only future planned for a girl was that her personality might be absorbed by one more masterful than her own by right of sex, if not of sense, and men were frankly admitting abilities and possibilities for a career once thought neither possible nor desirable. But the period of the highest type of true chivalry had not fully dawned—that period in which strong men of knightly spirit are striving to remove every obstacle in the way of her full development. In all ages the best poetry and the finest romance have implied a peculiar excellence in woman, but not until this age have attempts been made to define her sphere of action and influence, especially to warn her against what she may not be and do.

It is not too much to say of Mrs. Robertson that she embodies the highest ideals of both the present and the past. For first of all she is a womanly woman. Altogether, aside from class-room work, she possesses a broad culture, a large outlook upon life, a dignity and poise of manner, together with a kindliness of heart that make her most attractive and lovable. Evidently the materials of knowledge have been used to build up and adorn

the inner life, and the fruits of much reading and thinking appear not in an ostentatious display of learning, but in the "fine cordial of distilled wisdom." While fully equal to any occasion that may call her before the public, it is always from a stern sense of duty and with an inward shrinking she responds to such calls. Not because she has ambitiously sought them have honor and high position come to her, but because of a holy purpose to make the most of her opportunities and to use her powers, both native and acquired, in the service of her fellowmen. Because, too, she has recognized a Fatherly Providence over her life, whose guiding hand she has ever obediently followed, though sometimes with the sob of a crying child. Lacking these minor chords her life might not have been the perfect symphony it is. This type of woman Dr. Van Dyke must have had in mind when with such keen insight he penned that exquisite picture of womanly excellence: "A serene and gentle dignity; a tranquil wisdom to counsel and restrain; a fine delicacy of feeling, quick to rejoice, tender to suffer, yet patient to endure; a subtle sense of the values of small, unpurchasable things; a power of great confidence and of self-sacrifice almost limitless where love speaks the word and duty shows the task; an instinct of protection, and a joyful pride in mothering the weak; a brave loyalty to the rights of the heart against the 'freezing reason's colder part'; a noble hunger and thirst for harmony; an impregnable strength of personal reserve; and an inexhaustible generosity of personal surrender—these are the native glories of womanhood. These are the things that life, if true and well ordered, should deepen, unfold, brighten and harmonize in the perfection of a woman's character."

The bare annals of Mrs. Robertson's life make a brief story, but to follow the upward course of its events, to trace the influences that have moulded it, to catch some of its music, to understand its heart throbs, to record some of its triumphs, is to transcribe a lesson that may be handed down as a rich treasure to all other women.

In a Christian home where love reigns, where the simple comforts of life abound, where self restraint is wisely taught,

where parents sacrifice that children may have better advantages than their own, nearly every forceful life may trace its beginnings. To such a home, in the town of Warrenton, September 15, 1850, Lucy Henderson Owen was given—a daughter richly dowered in person, mind and heart. If we believe, with Oliver Wendell Holmes, that the best training begins a hundred years before one's birth, then this birthright was hers from a noble and cultivated ancestry. Her father, a merchant by occupation, was a man of great industry and sterling integrity, and her mother a woman of such strong character and remarkable energy as to make her a striking personality in any community. Teaching having been a profession in the family for nearly half a century, it was a natural ambition that the daughter should be well fitted for this work. In 1852 a move was made to Chapel Hill, and a few years later to Hillsboro, then one of the centers of the social and intellectual life of the State. In this refined and cultivated atmosphere her girlhood days were happily spent. The school of the Misses Nash and Kulloch was in the height of its prosperity, and girls were attracted thither from far and near by the acknowledged thoroughness of its instruction. For seven years Lucy Owen was one of its brightest and best pupils. With eager docility she mastered its curriculum and afterwards spent two studious years in the Chowan Baptist Institute, of which her uncle by marriage, Dr. Archibald McDowell, was president, with her own aunt, Mrs. Mary McDowell, as his able assistant both in teaching and in the management of the school. The war between the States had just closed with its impoverishing results, and the higher colleges for women like Vassar, which now numbers its students by something less than a thousand, were considered an innovation, subject to criticism and ridicule. To one of these colleges, however, under more favorable circumstances, this girl of many talents might have been irresistibly drawn. But scarcely conscious of superior mental endowments, she was not dreaming of a career different from that of other girls, and a year after graduation she was married to Dr. D. A. Robertson, a resident of Hillsboro.

A deeply religious nature has always been one of Mrs. Robertson's characteristics. Hardly can she remember when she did not think seriously on religious subjects, and when about twenty years of age, with intelligent knowledge of its history, doctrines and polity, she connected herself with the Methodist Episcopal Church South. In this church of her choice she has exerted an ever-widening circle of influence.

Professionally, Dr. Robertson stood with the highest, and as a citizen was public spirited and useful. In 1872, with his young wife, he moved to Greensboro, where they at once set up a charming home and thoroughly identified themselves with the best interests of their adopted city. Mrs. Robertson's social gifts and graces were speedily recognized, and with a rare personal charm she attracted and held a host of admiring friends.

Christian womanhood in its organized capacity was then just coming to the front, and women with ideas and capacity for leadership were in demand. The Woman's Christian Temperance Union found in her a staunch supporter, and in the Woman's Foreign Missionary Society she has, from its organization, been a strong, successful leader. For several years she was vice-president of the North Carolina Conference Society, and when this Conference was divided in 1890, she was elected president of the Western Society. This office she has held by a unanimous ballot from year to year. As a presiding officer she has been frequently compared to a bishop, with such ease and dignity does she preside over this intelligent body of women, whose love and admiration for her know no bounds.

In the meantime additional cares had come to Mrs. Robertson in the birth of two sons, but notwithstanding accumulating responsibilities she never neglected the intellectual or the æsthetic side of her nature. She had the wisdom to discern that while the mechanism of education was past, the processes of growth are not confined within college walls; that a close friendship with books makes one heir to the world's treasury of thought and knowledge, and that to eyes that can see and to ears that can hear a whole universe of beauty may speak. To read, to travel,

to indulge a decided artistic taste were her chief delights. A teacher was wanted for Greensboro Female College; her services were sought, and safely entrusting the details of its management to a near relative residing in her home, she accepted the position. In literary associations she found a most congenial atmosphere, and an aptitude for teaching made the work pleasant and successful. In January, 1883, her first deep sorrow came in the death of a devoted husband. The occupation of teaching, taken up at first without thought of long continuance, now became her life work. Not, however, till her boys had grown to manhood and had gone out to take their place in the world's work and make a home for themselves did she break up her own home nest.

For fifteen consecutive years Mrs. Robertson was a member of the faculty of Greensboro Female College. Having resigned this position in 1893, the same year the Department of History was given her in the State Normal and Industrial College, and for seven years it was held with ability and success. Her connection with the Normal, with its large body of earnest students from every county in the State, and her association with its wide-awake faculty, was a period of enlarged usefulness and influence, and of much mental enrichment, and this connection was reluctantly severed only at the urgent call of Greensboro Female College to a still larger sphere of influence—a call to become its lady principal. To this responsible office she brought the ripened experience of years, an intimate knowledge of the nature and needs of college girls, and her own high ideals of college community life. With large executive ability she also combined that infinite patience with small details which only a woman can command. The touch of a masterful yet tactful hand was at once felt on all its internal affairs, and the college began to throb with a new life. When two years later a new president must needs be found, it was in the eternal fitness of things that she should be elected, thereby becoming the first woman college president in the Southern States, and the head of the second oldest chartered Woman's College in the United States.



Not so much by the will of man as by the natural trend of events, by the sequence of cause and effect, the place was open to her. Because she was every inch a queen, and had already been so crowned by thousands of loving hearts, this throne of power was rightfully hers. Believing that this was her Father's will concerning her, she accepted the trust committed with full reliance upon His guidance and strength. Had she been able to foresee the strange vicissitudes through which the college was so soon to pass, she might not have had the courage to link her own destiny so inseparably with it. It was as much their loyal allegiance to her as love for their Alma Mater that stirred the hearts of the alumnæ so profoundly, and fired them with that indomitable faith and courage that first rescued the college from an ignoble death, and later, when consumed by fire, caused it to rise phoenixlike from its ashes.

The conditions which Mrs. Robertson has been obliged to face during the three years of her administration could not have been more difficult and testing, but through them all she has come forth triumphant. The college rebuilt on an enlarged and improved plan, with its halls overflowing with girls, attests most eloquently with what success she has wrought, and with what confidence parents entrust to her care their choicest treasures. Surely the financial limitations which alone hinder the unfolding and development of her high ideals will be speedily removed by a handsome endowment.

The value of such a woman to the church and to the State is simply incalculable. The "Mother of a thousand daughters," through them her ennobling, uplifting influence is being multiplied a thousand fold, and will extend to coming generations. Truly, "her own works do praise her in the gates." Fame she does not covet, but she shall be well content if from the heights of her own splendid attainments she may continue to reach down a loving hand to help those who fain would climb to come up higher.

*Mrs. L. W. Crawford.*



## WILLIAM LAURENCE SAUNDERS

**I**F asked to name the greatest man North Carolina has produced, the writer of this sketch would say without hesitation, "Colonel William L. Saunders." Few men in our State have ever been so thoroughly and so widely esteemed; no one has had more fully the confidence of the people, or enjoyed to a fuller extent the respect, esteem, and admiration of all who have been brought into intimate relations with him. "Indeed, the opinion is widely entertained that he was one of the most remarkable men of his day. He was a strong man in thought, a strong man in action, and he wielded an influence among the thinking men of his State that was second to none." I have quoted the estimate of a man intimately acquainted with him for many years.

Colonel Saunders came of a family of ancient lineage, and was the product of many generations of right living. His people were among the earlier settlers in Virginia, and had moved from Gloucester County to the Albemarle section of North Carolina, in search of better bottom land and broader acres, when the territory owned by Lord Granville was opened to settlers.

His father, the Reverend Joseph Hubbard Saunders, matriculated at the University of North Carolina from Chowan County. He was graduated A.B. in 1821, and received his Master's degree (A.M.) in 1824. From 1821 to 1825 Joseph Hubbard Saunders

was a tutor in the University of North Carolina. Mr. Saunders left the instruction of youth in the University for the priest's calling, and became a clergyman of the Protestant Episcopal Church. The same high devotion to duty that had marked his career at Chapel Hill as student and teacher was as marked a characteristic of the preacher; and he lost his life at the early age of thirty-nine in the yellow fever scourge of 1839 at Pensacola, Florida, ministering to the needs of his people.

William Laurence Saunders, historian and statesman, was born at Raleigh, North Carolina, July 30, 1835. He received his preparation for college at the old Raleigh Academy and in large measure from the instruction of his mother. He entered the University of North Carolina in 1850, and was graduated therefrom with honor in June, 1854. He returned to Chapel Hill the following Autumn and studied law under Judge William H. Battle, obtaining his license in 1856 and receiving the degree of LL.B. in 1858.

In 1857 he settled in Salisbury for the practice of his profession, and had already established himself in what he thought was his life-work when the war between the States broke out. He at once, in April, 1861, volunteered for the war as a member of the Rowan Rifle Guards, and went with that company to Fort Johnston at Smithville, now Southport. In June, 1861, he was appointed a lieutenant in Reiley's Battery, and went with that battery to Virginia, making a most excellent artillery officer.

He continued to see active service throughout the war. In January, 1862, he became a captain in the Forty-sixth North Carolina Regiment, of which E. D. Hall was colonel, and served with Cook's Brigade, Hoke's Division, A. P. Hill's Corps. He was twice wounded: once at Fredericksburg in the right cheek; and again in the Wilderness, where the ball entered his mouth and passed out at the back of his neck, the wound believed at the time to be fatal.

He soon rallied from his wounds, however, and served until the end of the war. In 1862 he received his commission as major; in 1863 he became lieutenant-colonel, and in 1864 full colonel

and commander of the regiment. The historian of the Forty-sixth Regiment says:

"May 1, 1864, found the regiment with comparatively full ranks, and, by the restored health of the sick and wounded, numbering over 500 strong. The efficient Colonel, W. L. Saunders, who succeeded Colonel Hall, having lent his best energies during the winter to bring it up to a high state of discipline, it marched away from its comfortable quarters on the 4th of May in better condition than ever to meet the trials and struggles of its last and most terrible campaign. On the 5th of May, in the dense undergrowth of the Wilderness, the Union Army was encountered—the Forty-sixth being in line immediately on the plank road. The record of that day of butchery has often been written. A butchery pure and simple it was, unrelieved by any of the arts of war in which the exercise of military skill and tact robs the hour of some of its horrors. It was a mere slugging match in a dense thicket of small growth, where men but a few yards apart fired through the brushwood for hours, ceasing only when exhaustion and night commanded rest. All during that terrible afternoon the Forty-sixth held its own, now gaining, now losing—resting at night on the ground over which it had fought, surrounded by the dead and wounded of both sides. Early on the morning of the 6th the battle was renewed with increased vigor by the enemy, who had received reinforcements during the night, and it was not long before the heavier weight of the Union attack began to slowly press back the decimated Confederate line. Matters were assuming a serious aspect when Longstreet's corps, fresh from the West, with Lee at its head, trotted through the weakened line and forming under fire, soon had the enemy checked, driving him back to his original position. The writer had the pleasure of witnessing this glorious scene—the most soul-inspiring sight imagination can conceive, and one never to be forgotten."

It was in that fierce and protracted struggle that Colonel Saunders was so severely wounded. For some time he was separated from his command, but soon rejoined it. The Forty-sixth from that day was constantly engaged, leaving a trail of blood along its route until on the eighteenth of June it crossed the James and occupied a position in the intrenchments near Petersburg. On the twenty-seventh of February Lieutenant-Colonel McAllister, with a part of the regiment, was detached for service in North Carolina, but Colonel Saunders, with the larger part of the regiment, remained with General Lee and shared in all the terrible

experiences of life in the trenches at Petersburg and the still more trying ordeal of the retreat to Appomattox. There Colonel Saunders was parolled, and with the failure of the Confederacy he faced the new duties and responsibilities that were thrust upon him by the deplorable condition of his country.

In February, 1864, he married Miss Florida Cotton, a daughter of the late John W. Cotton of Edgecombe County. His young and beautiful wife, a woman of many graces and of fine intelligence, to whom he was passionately devoted, died in July, 1865; and Colonel Saunders never married again. Bereaved and desolate, he lived for some time in Florida in hope of regaining his health, which had been seriously impaired by the hardships of his army life. On his return to North Carolina he settled at Chapel Hill, within the shadow of the university, for which he ever cherished the warmest affection.

During the exciting period of Reconstruction from 1867 to 1870 Colonel Saunders was deeply interested in public affairs. In 1870 he contributed to the *Wilmington Journal*, of which Major Engelhard, his brother-in-law, was editor, an article on the Holden-Kirk war that attracted wide attention. It was regarded as the strongest and most perfect article ever published in the State, and although unsigned, it established for him an enviable reputation.

The Conservatives were successful at the election held in August, 1870, and obtained control of both Houses of the Assembly. On the organization of the Senate in November Colonel Saunders was elected chief clerk of that body, and served by re-election four years in that capacity. While in this position he was engaged as associate editor of the *Wilmington Journal*, his connection with his brother-in-law, Major Engelhard, in this work being to their mutual advantage. Both were fine writers, both ardently attached to North Carolina, both active and zealous and wise. Their appearance in the editorial field was a distinct gain to North Carolina. The influence of the *Journal* had greatly increased under the direction of Major Engelhard, and now it became still more important in matters of state. Thrown at

Wilmington with Mr. George Davis and other leaders of thought in that centre of action, Colonel Saunders became greatly esteemed and admired by them and won their hearty sympathy and entire confidence and coöperation.

Towards the close of the Reconstruction period, when Colonel Saunders was doing so much to rescue the State from the ruin and degradation that threatened her, he was sought by the United States authorities, as he was said to be the Emperor of the Invisible Empire, another name for the Ku Klux Klan. He left Raleigh for a few days, going on a fishing trip out into the country, in order to mature his plans and arrange his private matters before he should be arrested. The day before his return he was found by an intimate and trusted friend, who told him that a large sum of money was being quietly raised for him, to enable him to slip away from this country and spend the rest of his life in England or in Europe, beyond the reach of the authorities in Washington.

But Colonel Saunders would not listen to the entreaties and kind offers, but returned at once to Raleigh, where he was arrested by the United States authorities and carried to Washington, to be examined by the Ku Klux Committee of Congress, with the hope and expectation on the part of those who caused his arrest of extorting from him a confession of his own complicity in the acts of the Ku Klux, or of at least procuring evidence against others.

He appeared before the committee and was asked more than a hundred questions, which he simply declined to answer. A member of this committee says:

"He was badgered and bullied and threatened with imprisonment, . . . but with perfect self-possession and calm politeness he continued to say, 'I decline to answer.' It was a new experience for the committee, because the terror aroused by the investigation had enabled them to get much information; but they recognized that they had now encountered a *man*, who knew how to guard his rights and protect his honor; and after some delay he was discharged with his secrets (if he had any) locked in his own bosom, and carrying with him the respect and admiration of all who witnessed the ordeal through which he had passed."

The political forces of that day were largely under the direction of the young colonels and captains of the war period, and with them Colonel Saunders had a personal acquaintance and an army association which increased his influence. His strength of character, his lofty purposes, his resolution and unerring wisdom, quickly established him in the primacy of political advisers. But he was very quiet. It is to be doubted if he ever made a speech during his whole career, yet his views prevailed. While Secretary of the Senate and editor of the *Journal*—during the period of 1870-76 he exerted a strong influence on public measures and contributed largely towards the rehabilitation of the State after the wild orgies of the vultures of Reconstruction times.

In 1876 Major Engelhard was nominated and elected Secretary of State, and in the Fall of that year Colonel Saunders removed to Raleigh, where in association with Peter M. Hale he established the *Observer*. Mr. Hale was also a graduate of the University, a distinguished soldier, an able writer, and a successful editor. For ten years he had experience as a publisher in New York, as a member of the firm of E. J. Hale and Son. The *Observer* under the management of Messrs. Hale and Saunders was from the first the best paper ever published in North Carolina and commended itself to the people in all sections of the State.

As a writer Colonel Saunders was excellent. He thought clearly, wrote tersely, and expressed himself with clearness and vigor. He disdained ornament and aimed to strike sledge-hammer blows in the vernacular. In the use of words, however, he was a master, and Swift himself was not his superior either in style or execution. In 1879 Colonel Saunders retired from the *Observer* upon the advice of his physician, and in that same year, on the death of Major Engelhard, then Secretary of State, he was appointed to that office and by continuous reelections he held it until his death.

When appointed Secretary of State he had already attained a position of first prominence among the statesmen of North Carolina. He had urged the construction of the Western North Caro-

lina Railroad and the development of the resources of the west; and liberal in his views as to expenditures, his watchword was progress. It was largely under his influence that the new institutions in connection with the public charities that are so honorable to the State were begun and constructed.

A close friend of Governor Jarvis, and of the editor of the *Observer*, which under its new management remained the leading political influence in the State, and strongly posted in every detail of administration, he now became in some measure the director of events; and as years passed the regard in which he was held continually increased, until he was recognized as the mentor of his party. He gave to each successive campaign the impress of his personality, and in collaboration with his active associates he largely supplied the facts and arguments that were embodied in party publications, and more than any one else he dictated party policies. Thus from 1868 until the better class of whites were firmly established in power, Colonel Saunders and his co-laborers were in the performance of as high and important duties as ever engaged the best endeavors of patriots; and not only did he have the satisfaction of the glorious achievement, but he enjoyed the homage of good and true men who venerated him for his virtues while applauding him for his wisdom.

From the reopening of the University of North Carolina in 1875 he was one of its trustees until his death. One closely associated with him says:

"In the discharge of his duties in these capacities, although for the larger part of the time a confirmed invalid and great sufferer, he did as much to 'revive, foster, and enlarge' the University, according to the testimony of the Faculty themselves, as any one had ever done. In the tribute they paid to him soon after his death they used this language:

"'From his graduation to the day of his death he was loyal to his Alma Mater and gave to her the best thoughts of his big brain and the ardent affection of his great heart. Watchful, steadfast, patient, and wise, he never lost sight of her interest, never wavered in her support, and, when the crisis demanded it, marshalled and led her alumni to her defence.'"



In grateful recognition of the services of her eminent son the University of North Carolina in 1889 conferred upon Colonel Saunders the degree of LL.D.

Soon after entering upon the duties of his office as Secretary of State he began his great work for all students of our history, and devoted eleven years to the accomplishment of the most important work of his life, the compilation of the "Colonial Records of North Carolina," a work of the greatest historical value. Concerning this work it has been truly said that it is the greatest reservoir of facts, from which all must draw who would write accurately and truthfully the history of the first century of our civilization.

The work "was done by a true and loving hand, under the inspiration of a brave and loyal heart, without the least expectation or hope of reward of any kind, and solely for the honor of the State which give him birth and the people to whose welfare he devoted all the years of his life." The spirit of a lofty patriotism is seen in his closing words, his last public utterance, in which he invoked God's blessing on his native State:

"And now the self-imposed task, begun some eleven years ago, is finished. All that I care to say is that I have done the best I could that coming generation might be able to learn what manner of men their ancestors were, and this I have done without reward or hope of reward other than the hope that I might contribute something to rescue the fair fame and good name of North Carolina from the clutches of ignorance. Our records are now before the world, and any man who chooses may see for himself the character of the people who made them. As for myself, when I search these North Carolina scriptures and read the story of her hundred years' struggle with the Mother Country for Constitutional Government, and the no less wonderful story of her hundred years' struggle with the savage Indian for very life, both culminating in her first great revolution; when I remember how the old State bared her bosom to the mighty storm, how she sent her sons to the field until both the cradle and the grave were robbed of their just rights; how devotedly those sons stood before shot and shell and deadly bullet, so that their bones whitened every battlefield; when I remember how heroically she endured every privation, until starvation was at her very doors and until raiment was as scarce as food, and with what fortitude she met defeat when after Appomattox all seemed lost save honor; especially when I remember how,

in the darkest of all hours, rallying once more to the struggle for Constitutional Government, she enlisted for the war of Reconstruction, fought it out to the end, finally wresting glorious victory from the very jaws of disastrous defeat, I bow my head in gratitude and say as our great Confederate commander, the immortal Lee, said when, watching the brilliant fight at a critical time in one of his great battles, he exclaimed in the fullness of his heart, 'God bless old North Carolina!'"

Of the Prefatory Notes which Colonel Saunders prepared for each of his several volumes it is to be remarked that they are of surpassing excellence, whether regarded from a literary standpoint or that of the philosophical historian. They constitute an enduring monument to his fame which will survive for centuries; and they will hand down to posterity the name of the author as a man of great brain, fine powers, and lofty patriotism.

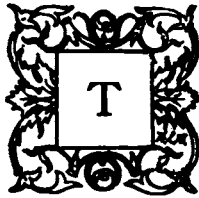
Though a martyr to rheumatism, which rendered him unable to walk and nearly helpless, and suffering still from the wounds received in the war, he would often go on with his labors in great bodily pain, never asking or receiving any compensation for his services, the only reward he received being a vote of thanks from the General Assembly of North Carolina.

The work being finished and the last volume published, the stimulant that had sustained him being withdrawn, William Laurence Saunders entered into rest April 2, 1891.

*Collier Cobb.*



## JOHN SIMPSON



HOUGH the services rendered to the cause of liberty in the war of the Revolution by Brigadier-General John Simpson make his history one of State-wide interest, his name is more particularly identified with the county of Pitt, where he resided. Indeed, he was a man of some note before Pitt County was severed from Beaufort in 1760.

John Simpson was born in Boston, Massachusetts, on the 8th of March, 1728. He was a lineal descendant of Roger Clap, for many years the captain of Castle William in New England during the early colonial period. Clap's daughter, Elizabeth, married Joseph Holmes and had a daughter, Aurelia Holmes, who married John Simpson. To the latter was born another John Simpson, who married Mary Randall and was father of our present subject, John Simpson, who came to North Carolina.

John Simpson came to Beaufort County, North Carolina, with quite a colony of New Englanders somewhat later than the middle of the eighteenth century. He was commissioned lieutenant in Captain John Hardee's Company in the regiment of Colonel Robert Palmer on the 9th of July, 1757, by Governor Dobbs. Shortly thereafter, in 1760 he was elected one of Beaufort's representatives in the Lower House of the Colonial Assembly; and while a member of that body introduced a bill (November 19,

1760) which afterwards became Chapter 3 of the Laws of 1760 (passed at the fourth session in that year), establishing the County of Pitt. The inhabitants of that section had petitioned the Assembly to set up the new county on account of the inconvenience caused by the great extent of Beaufort, and the fact that the latter county was divided by a "boistrous and tempestuous river"—to quote the sonorous language of their memorial in designating the placid waters of the Tar. Under the Church of England, then established by law in North Carolina, Pitt County formed an ecclesiastical territory known as St. Michael's Parish. John Simpson, together with John Hardee, William Spier, George May and Isaac Buck, were appointed commissioners, whose duty it was to make all necessary arrangements for the government of the new county—such as the erection of a court house, a jail, a pillory, stocks, etc. It was provided that these buildings and penal appliances should be placed on the land of John Hardee on the south side of the Tar River near a house of worship called Hardee's Chapel. This was a few miles south-east of where the town of Greenville (county-seat of Pitt) now stands.

Colonel Simpson was an officer of one of the earliest Masonic lodges ever established in North Carolina. It was called "The First Lodge in Pitt County," and, in 1766 or shortly prior thereto, was chartered by the Right Worshipful Jeremy Gridley, Grand Master of Massachusetts. The first officers of the Pitt County Lodge were: Thomas Cooper, worshipful master; Peter Blin, senior warden; John Simpson, junior warden; James Hall, secretary; Richard Evans, treasurer, and Thomas Hardy and James Hill, stewards. At a later date, on October 23, 1767, Cooper became Deputy Grand Master of the Province of North Carolina, by virtue of a commission sent him from Boston by the Right Worshipful Henry Price, Grand Master, *pro tempore*.

On November 20, 1766, Simpson was appointed register of Pitt County by Governor Tryon, and this appointment was renewed by Governor Josiah Martin on November 13, 1771.

When the troubles with the Regulators occurred during the

administration of Governor Tryon, Colonel Simpson was a strong supporter of the government, and held his regiment in readiness to aid in opposing the insurgents when New-Bern was threatened by them during the imprisonment of Hermon Husband. Simpson, however, was not at the Battle of Alamance on May 16, 1771, though one or more companies from his regiment fought in that action—notably that commanded by Captain Robert Salter.

On March 13, 1771, Colonel Simpson was appointed high sheriff of the county of Pitt by Governor Tryon. From the early dawn of the Revolution to its successful close, he was a patriot faithful to every trust. Before the war he had been a member of the Colonial Assembly; and, when the troubles with Great Britain commenced and committees of safety were organized throughout North Carolina in 1774, he was an active member of the committee in Pitt. Matters going from bad to worse, it was determined by the patriots of North Carolina that a convention or Congress independent of the existing laws should be held in New-Bern on the 25th of August, 1774. Being advised of this movement, the committee of safety of Pitt County met at Martinborough on the 15th of August and elected John Simpson and Edward Salter to represent their county in the convention at New-Bern. For the guidance of these gentlemen the following resolution of instructions was passed:

*"Resolved, That John Simpson and Edward Salter, Esqs., do attend at the town of New-Bern on the 25th inst. in general convention of this province, and there to exert their utmost abilities preventing the growing system of ministerial despotism which now threatens the destruction of American liberties;*

*"And that you, our deputies, may be acquainted with the sentiments of the people of this country, it is their opinion that you proceed to choose proper persons to represent this province in a General Congress of America, to meet at such time and place as may be hereafter agreed on; that these delegates be instructed to a declaration of American rights, setting forth that British America and all its inhabitants shall be and remain in due subjection to the Crown of England and to the illustrious family of the throne, submitting by their own voluntary act and enjoy-*

ing all their free chartered rights and liberties as British free subjects; that it is the first law of legislation and of the British Constitution that no man be taxed but by his own consent, expressed by himself or by his legal representatives."

The above delegates were in attendance at New-Bern at the appointed time. When a similar Congress met at New-Bern on April 3, 1775, Colonel Simpson, with additional colleagues, was again present. Between the sessions of these Congresses, on November 3, 1774, the committee of safety of Pitt County had met and taken action, looking toward sending supplies to the town of Boston, whose port was then blocked by the British Government. Colonel Simpson was appointed a member of a sub-committee of twenty-four to assist the vestry of St. Michael's Parish in Pitt to raise these supplies. A sub-committee of three (on which Colonel Simpson also served) was likewise appointed to acquaint the general committee of the entire province that the county committee of Pitt had been duly organized and were ready to communicate and advise with them. A general election for a new committee took place on December 9, 1774, and Colonel Simpson became a member of this also. He was elected chairman (succeeding John Hardee) on the 17th of December, 1774. The committee again met on the 11th of February, 1775, and directed Colonel Simpson to secure a vessel on which to send the supplies for the relief of Boston; another order was made, providing for an election on the 10th of March following, to choose delegates for another Provincial Congress to sit at Hillsboro. This election resulted in the choice (among others) of Colonel Simpson. On the same day that the election was held three citizens were cited to appear and answer the charge of having obstructed collections for the relief of Boston.

Early in July, 1775, an insurrection of slaves occurred in Pitt and adjoining counties, but was nipped in the bud before an uprising took place. This "deep laid horrid tragick plan," as Simpson called it, was inspired by an English sea-captain, one Johnson, and some hundreds of slaves were more or less concerned in it. Upwards of one hundred patrollers were appointed

by the committee of safety; and it was resolved that any slave who should resist arrest and be killed by them should be paid for by the county. Parties of light-horse were also ordered out to aid the patrollers; and on the day they began to make arrests, upwards of forty insurgents were landed in jail. Though none of these slaves suffered capitally, some received as many as eighty lashes, and a few of the most dangerous had their ears cropped. In reporting the affair to Colonel Richard Cogdell, chairman of the committee of safety of Craven County, Colonel Simpson wrote, on July 15, 1775, as follows:

"From whichever part of the country they come, they all confess nearly the same thing, viz.: that they were one and all, on the night of the 8th inst., to fall on and destroy the family where they lived, then to proceed from house to house (burning as they went) until they arrived in the back country, where they were to be received with open arms by a number of persons there appointed and armed by the Government for their protection; and, as a further reward, they were to be settled in a free government of their own. Captain Johnson, it is said, was heard to say that he would return in the fall and take choice of the plantations upon this river. But as it hath pleased God to discover the plot, it is of the Lord's mercies that we are not consumed. Let us therefore beseech Him to continue our very present help in every time of need."

The Whigs of North Carolina openly charged Josiah Martin, the royal Governor, with instigating the intended insurrection mentioned above. Though Martin did not admit all that was charged against him in this connection, he acknowledged that he favored arming slaves should it be found necessary in suppressing the rebellion. Indeed, this was one of the British policies for forcing the colonies back to their allegiance. At Williamsburg, in Virginia, Lord Dunmore had fiercely declared: "If any insult is offered to me, or those who have obeyed my orders, I will declare freedom to the slaves and lay the town in ashes." But the Colonists were now gaining the upper hand, and consequently the bark of a royal Governor was worse than his bite.

When the Provincial Congress of North Carolina met at Hillsboro on August 20, 1775, Colonel Simpson was among those

present; and, on September 9th following, when the North Carolina militia was organized, he was placed in his old command as colonel of the Pitt regiment. The other officers were Robert Salter, lieutenant-colonel; George Evans, first major, and James Armstrong, second major. These officers were re-elected by the Provincial Congress at Halifax on April 22, 1776.

On December 9, 1775, Colonel Simpson was elected a member of the committee of safety for the district of New-Bern (of which Pitt County formed a part); and, about a fortnight later, on December 23rd, was commissioned a Justice of the Court of Pleas and Quarter Sessions of the county of Pitt. On August 14, 1778, he became a member of the Governor's Council and was a faithful attendant at its meetings. In 1780, he had risen to the rank of brigadier-general; and, in 1782, was a member of the North Carolina House of Commons.

General Simpson's home in Pitt County was called Chatham—taking its name from the title of the "Great Commoner" for whom Pitt County was called—William Pitt, Earl of Chatham.

After the Revolution an academy was established in Pitt County by Chapter 67 of the Private Laws of 1786. Of this school, General Simpson was one of the trustees, his associates being Richard Caswell, Hugh Williamson, William Blount, James Armstrong, James Gorham, John Hawks, John Williams, Robert Williams, Arthur Forbes, Benjamin May, John May and Reading Blount. The same act which incorporated this academy changed the name of Martinborough to Greensville, as a compliment to General Nathanael Greene; and since that time Greensville has become Greenville. The old colonial town of Martinborough was several miles from the town of that name on whose site Greenville now stands.

Mrs. Elizabeth Simpson, the wife of General Simpson, died March 25, 1805, aged 67. She was a daughter of Colonel John Hardee or Hardy—we find both spellings in the records—an active Revolutionary patriot of Pitt County. By this marriage, General Simpson left quite a number of children. Only four, however, were married. These were: General Samuel Simpson of Craven



County, who was four times married and left an only daughter, wife of the Reverend William P. Biddle; Susannah Simpson, who married Lawrence O'Bryan; Ann Simpson, who married John Eason, and Sarah Simpson, who married Dr. Joseph Brickell. In addition to the four just named (all of whom left descendants) General Simpson had two sons and two daughters, viz.: John Hardee, Joseph, Mary Randall and Alice.

The death of General John Simpson occurred on the 1st of March, 1788, and his remains were interred in Pitt County, on the southern side of Tar River at the old Hardee place, a little over five miles south of Greenville on the Greenville and Washington road.

*Marshall De Lancey Haywood.*





## RICHARD DOBBS SPAIGHT, SR.



ILLUSTRATIVE of the slow growth of population and the powerful influence exerted by immigrants coming into the colony of North Carolina is the fact that 130 years passed from what is counted as the beginning of settlement till a native became governor of the State.

During the colonial period it was hardly expected that natives should attain to this dignity, that office being reserved for crown favorites. But with the coming of independence there was no immediate change, for of the five men who filled the governor's office from 1776-1793, Caswell, Nash, Martin, Burke and Johnston, neither was born in the State; nor was either of the signers of the Declaration of Independence; while of the members of the Old Congress nearly one-half were not natives, and it is not till we come to the signing of the Federal Constitution that we find natives in a decided preponderance.

Richard Dobbs Spaight, Sr., the first native of North Carolina to become governor of the State, was born in New-Bern, N. C., March 25, 1758. His father was Richard Spaight, an Irishman of an ancient and honorable family who had come to North Carolina a few years before and had already attained positions of trust and influence. He had been paymaster to the North Carolina troops in Braddock's expedition; was private secretary to Governor Dobbs; clerk of the Provincial Council, and from February

4, 1757, a member of the same; was treasurer, secretary and clerk of the crown, and in all of these positions a staunch supporter of Government schemes, as typified in the person of Governor Dobbs. He married Margaret Dobbs, sister of the governor. The Dobbs family was established in Ireland as early as 1596 by John Dobbs; perhaps its most distinguished representative was Arthur Dobbs (1689-1765), high sheriff of Antrim, member of Parliament for Carrickfergus, engineer and surveyor-general of Ireland, promoter of efforts to discover the Northwest Passage, author, and governor of North Carolina. In the last position Dobbs was not on a bed of roses; the people were democratic in the extreme and freest of the free; much of his time was spent in petty squabbles with the lower house of the Assembly over patronage, in which the governor usually came out second best.

Governor Dobbs died in 1765, when his nephew, Richard Dobbs Spaight, was seven years old; the parents of the latter died soon after; a guardian was appointed for the child, and at the age of nine he was sent abroad and finished his education at the University of Glasgow. There was evidently in him a streak of Republican blood, for despite his anti-democratic family history and training he returned to America in 1778 and became an aide-de-camp to General Caswell, who commanded the North Carolina militia and as such was present at the disastrous defeat at Camden. This was the end of his military career except some home service a few years later as lieutenant-colonel of a regiment of artillery, which position he resigned in 1789 (N. C. S. R. XXI. 529).

After the Camden campaign Spaight returned to his home and in 1781, 1782, 1783 and 1792 represented New-Bern town in the House of Commons. In 1785, 1786, 1787 and 1801 he represented Craven County. When he entered upon public legislative life Spaight was only twenty-three years of age. He seems to have become an active member, although not appearing on the floor with undue frequency. He served on the committees on privileges and elections, finance, depreciation, militia, treasury

and money, on representation in the Continental Congress and on special committees; but that the will of the majority did not sit lightly upon him when they seemed in error is proved by various protests against the action of the Assembly signed by him. He was Speaker of the House of Commons during the session of 1785; and in 1786, when the important questions of army frauds and malpractice in office by the judges were being examined by the two houses in joint session, they chose Spaight as chairman of the whole—a remarkable tribute to the ability as a presiding officer of so young a man.

In 1782 Spaight was nominated for the Continental Congress, but failed of election; on April 25, 1783, he was appointed by Governor Martin a delegate in place of William Blount resigned and was elected in 1784. While in that body he seems to have been faithful in the discharge of his duties, and corresponded regularly with the executives of North Carolina. He served on the important committee of finance, on that to devise a plan for the temporary government of the western territory;\* and on December 29, 1783, was elected one of the committee of States, which body possessed and wielded all the power of government. He was reelected for the year beginning in November, 1785 (N. C. S. R. XVII. 503).

Spaight was chosen a delegate to the Philadelphia Convention of 1787; was in Philadelphia as early as May 13, and remained through the whole proceedings. He is said by Wheeler to have been responsible for that part of the Constitution which requires that senators be elected by the States.† He was one of the signers of the Constitution on behalf of North Carolina, the

\*When the plan adopted by the Committee was presented to the Congress, it contained a provision that after the year 1800 slavery should not be permitted in any of the States that might be formed out of that territory. When the subject was under consideration in the Congress, Mr. Spaight moved to strike out that provision, and his motion carried.

†The North Carolina delegates in the Convention, although acting generally with the great States, North Carolina being at that time one of the largest States of the Confederation, yet did not coöperate with the delegates from Virginia. Virginia had offered a plan of Union that

other signers being William Blount and Hugh Williamson. He then returned to North Carolina and in July, 1788, was a member of the Hillsboro Convention from Craven County, where his handiwork was to be put through a fiery test by the radical democracy of North Carolina. Although sympathizing largely with that democracy, Spaight supported the Constitution in the convention, but it failed of adoption. Its ratification was simply delayed till certain amendments were adopted.

In November, 1787, Spaight was nominated for governor of was national in its character; by it Senators were to be elected by the House of Representatives, and they were likewise to be apportioned to the States on the basis of population. The Convention, however, rejected this provision and resolved that the Senators ought to be chosen by the State Legislatures. Then came up the subject of representation in the Senate. The smaller States insisted on equality. At first North Carolina voted with the larger States against the old rule of State equality and in favor of some equitable ratio of representation in the Senate, as well as in the House.

On this question a deadlock occurred. The smaller States were immovable. The Convention was about to end in failure. Unwilling to break up without result, the Convention, however, referred the matters at issue to a grand Committee composed of one member from each State. Mr. Davie represented North Carolina on that Committee. The smaller States had claimed equal representation in both Houses; the larger States now yielded their claim to representation in the Senate in proportion to population in consideration of a proviso that the Senate should have no power to alter or amend a money bill. Such was the compromise agreed on by the Committee. It was very distasteful to the larger States. North Carolina, however, abandoned her association with the larger States and voted with the smaller ones and carried the day. Thus it was that North Carolina, by throwing her voice in favor of an equal representation in the Senate, broke the deadlock and rendered it possible for the Constitution to be framed. Her action restored in a vital point the Federal system based on State equality. It preserved the sovereign character of the States and perpetuated the dogma of State's rights, and set the key-stone in the arch which has supported the liberties of this country and prevented consolidation.

On the floor of the Convention Mr. Williamson was the most active of the North Carolina delegation, but Mr. Spaight exerted a strong influence and doubtless contributed particularly to this important action which resulted in the framing of the Federal Constitution.

the State, but the Federalist Party was still in power, and while he had acted with them in the matter of the Constitution he was still too much of a Republican to suit the conservatives, and Samuel Johnston was chosen. On the coming of the State into the new union in 1789 he was also nominated for senator, but failed again for the same reasons as in 1787.

These continued labors had undermined the health of Spaight which was never robust, and he retired for the time from public life. The next four years were spent largely in efforts to bring back life and strength by travel in the West Indies and other mild climates, but while he was in a measure successful he never again enjoyed perfect health.

He again represented New-Bern in the House of Commons in 1792, and was by that Assembly chosen governor. He succeeded Alexander Martin and was in turn succeeded in 1795 by Samuel Ashe. In 1793, while governor, he was elected and served as elector for president and vice-president. It was during his administration that the Assembly first met in Raleigh, and that place became the fixed capital of the State. The Indians in Buncombe County also gave trouble, and he was called to face the question of neutrality in the threatened war between France and England. He issued a proclamation of neutrality on September 25, 1793, and caused certain privateers, then being fitted out in Wilmington, to be seized. He was thus brought into conflict with Bloodworth, and Hill, United States district attorney, but his position was sustained by the Federal authorities.

After a few years in private life he was elected a representative in Congress to fill the unexpired term of Nathan Bryan, deceased, and took his seat December 10, 1798 (3d sess., 5th Cong.). He was reelected to the sixth Congress, 1799-1801, but his feeble health during these years prevented him from taking an active part in the proceedings. When the contested presidential election of 1801 was thrown into the House of Representatives, Spaight with five of the other North Carolina representatives voted for Jefferson; the other four voted for Burr. At the end of the sixth Congress (March 4, 1801) he returned

home and declined reëlection. But the Republican Party was now in power, the Federalists were in desperate straits, and party spirit was at its highest. Spaight was the recognized leader of the Republicans in the New-Bern section, and John Stanly of the Federalists. Spaight was elected to represent Craven County in the State Senate in 1801; Stanly succeeded him as member of the Federal Congress. There were frequent discussions between these leaders; these became personal and bitter; Stanly charged Spaight with dodging under plea of ill health when matters of grave import, like the alien and sedition laws, came up in Congress. Spaight replied in a handbill, which caused Stanly to send a challenge. It was accepted and the contestants met on the outskirts of New-Bern on Sunday afternoon, September 5, 1802. On the fourth fire Governor Spaight was mortally wounded and died the next day. Criminal proceedings were begun against Stanly; he applied to the Governor for pardon, justifying his action. Stanly later attained positions of honor and died in 1834.

Governor Spaight married about 1795 Miss Mary Leach, of Holmesburg, Pa. They had two sons: Richard Dobbs Spaight, Jr., who also became governor, and Charles B. Spaight, and a daughter, Margaret, who married Honorable John R. Donnell. The sons died unmarried, but there are living descendants throughout the female line.

That Spaight was republican to the core is evinced by his entering the American army when all previous training and personal history would have carried him to the other side, and by his espousal of the interests of the new radical party when offices and rewards seemed bound up with the conservatives; that he was a man of ability is clearly shown by the numerous offices filled and by the early age at which they were attained. He performed always faithfully and well his duty as he saw it, and there is no stain on his public or private character.

*Stephen B. Weeks.*



## RICHARD DOBBS SPAIGHT, JR.

**T**HE State of North Carolina has had two governors—father and son—who bore the name Richard Dobbs Spaight; and in the maternal line they were descended from a sister of Arthur Dobbs, one of the royal governors. The family of Spaight, like that of Dobbs, was settled in Ireland. Sketches will be found elsewhere in this work of the elder Governor Spaight, and also of Governor Dobbs.

Richard Dobbs Spaight, the younger, was born in the town of New-Bern in the year 1796. When he was only six years old his father died (September 6, 1802) in consequence of a wound received the preceding day in a duel with the Honorable John Stanly. The duel between these two gentlemen was the outgrowth of a political controversy.

The younger Spaight received his preparatory education in the schools of New-Bern, and afterwards entered the University of North Carolina. From the latter institution he graduated in 1815. Later he took up the study of law; and, in due time, received his license as an attorney.

In 1819 Mr. Spaight sat as a member of the North Carolina House of Commons from his native county of Craven; and was State Senator therefrom in 1820, 1821 and 1822. Shortly thereafter he was elected to the Eighteenth Congress of the United States, his term extending from December 1, 1823, till March 3,



1825. In the same year that he retired from Congress, he was again elected State Senator from Craven County, and served continuously from 1825 till 1834. Twice during his career in the State Senate—in 1828 and 1830—he was placed in nomination for Speaker; but the honor on the first occasion fell upon a gentleman with a surname somewhat similar to his own—the Honorable Jesse Speight—and the Honorable David F. Caldwell was elected in the second instance.

In the State Constitutional Convention of 1835, the representatives from Craven County were Richard Dobbs Spaight and William Gaston. In that body Mr. Spaight was chairman of the committee which prepared and submitted rules for the government of the Convention; and was one of those who voted to repeal that portion of the Constitution which, in terms, prohibited Roman Catholics from holding office—though this disqualifying clause had always been a dead letter, as shown by the political honors heaped upon Thomas Burke, William Gaston and other Roman Catholics, at different times in our State's history before the Constitution was amended in 1835.

The General Assembly elected Mr. Spaight governor of North Carolina in 1835, and he was duly inaugurated on the 10th of December in that year. He was the last governor elected by the Legislature. He served as governor a little more than one year, until December 31, 1836, when his successor, Edward B. Dudley (the first governor elected by popular vote) was sworn in. In this first contest before the people Spaight was the opposing candidate to Dudley, but was defeated.

Governor Spaight took little part in politics after his retirement from the executive chair. Returning to New-Bern, he there practised law until his death, which occurred on the 2d of November, 1850. He was never married.

News of the death of Governor Spaight having reached Raleigh on the 21st of November, the Legislature adjourned out of respect for his memory, in pursuance of the unanimous passage of a set of resolutions introduced by Senator William B. Shepard as follows:

*Resolved:* By the Senate and House of Commons, That the members of the present Legislature have heard with deep sensibility of the death of Richard Dobbs Spaight, one of the Governors of the State of North Carolina, and the last under her old Constitution.

*Resolved:* That in testimony of our respect for one who has filled the high position of Chief Magistrate of this Commonwealth, we will now adjourn.

*Resolved:* That a copy of these resolutions, signed by the Speakers of the Senate and House of Commons, be forwarded to the family of the late Governor Spaight as a testimony of our sympathy in their affliction."

Governor Spaight was a zealous member of the Masonic Fraternity and often attended sessions of the Grand Lodge. He was well posted on Masonic law, and an indefatigable worker on committees. From December 14, 1830, till December 17, 1832, he was Grand Master of the Grand Lodge.

*Marshall De Lancey Haywood.*





Gaurs Truly  
R. H. Speight

language and habits of the flowers and the birds. At home his hours were chiefly devoted to reading, a habit which, becoming stronger as he advanced in life, has had no little to do with his success.

His early school life was interrupted by the war between the States. At the age of seventeen he laid aside his books to assume the musket. In April, 1864, he entered the Army as a corporal in Company K., Seventy-first North Carolina Regiment. His regiment participated in the battle of South West Creek, below Kinston, and in the battle of Bentonville. Typhoid fever prevented his being present at the surrender of General Johnston.

Upon his recovery from the fever, Dr. Speight resumed his preparatory studies, and, after completing them, entered the University of North Carolina. Here he spent one and a half years and then entered upon his professional studies at the University of Maryland. He received his degree in 1870, returned to North Carolina and settled on Swift Creek, in Edgecombe County, in the midst of a fine farming section and delightful social life. The next year he was married to Miss Margaret Powell, daughter of Mr. Jesse Powell, a prominent citizen of the county and one of Dr. Speight's neighbors. Their home, famous for its charming hospitality, soon became the centre of a delightful social life.

Dr. Speight has led an active, arduous life as a practicing physician, and has earned well-deserved success in his profession, of which he is a close and constant student. No drive is too long, no weather too severe, for him to attend to its exacting duties, and no patient is too humble to receive his most careful attention. He is a member of the Edgecombe County Medical Society, of which he has been several times president; an honorary member of the Wilson County Medical Society, and a member of the State Society, of which he has been vice-president and a member of its board of censors.

Dr. Speight has large farming interests. His farms lie on Swift Creek and are among the most fertile, as well as among the best cultivated in the State. Cotton, corn, tobacco and peanuts are produced in large quantities. He brings the same degree

of intelligence and study into his farming that he does into the practice of his profession, and consequently realizes large dividends from his investments.

As president of the Edgecombe County Farmers' Alliance, and as a prominent and active member of the State Farmers' Alliance, he has contributed no little to the development of the agricultural interests of North Carolina. His associates have recognized his services to the agricultural interests of the State by electing him in August, 1905, vice-president of the North Carolina Farmers' Alliance, and a delegate to the National Farmers' Congress at its annual meeting in Richmond. He is president of a cotton seed oil mill located near his farm, and has managed it with a considerable degree of success. The mill was erected largely through his influence and energy and has proved a successful enterprise, contributing much to the upbuilding of the immediate section in which it is operated.

But if there is anything in which Dr. Speight finds more interest than in the practice of medicine, it is in politics. In his political career he has done signal service to his county and to his State. An ardent Democrat in the larger meaning of the word, as well as in its party significance, his ardor finds vent in political service to the whole people regardless of party affiliation. He made his first essay into political life in 1885, when he was nominated by his party as a candidate for the State Senate from Edgecombe County. Defeated at the polls, he returned again to the contest in 1890 and was elected to the Senate by a majority of three hundred. His services in the Legislature were creditable to himself and acceptable to his constituents, so that in 1898 when political conditions in the State called her very best talent to the General Assembly, they rallied around Dr. Speight and sent him again to represent them. During this session he added greatly to his reputation as a wise and conscientious representative. Among the important services he rendered the State, two deserve especial mention. As chairman of the committee on Insane Asylums, he prepared and introduced the bill to revise, amend and consolidate the insanity laws of the State, a much

needed measure, which, after considerable debate, passed both houses by large majorities. During the discussion, Dr. Speight's work received hearty commendation from his associates. The other service mentioned was the introduction of the bill to erect a memorial to Senator Vance. Dr. Speight's bill carried an appropriation of \$3,000 for the erection of a statue of the great war governor in the capitol square, but with his consent it was amended so as to increase the sum appropriated to \$5,000. The bill as amended passed both Houses by rising votes. The president of the Senate appointed Senator Speight a member of the committee to select the statue. The visitor to Raleigh cannot fail to be impressed with the good taste and fidelity with which the committee fulfilled its duty. If the example thus set by Dr. Speight and his associates in honoring the memory of one of North Carolina's great sons shall be followed by future legislatures, this service will entitle him and them to the gratitude of the patriotic citizens of the State. Few, if any, States have been more backward in erecting memorials to their distinguished leaders than North Carolina; yet there is no other way in which a State can so effectively stimulate in her sons a worthy and proper ambition to patriotic public service, a sentiment which is the true foundation of success in a Republican Government. The people of his county showed their appreciation of his service in the Senate by reëlecting Dr. Speight to the General Assembly of 1901. During this session he again served as chairman of the committee on Insane Asylums.

Dr. Speight's services to the State have not been confined to his legislative career. He was appointed by Governor Elias Carr a director of the North Carolina Insane Asylum and served on the board for six years. In 1900 he was reappointed by Governor Russell, but, as he was a member of the General Assembly, declined to serve. In the spring of 1905 he was appointed a member of the board of directors of the State Prison.

In 1890 he was a delegate from North Carolina to the National Convention of the Democratic Party.

Dr. Speight's private life has been singularly happy. He is

father of a large family, twelve children having been born to him, eleven of whom are living. These are the children of his first wife, whom he lost after a married life of twenty-three years. In 1896 he was married to Miss Margaret Whitefield, daughter of George W. Whitefield, who was a prominent lawyer of Edgecombe, and later of Wilson County. They have no children. Their home is one of those ideal Southern homes that one rarely finds except in novels. A large, roomy, rambling house, situated in a beautiful grove, surrounded by green pastures and broad fields, it is known far and wide for its open and enticing hospitality.

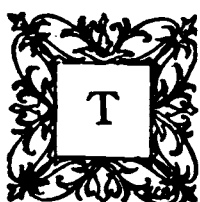
Dr. Speight is fond of outdoor life. His favorite sport is following the hounds, and he keeps a pack constantly about him. His open-air life has developed the delicate boy into a robust man of great physical endurance, active, energetic, persevering and determined. It has taught him the value of close and accurate observation, so that he is well versed in the habits of nature. But with it all, he is very uncommunicative, a fact that produces a little surprise when one discovers behind his silence a fund of quiet humor, none the less striking because it is altogether unexpected. He takes an active but not officious interest in the welfare of his neighbors, to whom he is always ready to extend a helping hand whenever he can be of service. These habits of life and qualities of character coupled with a strong love of home and home-life have been the foundation upon which his success has been built.

*R. D. W. Connor.*



## JOHN WALTER STEPHENS

"Under the influence of such feelings, and impelled by fanaticism and love of power, they would not stop at emancipation. Another step would be taken—to raise them to a political and social equality with their former owners—by giving them the right of voting and holding office."—John C. Calhoun, in 1849.



THE attitude of the people of the South towards the Union at the end of the war was affected, more or less, by the political antecedents of individuals. Those who believed secession to be a method of separation authorized by the Federal Constitution felt that they had done their best, their whole duty, and now preferred submission to prolonging what was necessarily a desperate and hopeless struggle. Those who had regarded that dogma as an unjustifiable political heresy accepted its final overthrow with more equanimity. Both classes, however, welcomed peace, not with glad hearts, but with contented resignation, looking to the future with an anxiety not unmingled with hope, and determining with God's help to make the best of conditions which they could not control. The soldier, too, welcomed peace. To him it was a cessation of the hardships, privations, and dangers to which he had been hourly exposed, and to his kinsfolk it brought relief from the terrible strain of a continuous anxiety about the loved ones at the front. Certainly all these classes desired and hoped for the reestablish-



ment of civil government, and that could be expected only in the Union. There is no possible room for doubt that they were wholly sincere in accepting the situation and attempting to accommodate themselves to it. There was no pretence of a revived love for the Union. They hoped that with justice and fair treatment by their conquerors it might come later. Now it was a sighing for peace and an opportunity to rehabilitate their fortunes. They would not have been surprised at some proscription among them, indeed rather expected it. They never once presumed to hope that they could take up the thread of their political life right where they had broken it four years before. They did not think they could become immediately an active part of that government which they had fought to destroy. "The people of North Carolina," said their representatives in Legislature assembled December 9, 1865, "are loyal to the Government of the United States, and are ready to make any concessions not inconsistent with their honor and safety for the restoration of that harmony upon which their prosperity and security depend."

The negro, intoxicated with his new-found freedom, embraced it as bringing to him life without work and without the control of the dominant white man. He loved to realize it by severing old ties, by changing his name, by moving from place to place, and by insolently, in season and out of season, announcing that he was as good as any white man, a doctrine taught him by his liberators. In this, truly, was the beginning of evils, which, though in a modified form, continue until this day. For him, with a child's intellect and a child's experience of the world united with a man's strength and a man's passions, there must be an era of tutelage before he should be fitted for the duties of citizenship. Could the old master, between whom and him were many ties of affection and gratitude, be trusted to train and guide him in the affairs of this world? Could the Southern churches, always interested in his moral and religious welfare, be trusted with his moral and religious training? No, said the radicals; his friends were at the North, his enemies at the South. Converting John C. Calhoun's prophecy of 1849 into history by using the

past, instead of the future, tense, "Owing his emancipation to the people of the North, the negro regarded them as friends, guardians and patrons, and centered all his sympathy in them. The people of the North did not fail to reciprocate, and favored him instead of the whites."

The first outcome of this feeling was the Freedman's Bureau, a benevolent mistake, tending more to intensify evil conditions than to alleviate them, causing the negro to look more and more to the North for aid and less and less to his neighbors of the South. In some instances the officer in charge of a local bureau was a man of intelligence and character, who realized the delicate responsibilities of his position and sought to do justice between white and black; but this seemed to render him obnoxious to the powers that were, and he was soon removed. Others were little-souled tyrants, bent on humiliating the whites, as they pandered to the more dangerous passions of the negroes. All this, however, was endurable. It to some extent might have been expected. Something must be allowed to the smaller passions of the conquerors. The souls of many men are so pent in the narrow limits of self-love that there is no room for magnanimity. It is a gift of God only to the truly great. So the South did not expect its conquerors to be magnanimous; it did hope that they would be wise. The thrusting of unlimited negro suffrage upon it then was a bitter disappointment as well as a terrible humiliation. It made of government a curse instead of a blessing, a source of corruption instead of a foe to corruption.

I do not assert that the South had a monopoly of virtue, and the radicals at the North a monopoly of hatred. There were extremists at the South, too; irreconcilables, men whose advice was dictated wholly by their passions, so was as wholly unwise. The essential difference between the sections is to be found in this—the radicals at the North were the predominant element, whereas in the South the extremists were a small and un influential minority. This arose not from any dissimilarity in the characters of the two peoples, but solely because one was the conqueror and the other the conquered. With the latter occupying

to some degree the position of a suppliant, cautious counsels must prevail. The white race of the South had its defects, but it was not sordid. Its long association with an inferior race which it held in bondage tended to make it proud, self-sufficient, and sometimes overbearing, if not cruel. But nowhere in the world was the white man so free, so independent, so sensitive to any encroachments upon his natural or political rights, as in the South before the war. When, therefore, Congress made the recent slave the political master of this proud, this self-reliant, this sensitive race, it established a slavery more corrupting, more debasing, more cruel than that which had recently been abolished by constitutional amendment. The evils resulting from such a policy were so evident and so far-reaching that the leaders in Congress could not have adopted it unless they had first been blinded by fanaticism, by hatred, or by lust for political power.

The news of the perpetration of this infamy, as they called it, was received by the people of North Carolina with intense bitterness. What should they do? The vilest negro brute who stood upon the street corners and crowded ladies off the sidewalk, lest they should come into contact with his bestial person, could vote, while General Lee and Governor Vance and thousands of the best citizens could not. What could they do? To fight was no longer possible. Expatriate themselves? They were poverty-stricken, their property, if they owned any, burdened with mortgages, and they could take nothing with them. Besides, was it not their country, their home, won by the blood or sweat of their ancestors? Could they bear with patience the thought that these negroes, these slaves but of yesterday, African barbarians, who now were their political equals and absorbing to themselves the lion's share of all public places and public utilities, should also be looking forward to the time when they would become the social equals of their wives or daughters or sisters? It was then that the Ku Klux Klan (I use the term generally) appeared in the State, and it was welcomed by some, as, if not a solution of the problem, certainly tending to ameliorate conditions.

This organization, arrogating to itself as it did the power of

punishment and of life and death, would under normal conditions have been a deadly threat to the peace and welfare of the community, and as such all the power of the Government should have been exerted to destroy it. The excuse for its existence then must be found in the conditions which gave rise to it. The negro (I repeat), yesterday a docile slave, to-day a political master and wild with the delusion that, at last, he had the white man at his feet!—were ever conditions so maddening to a proud and high-spirited race as they were to the people of the South at that period? But this was not all. An ignorant and corrupt majority has never yet lacked unprincipled leaders. Profligates from the North joined profligates from the South (carpet-baggers and scalawags) in the great feast which the wise men of the day had spread for them. They brought the Union League with them, ostensibly to protect the negro in the enjoyment of his civil and political rights, but really to make of him a political unit wholly under the control of these profligate adventurers. It became an instrument for the intimidation (destruction in some instances) of a small class of negroes who were not only willing but anxious to confide in their former masters. But the Union League was more than an efficient political machine. It became a military organization in which the negroes were armed and drilled and taught that they had nothing to fear from the whites, that the United States Government would sustain and defend them, do what they might; that their friends were in office and would continue in office; that the whites, far from having any rights which they were bound to respect, were a conquered and degraded race, whose lands were ultimately to be taken from them and parceled out among the loyal negroes. The effect on the credulous, untaught African mind was powerful. All this before the organization of the Ku Klux. An open organization among the whites, even for protection, was an impossibility. It would have been heralded at the North as disloyal. It would have brought about numerous conflicts between the armed whites and the armed blacks, resulting in a race war whose horrors can scarcely be imagined, with interposition of the Federal Government not to be avoided.

But the Klan with its secrecy, its weird methods and disguises, its gruesome symbols and its appalling midnight raids, could intimidate and control the negro, and administer justice to criminals who otherwise would escape, without drawing upon the people at large the vengeance of the Federal Government.

Arguments like these appealed to many good men and they became members of the Klan, while others as patriotic, but more conservative, declined to have anything to do with an organization whose mission was confessedly illegal.

It was in 1868 that signs of its existence began to appear in Orange, Alamance and Caswell Counties, weird warnings to the obnoxious, persistent rumors of ghostly night-riders, who after riding about would disappear at some old cemetery; notices tacked up, decorated with skull and crossbones and signed by some potentate of the infernal regions; rough board coffins left at the house over night of some loud-mouthed and insolent negro leader, etc., all intended to excite the superstitious fears of the most superstitious of all semi-civilized races. Upon the negroes at large the effect was immediate. Their tone became milder, their approaches to the more respectable whites more respectful. The drunken street loafer was converted into a busy laborer, the politician ceased to harangue crowds of idle negroes on the streets, and ladies could pass along them without danger of insult. But this improvement was not agreeable to the leaders of the negroes. All the power of the Union League was invoked to uphold the courage of its members. To do this they must be convinced that what they had seen or heard was not supernatural, but only white men whom they knew, masquerading for effect. Night after night the bolder spirits among them were put as spies about the home of any suspected white man. Soon, however, this was discovered, and the watchers were driven off. This counter movement among the negroes must be checked, so some of the negro leaders were taken out of their houses at night and whipped by disguised horsemen. To this point there is no doubt that the Klan had the situation well in hand. Then the white radicals suggested to the negroes retaliation, and the burn-

ing of barns and other buildings commenced, to be followed, however, almost immediately by the swift justice of these midnight executioners. The barn-burners were either shot or hung. The next step in this progressive war was a movement among the Ku Klux themselves to rid the section of the obnoxious white radicals who they had good reason to believe were the instigators of this retaliation or had taken an active part in the attempt to make the negro the political master of the white man.

Judge Albion W. Tourgee was once condemned by the Klan, but the condemnation was reversed at the insistence of one of the most influential leaders of the organization, and he was not molested. T. M. Shofner, of Alamance (author of the Shofner Act), was condemned, and he saved his life only by fleeing. John W. Stephens, of Caswell, was condemned, and after repeated warnings executed.

"John Walter Stephens was born in Guilford County October 14, 1834. His parents were good people, comfortably situated on a farm, and were consistent members of the Methodist Church. His father died when he was about eighteen years of age, leaving a wife, four sons, and two daughters. Walter, with his brothers, lived on the farm and supported the family. A few years later he learned to make harness, and went into the harness business. His education was of a very ordinary sort, for he had only the advantages of the common schools. He studied a great deal at home, however. When he grew into more matured life he often mourned his lack of education, and he used to say that was what every poor man owed to slavery."

Later he took up his residence in Wentworth, where his first wife died, and he married again. About this time he engaged in the tobacco business and became agent and collector at Yorkville, South Carolina, for a manufacturer named Powell.

He was residing in North Carolina at the outbreak of the war, but refused to volunteer, and saved himself from conscription by securing a petty office under the Confederate Government.

It was after his return to Wentworth that he killed two of a neighbor's chickens, which were trespassing upon his grain, and

carried them to the wife of that neighbor and offered them to her, an offer which she in the heat of temper declined. He then took them back to his own house and had them cooked for his dinner. That afternoon the neighbor, Mr. Ratcliffe, had him arrested for larceny and he was bound over to court. Being unable to secure the bond, he spent one night in jail. As soon as he was released the next day he armed himself with a stick and a pistol, went across to Ratcliffe's store and attacked him, striking him a heavy blow on his head. A Lieutenant Baker, standing by, attempted to interfere, and Stephens, drawing his pistol, opened fire, wounding Baker (fortunately a scalp wound) and a young fellow named Law, a son of a magistrate, in an arm. It was this episode that afterwards gave him so much trouble when he became a politician, causing him to be dubbed by his foes Chicken Stephens. He may be wholly absolved from any felonious intent in the transaction (I have given his own story), still the episode with its sequel throws some light on the immediate cause of his death, and I relate it for what it is worth.

In 1866 he removed to Yanceyville, in Caswell County, and, realizing his opportunity, when the suffrage was conferred upon the negro he became a Republican.

Conditions in Caswell at that time were different from those in any one of the group of counties immediately about it. While the negroes were in a majority, they were influenced by Wilson Cary to divide offices with the whites, and the latter generally were allowed the county commissioners and one member of the House of Representatives, Wilson himself being the other member. He was an old-line negro, and out of politics was probably as valuable a citizen as could be found among his race. Stephens, however, soon became a political power in the county, head of the Union League and general organizer of the negroes.

It is difficult for one who did not live at the period to understand the virulence of party animosity at that time. But when he realizes that each campaign was a contest for supremacy between the races, the difficulty vanishes. White men like Stephens, then, who organized, controlled and directed the political strength

of the negroes, in opposition to the whites, was by them regarded as the very worst of traitors and the vilest of criminals—just as it would be now if there should be a war between the races and a white man should lead the negroes to the destruction of his own race. John W. Stephens was one of the shrewdest and boldest and most vindictive of the negro leaders. He it was who in the Union League meetings suggested to the negroes retaliation upon the whites. He it was who organized a system of spying upon those white men who were thought to be of the Klan, and he was himself the active agent of the government in the attempt to destroy the Klan in the county of Caswell. In this sense, it became a life-and-death struggle between him and that organization. After numerous warnings and opportunities to make his escape or change his manner of life, he was condemned, and agents to execute the decree of the Klan were appointed.

There was a Democratic meeting in the court house at Yanceyville, May 21, 1870. Squire Hodnett was speaking and Stephens was present, taking notes. Ex-Sheriff F. A. Wiley had been approached by him in the morning with a proposition that he, Wiley, should be a candidate for the office of sheriff on the Republican ticket, and Wiley had promised to give him an answer before he left town. Mr. Wiley, as he was preparing to leave for his home, went up-stairs, spoke to Stephens as he sat in the crowd of listeners, and the two went down-stairs. Stephens was seen no more alive. Wiley afterwards by satisfactory evidence accounted for his own movements. He had called Stephens down to tell him that it was impossible for him to comply with his request in regard to the shrievalty, and after some further conversation had left him standing near the door of the court house, and had himself immediately gone and made his preparations for return home.

Stephens was missed a half-hour before sunset. The next morning his body was found in the room formerly occupied by the clerk and master in equity, but then used as a wood room. It was lying upon a pile of wood and about his neck was a slip-noose buried deep in his flesh, while on each side of his neck and



in his breast were wounds made by a dirk. Beside him lay his hat and the bloody dirk with which he had been stabbed. The deringers which it was known he had with him were gone, but his gold watch and chain were unmolested. There were a few drops of blood on the floor and one on the window sill, and the door was found to be locked and thumb-bolted on the inside.

There can be no reasonable doubt that Stephens was executed by authority of a decree of the Ku Klux Klan, and that his executioners were very few in number. Who they were no one, unless some of their number are still living, knows. Able detectives for years after the event worked upon the problem and were never able to get a clue. Rumors there have been, mere gossip, which could not for a moment stand the test of intelligent investigation. It may be that the members of the Klan, in or about Yanceyville, knew that Stephens was to be executed if possible that day, and it is almost certain that they were stationed about with a view to prevent interference, but that they knew who the executioners were is not at all probable. There is a very strong impression among some that the deed was done by strangers from a distance, made up and disguised for the purpose, aided and abetted by the resident members of the Klan who could be safely trusted, but without their knowledge of the minutiae of the act or of the personnel of the actors.

It is too close to the event to measure with accurate scales the guilt of the transaction, but it is certain that much the larger share of it must be imputed to the wise men of the day who thought that they could by legislation, or by force, reverse the laws of God and of nature.

Stephens, under ordinary conditions, would have been a man of average usefulness, and could have proven a good character in court at any time; but there was no man who used negro suffrage as a means for his own political elevation who was not polluted by it, and Stephens was not an exception. His vote and his influence were both to be counted on by the rogues in 1868-9, whether he participated in the distribution of the spoils or not. He represented Caswell in the Senate of that Legislature, and he enjoyed

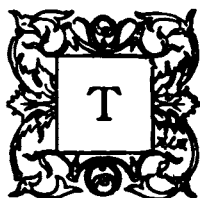
the prominence which that position gave him. He could retain it only with the aid of his negro constituents, and he courted their favor in ways that rendered him wholly obnoxious to the whites. He, though formerly a consistent member of the Methodist Church, was dismissed from its communion in disgrace. He was not a criminal in a legal sense, deserving death. He was only a self-seeker, without the excuse even of fanaticism, opposing himself against the strongest prejudices of a maddened and outraged people. What wonder then that he should have been consumed by their wrath!

*Frank Nash.*





## DAVID STONE



HE North Carolina statesman, David Stone, belonged to a New England family whose earliest American ancestor, Gregory Stone, was born in England in 1592 and died in Massachusetts in 1672. He married Lydia Cooper, and among his children was John Stone (born in 1619, died 1683), who accompanied his father to America. This John Stone married Annie Howe and had (among other children) David Stone, who was born in 1646 and died at Cambridge, Massachusetts, in 1737. Samuel Stone, a son of this David, was the father of Zedekiah Stone of North Carolina.

Zedekiah Stone was born in Massachusetts in 1710. He removed to North Carolina in Colonial days and settled on lands purchased from the Tuscarora Indians in Bertie County. Throughout the Revolution he was a firm patriot and served the State in many civil capacities. He was a member of the Provincial Congress at Hillsboro in August, 1775; member of the Committee to procure arms and ammunition for the Continental Army, April 19, 1776; member of the Provincial Congress at Halifax in November, 1776; commissioner to procure guns for public use, December 4, 1776; and State Senator from Bertie County in 1777, 1778, 1779, and after the war in 1786. The number of slaves owned by him in 1790 was twenty-five. He married Mrs. Elizabeth Hobson, *née* Williamson, and one of his children was David

Stone, our present subject. Zedekiah Stone died in December, 1796.

David Stone was born on the 17th day of February, 1770, at Hope, his father's home, about five miles from the town of Windsor. His father, being a man of means, determined to give him the best educational advantages, and sent him to Princeton, from which college he graduated with the first honors in 1788. Returning to North Carolina, he studied law under General William Richardson Davie at Halifax, and in 1790 was licensed to practise. In the same year, not being yet twenty-one years of age, he represented Bertie County in the House of Commons and was continuously reelected until 1795. In that year, at the early age of twenty-five, he was elevated to the bench, but resigned his judgeship after a service of three years. In 1799 he was elected a Member of Congress, but so shining were his talents and so extraordinary his popularity that the following year, November, 1800, at the age of but thirty, he was elected to the United States Senate, to succeed Timothy Bloodworth, and served until the beginning of the year 1807. Jesse Franklin having been elected to succeed him in the Senate, the Legislature at the same session, on December 15, 1806, elected Mr. Stone to a judgeship, and he resigned as senator to enter on his duties as judge. After a service on the bench of two years he was in November, 1808, elected governor, was sworn in as such a fortnight later, and served two annual terms, the last ending December 5, 1810, when his successor, Governor Benjamin Smith, was inaugurated.

During Governor Stone's term of office one of the most important matters before the public eye was the celebrated suit by the heirs of Earl Granville to recover the northern half of North Carolina. As far back as 1729, when the other Lords Proprietors of Carolina sold their lands to the Crown, the Earl of Granville had retained the domain which was apportioned to him, being the northern half of this State, and this descended in the house of Granville until the time of the Revolution, when it was confiscated. After the war suit was brought by Lord Granville's heirs for the recovery of this vast tract. The plaintiffs finally lost their suit,

but the case caused some consternation in North Carolina for a while. It was pending while Governor Stone filled the executive chair, and he urged the importance of making some provision to meet the claims of those who had purchased from the State, in case of a decision against the sufficiency of the title derived from the State. "The honor of the State," said he, "is greatly interested that her citizens who have confided in her justice should not be placed at the mercy of an alien to our laws and Government." At the next session Governor Stone reëntered the North Carolina House of Commons from Bertie County, serving in 1811 and 1812. On the 7th of December, 1812, the war having begun, he was again elected to the United States Senate, taking the place of Jesse Franklin, who had defeated him six years before. Although elected as a war man, Mr. Stone's course relative to war measures in Congress met with great disapproval in North Carolina, and resolutions of strong censure were adopted by the Legislature which caused him to resign after attending but two sessions of the Senate. On December 1, 1813, the State Senate appointed a committee to act jointly with a committee from the Lower House in taking into consideration the course of Mr. Stone as a Senator. This committee consisted of State Senators Thomas Wynns of Hertford, John Branch of Halifax, and Colonel Joseph Hawkins of the county of Warren. This action (looking to inquiry) by the State Senate was taken by a majority of five in that body, and on December 2d the House of Commons concurred by a majority of four, appointing on said joint committee Messrs. Thomas Ruffin, borough representative from the town of Hillsboro, Lewis Williams of Surry, John Hare of Granville, John Craige of Orange, William R. Johnson of Warren, and R. Carter Hilliard of Nash. On December 15, 1813, this joint committee (through Senator Branch) laid its findings before the Legislature in the following language:

"The committee appointed to inquire into the political conduct of David Stone, Esquire, a Senator from this State in the Congress of the United States, respectfully report that it was to have been expected that any man who valued the honor and safety of his country would not have

withheld that aid which was indispensable to the preservation of both; much less was it to be anticipated that one who to the duties of a citizen had superadded the strongest professions of his approbation of the measures of the general Government in entering into the war—who impliedly, if not expressly, avowed himself among the foremost of its supporters—would have adopted a course of conduct directly opposite to that expected by his constituents and hostile to the honor and interests of his country. This has been done by the Honorable David Stone. The sentiments of the people of this State and of the Legislature at its last session were unequivocally in favor of a prosecution of the war in which the United States was engaged with Great Britain. Their opinions were known to Mr. Stone, and those professed by him were in unison with them; under these professions he was chosen a Senator. No circumstance has since occurred to alter the opinions of the people of this State or of that body by whom he was chosen; no circumstance could occur which would authorize a change of these opinions so long as we value our national character and desire that the peace which we so ardently wish for may be obtained without disgrace; yet we find that, for reasons which he has thought proper to withhold from the people of this State, the conduct of Mr. Stone has been directly in opposition to his professions; and we are forced to believe that he avowed principles which he did not possess, or that he without cause changed the course of his political conduct, whereby he has, as far as his voice or his example could extend, jeopardized the safety and interests of his country. Justice demands that those who are fighting our battles should receive the support confiding in which they enlisted under our banners. Honor forbids the adoption of any measure by which our national character may be tarnished, and policy dictates a vigorous prosecution of the war, by which we may obtain an early and an honorable termination of it.

*“Resolved, therefore, That the said David Stone hath disappointed the reasonable expectations and incurred the disapprobation of this General Assembly.”*

The above resolutions were duly adopted by a small majority; but many of the leading members of the General Assembly joined in demanding that their formal protest against such censure should be entered on the journals of the two Houses. The protests will be found in the Senate Journal of December 25th, and in the House Journal of the same date. Among the fourteen Senators protesting we find the well-known names of Archibald D. Murphey of Orange, Robert Williams of Pitt, John Hinton of Wake, Archibald McBryde of Moore, and Barnabas McKinne,

Jr., of Wayne. Attached to the protest entered on the House Journal we find the signatures of John Stanly, Duncan Cameron, James Iredell, Maurice Moore, Paul Barringer, William Boylan, John Steele, Jesse A. Pearson, and thirty-four others—forty-two in all.

It will be observed that the above vote of censure does not specify the actions of Senator Stone for which he was so strongly assailed. A series of resolutions in the House of Commons on the 23d of November, 1813 (the consideration of which was indefinitely postponed), had contained the following specifications against him: that he "did, for reasons best known to himself, but in opposition to the true and obvious interest and policy of the United States, and contrary to the wishes and expectations of the good people of this State, vote against a law imposing a direct tax on the people of the United States in order to support the war; against the act laying an embargo to restrain and prohibit the illicit intercourse and correspondence kept up in time of war by the British Tories of our country with the cruel and savage enemy hovering on our seacoast and feeding them from our harbors and shores; against the appointment by the President of the Honorable Albert Gallatin as Ambassador to the Court of Russia."

The slight majority in the Assembly against his course perhaps determined Senator Stone to await the verdict of a new Assembly, and he withheld his resignation until the meeting of the next session. A year later, November 21, 1814, he tendered his resignation, and his letter to Governor Hawkins was laid before the House of Commons December 5, 1814. The full document will be found in the Journal of that body. Among other things, Senator Stone said that when first solicited by members of the Legislature to become a candidate he had answered that, while he should feel honored by the choice, he did not desire the office, but would serve a session or two if chosen; that he could not promise them to serve longer, as his family and domestic concerns required his personal attention. He then continues:

"It is true I hoped to be able to attend till I could hail the return of peace to my country. But a short attendance at the summer session of

1813 convinced me that this was a vain hope. It was not possible for me to think that to wage the war, in which we were engaged, by embargo, by militia tours of duty for distant expeditions, by short enlistments of regular troops, by a profuse and, as I verily believed, unnecessary expenditure of public money, and by sending our most distinguished citizens to traverse Europe as solicitors for peace, could lead to a speedy and honorable termination of the war. Indeed so very strange did these things appear to me, as war measures, that to my judgment it seemed, if the enemy had dictated our course, he could not well have selected one that would with more certainty, and scarcely with more expedition, conduct us to a division among ourselves—to bankruptcy and, as I feared, to ruin! Not being able, therefore, to approve nor to withstand the torrent by which we were urged forward, I determined neither to incur responsibility for measures adopted against my judgment nor longer to engage myself in the disagreeable task of opposing those legislative provisions by a majority thought necessary for carrying on an arduous war, but to retire to private life and wait with resignation for a more auspicious season when the delirium of the moment should pass away. On my arrival at Raleigh during the last session of the Legislature, with the intention to resign, I found a degree of excitement prevailing in that body which forbade me placing in their hands so important a trust as that of appointing a Senator. How this excitement had been produced I neither knew nor inquired; nor did I care further than this, that it was much mortification to me that the legislative council of the State should be so greatly agitated by so senseless a clamor. Much against my wish I attended the last session of Congress. When the embargo was again recommended by the President, and passed again by a large majority of the House of Representatives, I as a member of the Senate voted for it, not because my opinion of the measure was in the least altered, but because the suffering it must occasion would in a short time, I hoped, recall the sober sense of the nation, and we should finally get rid of that self-destroying engine.

. . . . . The political atmosphere of our country is so loaded with clouds and threatening in its aspect that I should certainly remain at the post assigned me if I conceived that by remaining I could be of any service, whatever sacrifice it might cost me. But my opinion and views differ so radically from those of the persons who conduct the affairs of the nation, and who appear to be strongly supported by the public sentiment of the nation, and as I am conscious I possess a very fallible judgment, but which, such as it is, must be my guide in the performance of my public duty, entirely independent of and uncontrolled by party, I therefore conclude it is best for me to withdraw from the scene."

It has been said that after the resignation of Senator Stone he



never regained his political popularity. We may also add that he never sought it. He had learned by long experience that political honors did not necessarily carry happiness with them. He longed to be free from public duties. An interesting family was growing up about him, and to these children he now turned his thoughts. Had the gratification of ambition been a source of delight to him, he would have been the happiest man in North Carolina. He was only forty-eight years old at the time of his death. In the short space of twenty-two years—from 1790 till 1812—he had been seven times elected a member of the North Carolina House of Commons, once elected a Congressman, twice elected judge, twice elected governor, and twice elected United States Senator.

Governor Stone was married twice: first, on March 13, 1793, to Hannah Turner, a sister of Judge William Turner of Tennessee, by whom he had one son and four daughters; and second, in June, 1817, to Sarah Dashiell, who had no children. The son died childless; but through his daughters there are many descendants of Governor Stone now living.

The death of Governor Stone occurred in Wake County on the 7th of October, 1818. That event was recorded by the *Raleigh Register* in its issue of October 9th as follows:

"Died. At his seat on Neuse River, on Wednesday morning, David Stone, Esquire, a gentleman of great erudition and learning, who had filled every honorable appointment which the State could bestow, having presided over it as governor, been member of both Houses of Congress, had at two different periods a seat on the bench of justice, and was frequently in the Legislature of the State. His residence was formerly in Bertie County; but for several years past he has lived as a private citizen, cultivating a valuable estate in this vicinity. He has left a widow, a numerous family, and many friends to deplore his loss."

Governor Stone's grave is now in the centre of a dense Wake County wilderness—a place as wild as when the Red man had no rival claimant to the soil. No human habitation is near. Yet on this spot once stood a happy home surrounded by fertile gardens and fruitful orchards. To find it one must go east from

Raleigh along the county road, which is an extension of New-Bern Avenue, take a plantation road about a mile beyond Neuse River, and another mile southward on this will bring the visitor to a point as near the place as a vehicle can go. Then walking some hundreds of yards through a great pine forest, one comes to—

"A grave in the woods with grass o'ergrown."

Here rests all that is mortal of David Stone, sometime Judge, Governor of North Carolina, and United States Senator! By him are interred his wife and one of his children. No monument marks the spot, but a heavy granite wall has survived the ravages of time and incloses the three graves. Nearly covered by leaves and underbrush are the fallen chimneys of his house. "The wind passeth over it and it is gone; and the place thereof shall know it no more."

*Marshall De Lancey Haywood.*





## SAMUEL McDOWELL TATE



O more fortunate environment for the production of men of a high type has been found than the border tier of our quondam Slave States furnished to the generation which reached manhood at the opening of the Civil War, and no heredity was more pronounced and vivacious than has marked the Protestant families of North Ireland, whether of French, English, or Scotch extraction.

The subject of this sketch was born under the conditions above indicated and came of the race we think so highly favored—his ancestry in both lines being a graft of French Protestants upon Scotch-Irish stock, that stock which for two centuries past has shown good blood on sea and shore. Of it were the men who starved in Londonderry and who marched under Havelock to the relief of Lucknow. Its scions rowed up the St. Lawrence under Wolfe, stormed King's Mountain, and charged at Cowpens. They in a large measure laid the foundation of our civil greatness by relentless opposition to any union, however faint, of Church and State, and to any constitution which savored at all of a monarchical cast.

Samuel McDowell Tate, eldest son and child of David and Susan M. Tate, was born at Morganton, in the fair and noble County of Burke, on the 8th day of September, 1830. He was denied a classical education, not, as in so many other cases, for want



Yours truly  
Sam'l McL. Tate

of means, but rather in consequence of the death of his father during the early youth of the son, who thenceforth became the chief care of his widowed mother and the object of her anxious solicitude.

But no want of Latin and Greek has ever held back such talent as kind Nature bestows upon men of his mould, and in the grammar schools of his native State and of Pennsylvania, the State of his mother's people, he laid the foundation of an excellent education, which stood him well in hand in many a contest with pen and tongue. Colonel Tate was a ready writer of graceful and exact English, a sensible, cogent talker at all times, and upon occasions a pathetic and persuasive speaker. He read but few books, those however always good ones; but of newspapers and reviews he was a voracious gleaner.

Before the age of the commercial traveler he saw the need of that class in business, and he lived some years in Philadelphia, fitting himself for the life of a merchant in the best sense of that badly abused word. He returned to North Carolina in the early fifties and soon took the leading trade of the rich slaveholders of Burke and her tributary country.

Attacked by the Western fever which comes at some time of life to most of the adventurous men of the Atlantic slope, he sought a taste of Texas experience and journeyed on pony express through the greater part of that State in the years 1855-56, investing in real estate, much of which his heirs retain.

When the late Colonel Charles F. Fisher, of patriot memory, contracted to build the first section of the Western North Carolina Railroad from Salisbury to Morganton, Tate took service under him and as agent managed his large and varied financial interests.

A Democrat and strongly partisan, he attended the Convention at Charleston, and later attended all the Conventions of his party save only that one which in 1872 nominated Horace Greeley for the Presidency. His sympathies were ardently Southern, and during the momentous year of 1860 he was greatly interested in all the political movements. Although much engrossed in rail-

road work, when President Lincoln called on North Carolina to furnish her quota of troops to coerce the seceded States, and Union Whigs and Secession Democrats vied with each other in rushing to the defence of their State, he abandoned his employment and answered the call to arms.

While in April and the early days of May, without waiting for the State to leave the Union, Vance was raising his "Rough and Ready Guards" across the mountains, and Thomas Settle with fife and drum was getting together his company in Rockingham, and William P. Bynum, already appointed lieutenant-colonel, was organizing his Second Regiment of State troops at Raleigh, Tate was hastily winding up his business and calling on his neighbors and friends to form a company to serve under the command of his enterprising chief, Colonel Charles F. Fisher.

As Captain of Company D of the Sixth Regiment he served in the Shenandoah Valley in Virginia, and on the morning of the 21st of July the regiment reached Manassas Junction just in time to render most important service. Disembarking and hearing the boom of distant cannon, they marched directly to the battlefield and were led to the front of the Henry House, near which Rickett's Battery was hurling its deadly missiles into the Confederate line. Within a few moments the guns of that celebrated battery were silenced and captured; but in that fatal charge Colonel Fisher was killed and hundreds of others had fallen. It was however the turning-point of the contest. Here it was that Bee, like Fisher, fell, bravely calling on his men to stand firm against the heavy columns of the advancing enemy, pointing down the line to General Jackson and saying: "Look at Jackson, he stands like a stone wall!"—words that will never die. But Kirby Smith then reached the field with other reinforcements, and the day was saved and that stampede began which made the battle of Manassas, the first great battle of the war, so memorable in our annals.

Colonel W. D. Pender was then appointed to succeed Fisher in the command of the Sixth Regiment; and under him the regiment led the advance in the battle of Seven Pines, behaving with

such gallantry that when the battle was over President Davis, who being on the field had witnessed its movements, saluting Colonel Pender said to him: "General Pender, your commission as brigadier bears date of to-day; I wish I could give it to you upon this field." As the Sixth North Carolina had the distinction to engage the enemy at the first onset, so it had the prouder one of being the last upon the field. Captain Tate served with great distinction not only in these battles, but at Gaines' Mill and in other battles in the front of Richmond and at Second Manassas, ending that battle near the Henry House on the very ground where the regiment had behaved so gallantly at its first baptism of blood on the 21st of July, 1861; and there Captain Tate won his promotion and became major of his regiment.

At Sharpsburg his regiment added to its fame; and after the battle of Fredericksburg it was assigned to a North Carolina brigade commanded by General R. F. Hoke and shared the fortunes of that admirable commander.

The closing days of June, 1863, found Major Tate and the Sixth Regiment at York, Pa., and then hurrying back to Gettysburg they pressed the enemy so closely that the Sixth Regiment crossed bayonets with them. The next day, the 2nd, was a glorious occasion in the career of Colonel Tate. Late in the afternoon the Sixth North Carolina, being then under his command, drove the enemy from East Cemetery Hill and possessed themselves of it. All of the eye-witnesses concur in stating that the Sixth North Carolina Regiment, gallantly led by him, engaged in a hand-to-hand encounter with the enemy intrenched behind the wall on the heights, where men were killed not only by bayonets and pistol shots, but by being clubbed by muskets and the ramrods of the artillerists. It was on that field that the lamented Colonel Avery fell, and Major Tate became lieutenant-colonel of the regiment.

On the 7th of November, 1863, at Rappahannock Bridge, Colonel Tate was wounded and ordered to the rear, and at the end of the famous Valley Campaign he was very severely wounded on the 19th of October, 1864, at the battle of Cedar Creek. The

Sixth Regiment shortly afterward reached the trenches in front of Petersburg, where Colonel Tate underwent all the fearful experiences incident to that siege. In the night attack on Fort Steadman, before daybreak on the morning of March 25th, 1865, Colonel Tate was in command of his regiment, which along with the 57th captured Fort Steadman, and as usual he rendered in that desperate assault gallant and valiant service. On that occasion he was again severely wounded and was sent home, where he suffered greatly. But his resolute spirit never failed him; and when Stoneman's raiders in April, after Lee's surrender, burst through the mountains and approached the Catawba, Colonel Tate, still suffering, with great resolution joined with others in checking their advance.

In the hearts of the men he commanded in war he found in times of peace friendship and loyal support; and the private soldier is after all the best judge of the commander.

The generation now reaching manhood can with difficulty picture from all their reading the state of the country east of Chatahoochee and south of the Potomac River in the spring and summer of the year A. D. 1865. Hopeless despair overtook the old men, bitterness and proud anguish possessed the women, a greed surpassing the greed of Ahab for vineyards characterized the camp-followers and commissary chiefs, proscriptive hatred burned in the breasts of the native Unionists, insolence and barbaric display marked the conduct of the freedman, while the parolled soldiers, alone of all, worked in patience and with desperate resolution to rebuild the ruined homes of the devastated Southland.

In that sad yet stirring era of convalescence from war's long fever, ere yet the relapse of Reconstruction had been encountered and overcome, Colonel Tate in his own quiet way was as much to the front as when mounting the stone wall on Cemetery Hill at Gettysburg on the evening of the 2d of July. Scarcely had the last Confederate force laid down its arms when the stockholders of the Western North Carolina Railroad, knowing his business capacity, his ready tact, his solid and well-disciplined judgment,



his rare management of men, his economy and industry, selected him for president of their disorganized, bankrupt, and war-wasted corporation. He proved himself in that station to possess a real live spark of the great Hamilton's genius of finance. He repaired the roadbed and rebuilt bridges; he revamped old rolling stock and put it to work; he solicited business and infused the people with something of his own energy; he haggled over every shilling that went out and saved with judicious care the straggling few that came in, so that in some way, unaccountable to his employers, who saw no debt arising to account for the result, he righted their affairs and enhanced their property.

This done, Provisional Governor Holden very promptly turned him out of office, and when Holden in turn went out, with Worth came back Tate, who, identified with the great work from its infancy, continued with it in one capacity or another almost uninterruptedly to the time when it passed forever from the control of North Carolina to that of Northern capitalists.

In all the tortuous history of that great corporation, whose railway is now so important a link in interstate commerce, and which is destined to still higher planes of usefulness and notoriety, Colonel Tate labored and strove for its completion, and the skillful and prudent seamanship of this quiet man at last brought the battered and badly buffeted hulk safe to the port of friendly sale and final completion.

With wise foresight he early in the Reconstruction legislation advised his stockholders to consent to a division of the road and the creation of a new corporation, the Western Division of the Western North Carolina Railroad, which was turned over to the late George W. Swepson and his associates, with the hope and expectation that the work on the Eastern Division could be pressed forward the more effectively under that arrangement.

With the Eastern Division, from Salisbury to the French Broad River, Tate continued through that era as the financial agent of the stockholders and trustee for the payment of debts already contracted, having surrendered his presidency to the appointee of the Holden Board of 1868.

The loss of the State's credit in the Northern markets caused a comparatively trifling loan to assume the proportions of a threatening mortgage. For this he was unjustly berated by a portion of the State press, and he was foully aspersed by men who were self-confessed thieves; but through it all Colonel Tate passed unscathed by fire, and confidence in his integrity was not at all shaken among the people of his State.

Never in any strict sense of the term a politician, he was sent to the Legislature of 1874 from his native county by a majority of 400 in excess of any vote theretofore polled by his party. In this field of action his usefulness was apparent. Quiet, thoughtful, and sagacious, he wielded great power. With decided convictions, and a man of force and energy, he nevertheless sought no display, and his character and bearing were free from the element of aggressiveness. In the Legislature he became at once and easily chief in all matters of practical legislation. His fine financial ability was recognized on all sides, and the confidence and esteem accorded him made him a leader. He drafted and had passed laws by which the Western Road was saved to the State and its construction re-attempted; he put in familiar and popular use the lease and working of the State's convict force upon her works of internal improvements, this same Western Road being the chiefest of the beneficiaries. He labored untiringly and with great success as chairman of the Finance Committee to provide ways and means for the enlargement of our leading charities and the establishment of new ones; he carried to completion by most dexterous management the legislation which founded and sustained through trying years that noblest of all charities, the superb Hospital for the Insane at his own home in Morganton.

So long as that vast pile of cunningly woven brick shelters from worse and acuter sorrows its own burden of stricken souls there kindly and skillfully ministered to, so long will the services of this unassuming man to his State and to his species be remembered by the appreciative men of coming generations. His descendants need want no fairer trophy of their ancestor's capacity for large and difficult undertakings.

In 1880, 1882 and 1884 he again sat for Burke in the Lower House of the Legislature, retaining and adding to his reputation for sterling worth and remarkable sagacity, and rendering laborious and unselfish service to the State of his love and to the party in whose creed he was reared, that party which still bears strongly the wonderful impress of the mind of Jefferson.

Closely associated with Colonel William L. Saunders, the faithful mentor of the Democratic Party, allied with Colonel Hamilton C. Jones and the other brave and manly spirits who had served with him during the war, and possessing the ample confidence of the conductors of the State press, Colonel Tate was an important factor in every public matter of import during the period of his career.

In 1886, there being a Democratic President, Controller of the Currency Trenholm tendered Colonel Tate, without solicitation on his part, the position of examiner of National Banks in the district stretching from West Virginia to and inclusive of Florida. It was a most worthy compliment worthily bestowed, and, save the position of census-taker for his native county in 1850 and of postmaster at Morganton during the Buchanan administration, it was the only Federal position ever held by him; and in the discharge of his duties he proved a most efficient officer, taking rank at the department, because of his capacity, integrity, and thoroughness, as one of the most excellent of all the agents of the Government.

In person Colonel Tate was of medium height, with a frame sinewy and adapted to long fatigue, a carriage dignified without being haughty, an address most charming when he chose to please, but in general undemonstrative and in keeping with his habitual taciturnity and reserve. His public business was transacted without a ripple of excitement, but he probed every detail and was always master of the subject on which he was engaged. His home-life was in harmony with his character. Quietly he pursued the even tenor of his temperate way, esteemed by his neighbors, respected by his party, and conspicuous among that band of devoted men who in war and peace have upheld the modest,

upright, conservative, liberty-loving, tyrant-hating character of our dear mother, North Carolina; a manly man, thoughtful of those about him and enjoying to the fullest the affection and regard for those at his fireside.

Prudent in his financial operations, he amassed a competent estate and erected an elegant home in the midst of a community long distinguished for culture and the kindred graces of polite life, and here he found his greatest enjoyment.

Colonel Tate married in October, 1866, Miss Jennie Pearson, daughter of the late Robert C. Pearson of Morganton, by whom he became the father of a large family of children, and who survived him but a few short years. She was a veritable pillar in church and society. Both were members of the Presbyterian Communion, were charitable in act as well as thought, and were animated by a spirit of true benevolence.

On the death of treasurer Donald Bain in 1893, Governor Holt, who was his life-long friend, appointed Colonel Tate State treasurer, and the appointment gave great satisfaction to the people of the State. He was nominated in 1894 to succeed himself, but he was defeated in the Populist upheaval of that year, along with all the leaders of his party. His administration of the treasury department was conceded to have been in all respects admirable, and he again displayed his fine talents and abilities as the most competent financier of that period of our history.

He never afterwards held office, but devoted his declining years to the welfare of his family and friends and in rendering such public service as was interesting to his community. With his townspeople he was very popular and he delighted in being useful to them, and in particular he derived much satisfaction from his success in securing the location of the Deaf and Dumb School at Morganton.

He died suddenly at his home on June 25, 1897, just as he was about to entertain Judge Robinson, then holding court in Morganton, and some members of the bar who were invited to take tea with him. His funeral the Sunday following was by

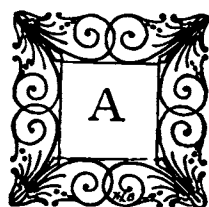
far the largest ever known in the county, all the countryside attending with many from a great distance. He sleeps in the town cemetery, which was purchased through his agency and which commands one of the loveliest views in the State; the fitting repose of one of the most admirable men of his community and one of the best and truest of all the sons whom Burke County, fruitful in brains and courage, has ever given to the State, no less efficient and excellent in peace than in war.

*W. S. Pearson.*





## ALBION WINEGAR TOURGEE



ALBION WINEGAR TOURGEE was born in Williamsfield, Ashtabula County, Ohio, May 2, 1838. He was a son of Valentine and Louise Winegar Tourgee. His boyhood was spent on his father's farm until about 1846, when the family removed to Kingsville, Ohio, where he entered the academy. He matriculated at the University of Rochester in 1859, enlisted as a private in the Twenty-seventh New York Volunteers in April, 1861, and was seriously wounded at Bull Run. In consequence of this wound he was discharged from the army and reëntered Rochester, where he was graduated with the degree of A.B. in 1862. In the Fall of 1862 he enlisted in the 105th Ohio Volunteers and soon after was promoted to a lieutenancy. At Perrysville, Kentucky, he was slightly wounded, and was captured at Murfreesboro, Tennessee, in January, 1863. He was a prisoner for several months, at Atlanta, Milan, Salisbury, and Libby, and then was exchanged. He was married May 14, 1863, to Miss Emma L. Kilbourne, of Conneaut, Ohio. On account of his wounds he quit the service in 1864. In 1865, however, he was appointed major of a negro regiment, and was on his way to join his command when the war closed. He located in Greensboro, N. C., in 1865, where he published the *Union Register*, 1866-67. He was a delegate to the loyalist convention in Philadelphia in 1866, and represented Guilford County in the

Constitutional Conventions of 1868 and 1875. He was Superior Court Judge of the Seventh judicial district from 1868 to 1875. After his term as judge expired he removed to Raleigh and was pension agent there until 1880. In 1881 he took up his residence in New York and began the publication of *The Continent*, a magazine. The next year, however, he moved it to Philadelphia, where, after lingering for three years longer, it expired. Subsequently he made his home in Mayville, N. Y., and while there became Professor of Legal Ethics in the Buffalo Law School. He had the degree of LL.D. conferred upon him by Rochester in 1880 and by Copenhagen in 1883. In 1897 he was made Consul at Bordeaux, and died at that place May 21, 1905.

This epitome of the life of a remarkable man is to be found in the current biographical dictionaries. For a work like this it is only a section of his life that can have any importance, that passed in North Carolina. It is the carpetbagger, the politician, the lawyer, the judge, only, who has any part in North Carolina history. A list of his works will be found at the end of this sketch.

Immediately after the war the white men of North Carolina hoped to establish the industrial and material prosperity of that State with the aid of Northern capital and Northern immigrants. There were very, very many waste places to be built up. Among themselves there was little capital. Their young men could work and wanted to work. Among them there was indeed a cheerful, if not joyous, acceptance of any work, however rough, however discordant with their antecedents. Each new immigrant, then, who came with money was bringing to them new and better opportunities, and he was welcomed, if not with warmth, certainly with hospitality. But this newcomer must remember, and must respect, the prejudices of the people among whom he located. Now these people believed that since Ham no human legislation could bring about a state of equality between the white and the black races. This belief was more than a prejudice, it was a passion. It was more than a theory, it was a creed, their faith in which was as strong as their confidence in Holy Writ. He, this newcomer from the North,

must not advocate equal suffrage for the negro. He must not use that suffrage as a means to advance his own political fortunes. He might be considerate and kind to the negro, but he must not meet him on a social plane different from that with which they met him. He might establish churches and schools for him, but he must not worship with him in the former, nor provide teachers for the latter who taught and practised social equality. It was not that the negro was taught, but what was taught him, that provoked the whites.

Mr. Tourgee was a young man when he took up his residence among us—only twenty-seven years of age. In his veins flowed the blood of the Canadian Voyageur and the New England Puritan. To the former he owed the vividness of his imagination and the force and energy of his language, to the latter his indomitableness and calm, cautious courage. Something indeed of the sternness of the Puritan may have remained a part of his character, but nothing of his fanaticism and little of his faith. When he located at Greensboro he had no delusions about the negro. He appreciated his condition and had some idea of his limitations. He had an intellectual apprehension too of the intense racial antipathy of the whites for the negroes, but had no sympathy for it. To him it was a pitiful weakness and not a divine instinct. He seemed to have the Latin's toleration for miscegenation. Perhaps this was an inheritance from a French-Canadian ancestry, perhaps a theory, which he would have repudiated in practice. For this he afterwards classed himself "among the Fools," "those who hoped that in some inscrutable way the laws of human nature should be suspended, or that the state of affairs at first presenting itself would be but temporary;" and in doing this he admitted that he was not a martyr and claimed that he was not a self-seeker.

He was a man of real culture and ability, having a definite and clear policy, and being determined to pursue that policy regardless of consequences. He was not an enthusiast; there was no enthusiasm in his nature; but he was calculatingly ambitious, and perfectly willing to use the means which the unwisdom of Con-



gress had provided him with to advance his own personal interests. He knew things and men, but it was a knowledge of the brain, and not that deeper knowledge of the heart. He was one apart, observing the springs of human action, but wholly without sympathy and with only ill-concealed contempt. So he had no personal magnetism, and without this no one, it makes no difference how great his mental endowment and equipment may have been, was ever a man of commanding force.

What wonder, then, that such a man, with different antecedents, different ideals, different ambitions, and looking at public questions from a diametrically opposite point of view, should soon become the worst hated of the foes of the white man? 1/2

His first public service in the State was as member of the Constitutional Convention of 1868. A man so ambitious, so able, so cultured, could not fail to use an opportunity like this to leave his impress upon the fundamental law of the State. He was largely influential in securing:

1. Equal civil and political rights to the negroes.
2. Abolition of all property qualifications.
3. Election by the people of all officers.
4. Penal reform—the abolition of the whipping-post, stocks, and branding.
5. Uniform and ad-valorem taxation.
6. Provisions for an effective public school system.
7. Judicial reform, resulting in the Code of Civil Procedure.

His persistence, in season and out of season, in advocating the first of these objects has made the people forget, to a great degree, his real service to them in securing the last six. As a matter of fact, few men have lived in the State who have conferred upon it such lasting good as did A. W. Tourgee; and yet he was a partisan leader of a motley horde, not many of whom were blessed with any sense of common decency or common honesty! On all party questions affecting the relations of the races he without scruple voted with these people. He was willing to put a negro officer over a white militia company. He was willing to regiment white and negro companies together. He was willing to have mixed

schools. In short, as between the negro and the white man the scales should stand balanced exactly.

One can scarcely imagine, now, the intense bitterness with which the large majority of the best people of the State regarded the completed work of this Convention. It did indeed place upon them burdens grievous to be borne, the greatest of which was unlimited negro suffrage. They went to work, however, and sought to defeat it at the polls. With an emasculated white electorate, though, they could do nothing against the horde of negroes and their white allies. In the gubernatorial campaign of that year (1868) nearly all the best and purest and ablest men in the State, regardless of former party affiliations, took part in behalf of Mr. Thomas S. Ashe and against Mr. W. W. Holden—but in vain.

In that election Mr. Tourgee was elected judge of the seventh judicial district. He came to the bench absolutely devoid of legal experience or legal training. He came to it too with that old idea of his that the white people of the State, like an unbroken colt, must be watched and guided and controlled, lest they should kick out of traces and refuse longer to obey the bit. The truth is that, though very sore over recent events, they would soon have been content with him as judge, had he respected their traditions, realized that reforms were things of slow growth and could not be forced, and that arbitrary attempts on his part to secure the rights of the negroes would only convince them that he could never be an impartial judge for the whites. Instead of this, however, at his first court he sent for the Chairman of the Board of County Commissioners and asked him if there had been any negro jurors drawn for that term. He told him that there were not, but simply because there were none in the county fit for the purpose. Judge Tourgee reprimanded him sharply from the bench, directed that the old list should be destroyed, and forced him in the presence of the court to draw other names from the box until he had secured enough negroes to satisfy his own sense of justice, and then proceeded to try cases with a jury thus selected by himself. This was heralded over the district, and the white people

knew, or thought they knew, what they had to expect from such a judge. Besides, he offended against their traditions and their sense of propriety by taking part in political meetings, riding in political processions, and adjourning court to attend political conventions. Once in Orange County he left the court on Tuesday to attend a convention, but refused to discharge the Grand Jury. That body, at the suggestion of Mr. Josiah Turner, presented him for neglect of duty. The presentment, in Mr. Turner's handwriting and characteristic style, lay in the court house at Hillsboro for many years, but has since disappeared. The result of all this was that the white people at large regarded Judge Tourgee with intense disgust and bitterness. He was not their judge, but an alien placed over them by their conquerors. He was a partisan on the bench, using his opportunities to protect his own followers and to punish his political foes. Of course much must be allowed to the virulence of party feeling at the time, which was exceedingly bitter; still, making all due allowances for this, the defects of his temperament, his character, and his training were such as to make him fall far short of being a just and upright judge.

As I have said, when first made a judge he knew little law and little of court procedure. He was, however, an able, ambitious, indomitable man, so he set to work to make himself a good lawyer. His habit was, as soon as he reached a town where he was to hold court, to require the clerk to attend upon him with copies of the pleadings in each of the civil cases which were to be tried. Having great powers of concentration and remarkable quickness of intellect, he thus made himself familiar with the points at issue in each case before he entered the court house. He in consequence soon made himself an efficient judge in cases in which there was nothing in the subject matter or the parties to arouse his prejudices. He could never have been more, for at no time during his stay in the State was he a thoroughly conscientious man, and it makes no difference how brilliant a man may be, he can never make a just and upright judge with conscientiousness lacking.

Twice was Judge Tourgee's life in serious danger from the Ku Klux. It must be remembered that that organization was in itself a government, having its own laws by which its members were bound. Those laws prevented, or were intended to prevent, all hasty action. No punishment was ever inflicted by the order itself without calm, cautious, deliberate consideration by the ablest and wisest members of the body, particularly in cases of life and death. The great evil of such an organization, even when it may be a necessary evil, is that, however cautious it may be, it can not exclude from its membership many hot-headed, unruly, whiskey-fired young men. This element, being more active, more energetic, more determined, and more malignant than the older, more sober and more cautious members, sometimes, in disregard of their own laws, took matters into their own hands, and in the garb of the order whipped or wounded where there was little justification. In Orange County, for instance, only two men were executed under the orders of the Klan, the barn-burners in Bingham township. Two were shot (wounded), one hung, and quite a number whipped by those who had erupted from the Klan. In the order itself, then, there was this continual struggle between the hot-heads and the more intelligent and cautious leaders.

✓ A company of young men, members of the Klan (such is the tradition), had agreed among themselves to meet Judge Tourgee on his way from Pittsboro to Hillsboro, and just south of the latter place to put him to death, without saying anything at all to the Chiefs of the Klan. Of their number was a barkeeper in Hillsboro. He, while under the influence of liquor, divulged the plan to a young man from Chapel Hill on the afternoon before the night in which it was to be executed. That young man on his way home stopped at the house of a woman named Clark, who had herself been disciplined by the Ku Klux for being too intimate with negroes, and said enough to her to let her know the fate of Judge Tourgee should he proceed to Hillsboro that night. She left immediately and took her stand near the Chapel Hill road to intercept the Judge. She had not long to wait before

he made his appearance. She stopped him, told him of her suspicions and fears, and induced him to avoid Hillsboro and go to Graham. Thus his life in all human probability was saved. This incident he afterwards idealized in his "Fool's Errand," converting the woman, Clark, into a beautiful young lady.

At a period subsequent to this, and about the time of the execution of John W. Stephens, the Klan itself seriously considered the necessity for the removal of Judge Tourgee. The death sentence was about to be passed upon him when an influential leader of the Klan, coming late, appeared. As soon as he was informed of the state of affairs he interfered, and after much persuasion succeeded in having the decree reversed. After this the carpet-bag judge's life was as safe as any other man's.

It is said in Greensboro that Judge Tourgee was exceedingly anxious that the attorneys for Kirk's prisoners should have applied to him for a writ of habeas corpus; that he was prepared not only to issue it, but to see that it was executed.

"Yet," says he, in "The Fool's Errand," "it was a magnificent sentiment that underlay it all—an unfaltering determination, an invincible defiance to all that had the seeming of compulsion or tyranny. One can not but regard with pride and sympathy the indomitable men who, being conquered in war, yet resisted every effort of the conqueror to change their laws, their customs, or even the personnel of their ruling class; and this, too, not only with unyielding stubbornness, but with success. . . .

It must be counted but as the desperate effort of a proud, brave, and determined people to secure and hold what they deemed to be their rights."

He knew his life was very seriously threatened all during the Ku Klux era, yet with a calm, cool, serene courage he went about his work, and that too among a people not one of whom would have shed a tear at his untimely taking off, many of whom would have welcomed it as a positive blessing.

At the end of his term, January 1, 1875, he quit the office of judge an excellent lawyer, and later practised in Greensboro and in Raleigh with some success. He was in the convention of 1875,

still a partisan and the leader of the Republican forces. There he was simply an obstructionist and did nothing positive. In a general way, it may be said he uniformly opposed every alteration of the Constitution proposed by any member.

In 1878 his "Code with Notes and Decisions" came from the press, and in the following years his "Digest of Cited Cases." Each of these was, in its sphere, an exceedingly valuable contribution to the legal literature of the State, though both have since been superseded by more modern works. In his preface to the Code he with fine taste and excellent judgment ignores his own prominent part in the adoption of that system and says simply:

"That there are evils attending the abandonment of the old system and the adoption of the new, no one can doubt. That the circumstances under which it was adopted in this State have placed it under the interdict of prejudice from the outset, every one will admit, and it must also, I think, be admitted that even under this great disadvantage, it has secured a permanent foothold not to be disturbed either by legislation or construction."

It was in 1879 that he attained a world-wide reputation by the publication of his novel, "A Fool's Errand." It was published anonymously and created immediately so great a sensation that the author's identity was not long concealed. At the present time it is out of fashion, but the writer is inclined to rate it as the second best of the political novels which have been published in this country, and he believes that there will ere long be such a revival of interest in it that it will not be permitted to die.

In 1880 Judge Tourgee gave the people of North Carolina a taste of his quality as a political satirist in the "C" letters. By universal consent it is admitted that for keen but polished satire these letters were inimitable. He left the State soon after, and here we must part with him too, pausing only to quote David Nelson at the grave of the "Fool," as a fair estimate of his own character:

"He was a good man, according to my notion, and an earnest one; but —somehow it seemed as if his ideas wasn't calkulated for this meridian."

The following are the chief publications of Judge Tourgee:  
 "Toinette," 1874, title changed to "A Royal Gentleman" in 1881;  
 The Code with Notes and Decisions, 1878; Digest of Cited Cases,  
 1879; "A Fool's Errand," 1879; "Bricks Without Straw," 1881;  
 "John Eax," 1881; "Hot Plowshares," 1883; "An Appeal to  
 Cæsar," 1884; "A Man of Destiny," 1885; "Black Ice," 1885;  
 "Bulton's Inn," 1886; "Letters to a King," 1886; "The Veteran  
 and His Pipe," 1887; "Pactolus Prime," 1888; "Murvale East-  
 man," 1889; "With Gauge and Swallow," 1891; "An Outing with  
 the Queen of Hearts," 1892; "A Son of Old Harry," 1892; "Out  
 of the Sunset Sea," 1893; "The Mortgage on the Hiproof House,"  
 1896; "The Story of a Thousand," 1895; "The War of the  
 Standards," 1896. *and* Frank Nash.

"The Odd Trump."

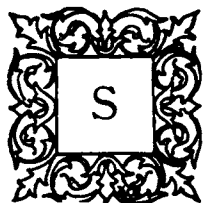
The manuscript of this and started  
 the "Standard," which was the first  
 volume.





## JOHN URMSTONE

"As there are certain mountebanks and quacks in physick, so there are much the same also in divinity."



O declares an old English theologian, and well proved is his assertion by the wild career in Colonial days of a worthy who signed himself "John Urmstone, Missionary." And sometimes the final "e" was dropped from the name. Of this individual Bishop Cheshire says: "He did more harm to the cause of the Church in North Carolina than any other man who has ever figured in our history, and it is utterly incredible that he should have been allowed for ten years to blast the prospects of the Church in the Province by his presence."

Urmstone was an Englishman, born in Lancashire about the year 1663, and possessed the advantages of a college education. He came to North Carolina during the year 1710 or early in 1711, and soon found fault with everything and everybody.

At the time of his arrival the Colony was in a turmoil. Some five years earlier the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts had sent over some missionaries, and their coming was followed by a troublous time of political and religious commotion and of resolute struggle between the contending factions, during which Glover and his Council, being adherents of the



aggressive Church party, fled to Virginia. One of these missionaries was Reverend John Adams, who was settled in Pasquotank and Currituck, and whose ministrations for two years and a half were highly valued by his flock; but in August, 1708, he felt forced to abandon his work and took his departure, and his vestry applied to the Society to send over a successor to him; and thus it was that Urmstone came to North Carolina.

The accounts given by these missionaries of affairs in the Colony, while always challenging a judicious scrutiny, throw much light on the existing conditions.

On leaving, Mr. Adams wrote:

"I have lived here in a dismal country about two years and a half, where I have suffered a world of misery and trouble both in body and mind; I have gone through good report and evil report and endured as much as any of your missionaries have done before me; and whoever succeeds me will have this advantage, that none of the country will be prejudiced to his person (as all who adhered to the Quakers are to mine); and this in my opinion will conduce not a little to the success of his labors."

Mr. Urmstone says of the people:

"Men are generally of all trades, and women the like within their spheres—except some who are the posterity of old planters or have been very fortunate and have great numbers of slaves who understand most handicrafts. Men are generally carpenters, joiners, wheelwrights, coopers, butchers, tanners, shoemakers, tallowchandlers, watermen, and what not; women, soap-makers, starch-makers, dyers, etc. He or she that can't do all these things and hath not slaves that can, over and above all the common occupations of both sexes, will have but a bad time on it, for help is not to be had. At any rate, every one having business enough of his own makes tradesmen turn planters, and these become tradesmen. All seem to live by their own hands, of their own produce, and what they can spare goes for foreign goods."

In his account of the course of events in the Colony, he says that:

"Colonel Hyde, although called in by all sides, after long debates, persisted in Mr. Glover's opinion of not suffering the Quakers to be of the Council or have anything to do with the administration. An Assembly

was called. With much difficulty we had the majority. The Assembly was made up of a strange mixture of men of various opinions and inclinations: a few Churchmen, many Presbyterians, Independents, but most anythingarians—some out of principle, others out of hopes of power and authority in the government, to the end that they might lord it over their neighbors; all conspired to act answerable to the desire of the President and Council. I was at this solemn meeting a great part of the time they sat."

Urmstone himself was apparently an "anythingarian" outside of his religious cloth.

After telling of his agricultural labors he complains also of the inhabitants, saying:

"My neighbors seem to like well my industry, but are far from affording me their assistance in anything. They love to see newcomers put to their shifts as they themselves have been, and cannot endure to see anybody live as well as themselves without having undergone the slavish part and learned to live independent of others."

This lack of hospitality of which the missionary so bitterly complained may have been true as to himself, but was not the case with more desirable immigrants, including reputable clergymen. In 1712 the Reverend Giles Rainsford, also sent by the Society, came to the Colony, and met with a far different reception. Governor Hyde himself was one of the first to welcome Rainsford, saying: "Give me leave, sir, to give you an invitation to my house, where you shall be most welcome as long as ever you please; nor shall you have the occasion to complain of the country, as Mr. Urmstone has." After the arrival of Rainsford the two missionaries divided the territory in which they were to labor, Urmstone taking the northeastern shore of the Chowan River, and Rainsford the southeastern shore. In one of his letters Rainsford said:

"Since the whole country is entitled to my labors, I visited his shore, which (I am sorry to say) has been a long time neglected. Mr. Urmstone is lame and says he cannot do now what he formerly has done; but this lazy distemper has seized him, by what I hear, ever since his coming to the country."

In another letter Mr. Rainsford said that Urmstone had bought a fine plantation on the Virginia border and was living at ease, though he had exposed himself to popular contempt by his "wretched way of begging and other indiscretions." Speaking of Rainsford, Urmstone said :

"He is now set down in my parish, and saith when the inhabitants have once heard him they'll forsake me and I must be turned out. I fear he is of a very contentious temper."

Like the horseleech's daughters, Urmstone's never-ending cry was "Give! Give!"—and yet with sublime effrontery he writes to Governor Nicholson at Boston, saying: "Starve and dig I cannot, and to beg I am ashamed." Later he defended himself against some of the charges against him by telling the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel that his "sacred character" in itself was enough to draw down on him the contempt of a pack of profligate and loose people and zealous sectarians. He also bitterly complained that his vestry (which was hostile to him) included among its members two professed Anabaptists, three vehement Scotch-Presbyterians, and one descendant of a Quaker. In another letter he said that one Anabaptist who was recommended for a vestryman claimed to be a physician, fortune-teller, and conjurer.

When Mr. Rainsford said Urmstone was guilty of "indiscretions" he did not malign him. One of these indiscretions was getting drunk, and the other was profane swearing. For the former offence a bill of indictment was found against him by the grand jury of Chowan Precinct in April, 1720. Of Urmstone's lamentations the Reverend Francis L. Hawks, in his "History of North Carolina" (volume 2, page 351) says:

"Every letter is filled with complaints of his unparalleled sufferings, and solemn assurances of the impending starvation of himself and family, while they generally wind up with a pathetic farewell to his English friends and a businesslike announcement that he had drawn certain bills of exchange which he wished duly honored, not forgetting to add instruc-

tions as to the remittances in English goods, which he assures his saddened countrymen he can sell at an excellent profit. Six times in ten years he assured them that he expected himself and family to be laid in the tomb from sheer want of food before he could possibly hear from England; and yet he orders a variety of articles to be sent which could not possibly arrive until, upon his hypothesis, the grave would have hidden alike him and his necessities. And yet this man, thus eternally starving, contrived to buy land and negroes and stock, to hire white servants, to procure tools and agricultural implements, to be the proprietor of horses and boats, and, in short, appears to have been the only missionary during the proprietary rule that ever acquired any property in the country, while from his own letters we gather the fact that he had administered the Lord's Supper but twice in five years."

In 1717 Urmstone wrote to the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel that if a Lord Proprietor were to come to North Carolina he would be looked upon as no better than a ballad-singer. In another letter he said it would be better to be curate of a bear-garden than Bishop of North Carolina.

Urmstone's wife died in North Carolina in October, 1719. He had several children. When his oldest son was approaching manhood he left America and went back to England, followed by parental execrations.

Unquestionably the best service done the cause of religion in North Carolina by Urmstone was when he left the Colony in the spring of 1721. He arrived in London the latter part of the following July. His business affairs were left in charge of Edward Moseley.

Though the Colony of North Carolina was happily rid of Urmstone, America was not. After a short stay in England he again crossed the Atlantic and became rector of Christ Church in Philadelphia. There the discords, controversies, and drunkenness of his career in Carolina were reënacted. All other efforts to rid Philadelphia of his presence being of no avail, he was finally paid to leave. He removed to Maryland, where his conduct was no better; and in that Colony he was accidentally burned to death in 1731, while in a state of intoxication. This we learn from the late Bishop Perry's "History of the American Episcopal Church."

So closes the story of John Urmstone, Missionary. While his career in itself is not one of importance, we have given it to show that "all sorts and conditions of men" formed the population of our Colony, and that even the Church was not free from evil influence.

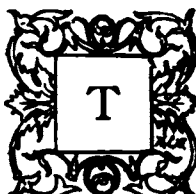
"Wherever God erects a house of prayer,  
The Devil always builds a chapel there."

*Marshall De Lancey Haywood.*





## WILLIAM HAINES WAKEFIELD

 O some men the paths they are to follow through life seem plain from childhood. Others deliberately choose their work in later years. But mere accident or force of circumstances seems to control the destinies of many. A few are strong enough and brave enough to carve out their fortunes in the face of obstacles and discouragements, and to these comes the joy of mastery over difficulty.

Goethe says :

“For the flowering of the best gifts circumstances must be propitious, but the paramount function of the gifted is to resist old circumstances and create new ones, to break through the surroundings and fences of timorous customs and leap toward success.”

Circumstances did not seem propitious for making a physician out of Dr. Wakefield, but he is to-day a physician and a successful one.

He first saw the light in the town of Arkell, Wellington County, Ontario, Canada, on November 19, 1855. His mother was Ann Hunt Haines, of an old English family that made its way to Canada about the year 1825. She was a woman of great force of character and beautiful life, whose influence on the moral, intellectual, and spiritual future of her son was firmly stamped. It is said that men are usually like their mothers in taste, disposition, temperament, and character.



*W. H. Wakefield*

The father was descended from George Wakefield, who emigrated from England to the Province of Canada about the year 1822. His children and his children's children continued to live there in happiness and contentment until Henry Wakefield, the Doctor's father, decided to seek a milder climate in this Southland, and settled near what was then known as New Garden Boarding School in Guilford County, North Carolina.

In Canada he had held the office of Reeve of Egremont, and was a lieutenant in the Canadian army. After becoming a citizen of the United States and of North Carolina, he was loyal in his devotion and served for years as an acceptable and honored magistrate in Guilford County. His temperament was notably a judicial one, and he was recognized as a man of good judgment, strong natural ability, unbending honesty, and kindness of heart.

The confidence and esteem in which he was held might be illustrated by many incidents, but one will suffice for our purpose. Two neighbors had a misunderstanding in regard to some money transactions, and a serious difficulty arose between them. They were about to embark in a suit at law which would have proved expensive and unsatisfactory and which would have continued for years. Some one suggested that each man should go to Henry Wakefield and make a statement of his case and leave the decision with him. To this they agreed, and an immediate settlement entirely satisfactory to both was the result.

Under the fostering care of such parents the boyhood and young manhood of Doctor Wakefield passed in even tenor on the farm. He always did his part in the field and meadow, in garden, barn, and stable, and did it well. The outdoor life, the hard work, the contact with nature and the soil, were all of direct benefit to him in every way, and the high school course between the plow handles was most valuable training in his case, as it almost always is. He was fond of riding, fishing, hunting, and of the other sports a country boy can have. The influence of good books was also felt in early life, and *Pilgrim's Progress* particularly appealed to him.

Until he was a full-grown man he had few school advantages,



but he was always thorough and accurate in what he learned. He finished the course at New Garden Boarding School, now Guilford College, and began his business career as a hardware merchant in Greensboro in the year 1879.

From the beginning he was successful and his business prospered and grew. He seemed to have found his life's work, but fates decreed otherwise.

On November 23, 1881, he was married to Miss Mary C. Adams. The days went by and finally their eldest child was severely ill. The father watched tenderly over the bedside, studied the symptoms, and helped the little one back to health and strength. In former days he had wished to study medicine, but the opportunity was denied him. Now the old desire came back, and he determined that nothing should prevent him from carrying out the thought and wish of those past years. The decision was made as he sat by his suffering babe, and in 1886 and 1887 we find him a student in the Jefferson Medical College, Philadelphia. Later he went to Louisville, Kentucky, where he graduated with honors in 1890 and immediately returned to North Carolina and began regular practice. Meantime he had continued to direct the affairs of his hardware company, and did not sever his connection with it until he sold out in 1893.

He is a specialist, confining his work to the eye, ear, nose, and throat, and has made for himself a name and reputation throughout North Carolina and adjoining States. In 1897 he went to New York and took a post-graduate course in order to prepare himself thoroughly for his chosen work and to equip himself in every possible way. Two years later he was chosen managing editor of the *Carolina Medical Journal*, which position he still holds. Under his management the *Journal* has continued to grow, improve, and succeed. He was also Professor of eye, ear, nose and throat diseases in the North Carolina Medical College at Charlotte.

Seven children have been born into the family, six of whom are now living in the delightful home in Charlotte, North Carolina, where culture, contentment, peace and happiness meet in blessing.

Dr. Wakefield is an Elder in the Presbyterian Church, a Democrat in politics, and a genial, social, cultured gentleman, interested in every good word and work, well informed on all the questions of the day, and devoted to his family, his friends, his city and his State.

The call back to old mother earth has reached him, and one of his most delightful recreations is his farm near Charlotte, in which he takes the liveliest interest and from which he reaps not only a harvest of fruit and grain, but of joy, relaxation, and happiness.

It is said that North Carolina people do not write, but from Dr. Wakefield's pen have come a number of notable articles on medical subjects and an occasional item of more general interest.

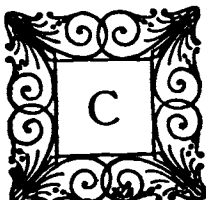
The life-story given thus briefly, simply, and fairly is one of interest and encouragement, and one from which many valuable lessons may be learned. North Carolina's sons in every field are doing honor to their mother State, but so quietly and modestly are they working out their destiny and hers that we often fail to note their strength and force, their vigor and beauty and power.

*W. A. Blair.*





## CYRUS BARKSDALE WATSON



YRUS B. WATSON was born in what is now Forsyth County, then Stokes, near Kernersville, North Carolina, on the fourteenth day of January, 1845. His father, John Watson, was a grandson of Drewry Watson, a native of Scotland, who settled in Prince Edward County, Virginia, about 1740 and whose wife was a Barksdale of Halifax, from whom the subject of this sketch takes his middle name. John Watson was a solid, substantial farmer noted for his honesty and integrity, his wisdom, intelligence and breadth of view. He was a careful, conservative, original, and thoughtful man, an ideal justice of the peace of the old school, and for years before the war was chairman of the Wardens' Court. He was widely known and esteemed, and, in his day and generation, modestly but faithfully did his part in the growth and development of this section of North Carolina.

Mr. Watson's mother was a Folger, and her great-grandfather was a brother of Abia Folger of Nantucket, the mother of Benjamin Franklin. In her later years her resemblance to Franklin's portraits was so strong and striking as to cause frequent comment. She was a woman of culture, refinement, and strong intellectual force, and left a marked influence not only upon her son, but upon the entire community about her.

Mr. Watson's grandmother was a Wilson, sister of Joseph Wil-



THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY

Yours Truly  
C. D. Watson

son, the famous Solicitor of the Western District of North Carolina, who was one of the most distinguished lawyers of his day, and who appeared before the Supreme Court of the State in almost every case that came up from any of the Western counties. As Honorable W. H. Battle said in his address at the meeting held in the Supreme Court Room in January, 1870, after the announcement of the death of Judge Ruffin:

"The business of the Court in those days was conducted by gentlemen who were called 'The Bar of the Supreme Court,' and the practice was confined to them with almost as much exclusiveness as was formerly that of the Court of Common Pleas in England to the Sergeants-at-Law. It was a rare instance that any other member of the profession ventured to appear before the Court; for it required no little moral courage to do so. The members who then composed the Supreme Court Bar were regarded as equal, if not superior, to the members of such bars in any other State in the Union. Your honors will at once acknowledge the justice of this high encomium when I recall the names of William Gaston, Thomas Ruffin, Henry Seawell, Archibald Henderson, Archibald D. Murphey, Gavin Hogg, Moses Mordecai, Joseph Wilson, and James Martin."

From such ancestry, and with ideal home influences about him, the subject of this sketch spent his childhood days with his one brother and two sisters at the neighborhood school, on the farm, and around the home. He was a strong, active, manly, vigorous boy, full of life and fun, and from his earliest childhood trained in careful, steady work, so that industry became a fixed habit and the thought of idleness repulsive. Fortunately for the boy, he had access to good books and early learned to love them. When only a lad, history, biography, poetry, and fiction were not only his delight and recreation, but they gave him the taste for literature and reading which has marked his entire life. He has from boyhood been a close student of Shakespeare and other dramatists and a lover of the best fiction. His knowledge of and his love for natural history and geography are constant sources of surprise and wonder to his friends and acquaintances. At the early age of five he began his studies in the home school, and at fifteen he passed to the Kernersville High School, which he left to enter the army.

His war record is interesting and striking. He enlisted in Company K, Forty-fifth North Carolina Regiment, organized in the early Spring of 1862 at Camp Mangum, near Raleigh, of which Junius Daniel was the Colonel. Doctor J. M. Hines was the Captain of Company K, and his manly qualities and uniform kindnesses Mr. Watson has always held in the fondest remembrance. Colonel Daniel was a graduate of West Point, and from the organization of the regiment until the beginning of the seven days' fight before Richmond he drilled his regiment incessantly, and so disciplined them that they became prepared to enter upon that career which brought to the organization so much fame and glory. Mr. Watson has contributed to the Regimental Histories an account of the fortunes of that regiment during the war which is not only interesting but very instructive. He himself was wounded in Maryland, in the Battle of the Wilderness, and much more severely and seriously at Spottsylvania on the 19th of May. We make room for a single quotation from his Regimental History:

"On the 17th or 18th of May, and after the enemy had drawn back their line into the woods, giving up the entire field where the conflict raged on the 12th, I asked permission of Lieutenant Frank Erwin, commanding my company, to pass the picket-line and go over into this angle to make observations. It was a bright May day. There was no fighting on any part of the line, and by his permission I went. The pickets permitted me to pass, and I went over the breastworks to that portion of the field which had been occupied by our brigade, and then to the right to the position which had been occupied by Ramseur's brigade. On my arrival in this angle I could well see why the enemy had withdrawn their lines. The stench was almost unbearable. There were dead artillery horses in considerable numbers that had been killed on the 10th and on the early morning of the 12th. Along these lines of breastworks where the earth had been excavated to the depth of one or two feet and thrown over, making the breastworks, I found these trenches filled with water (for there had been much rain), and in this water lay the dead bodies of friend and foe commingled, in many instances one lying across the other, and in one or more instances I saw as many as three lying across one another. All over the field lay the dead of both armies by hundreds, many of them torn and mangled by shells, many of the bodies swollen out of all proportion, some with their guns yet grasped in their hands. Now and then one

could be seen covered with a blanket, which had been placed over him after he had fallen.

"These bodies were decaying. The water was red, almost black with blood. Offensive flies were everywhere. The trees, saplings, and shrubs were torn and shattered beyond description; guns, some of them broken, bayonets, canteens, and cartridge boxes were scattered about, and the whole scene was such that no pen can or ever will describe it. I have seen many fields after severe conflicts, but nowhere have I seen anything half so ghastly. I returned to my company and said to old man Thomas Carroll, a private in the company, who was frying meat at the fire, 'You would have saved rations by going with me, for I will have no more appetite for a week.' On the 19th our corps marched in the afternoon around the enemy's right, crossed one of the prongs of the Mattaponi River, and attacked the enemy on his right flank and rear. We carried no artillery, and as it happened that which we hoped would be a successful surprise to the enemy turned out to be a desperate and unsuccessful battle. We found a large body of troops coming up as reinforcements from Fredericksburg. We attacked them. The engagement began perhaps two hours by sun and lasted until in the night, and under cover of darkness our corps returned to its former position. In this engagement our regiment suffered severely. The colonel of our regiment, the brave Colonel Samuel H. Boyd, was killed while leading a charge. My own company came out of the fight with not an officer or non-commissioned officer. In this last charge the writer received a severe wound from which he has never entirely recovered. The next day the armies commenced a movement toward Richmond, confronting each other and fighting almost daily, which finally culminated in the great battle of Cold Harbor, June 3d, in which battle the enemy received awful punishment and our regiment again suffered severely. While this battle was raging, I was lying helpless in the Winder Hospital at Richmond, listening to the roar of the guns."

As soon as he was able he hastened back to the army with his arm in a sling and remained in service until the end, indeed taking part in the last charge at Appomattox.

Of those surrendered by General Lee, 5132, according to the parole list, were North Carolinians; but those figures do not include all of the North Carolinians who were at Appomattox. Many escaped. Mr. Watson says in the Regimental Histories:

"Many officers and soldiers, seeing surrender impending, moved by dislike to give up the struggle or fear of Northern prisons, to which it was

thought we would be sent, slipped through the lines to evade surrender, and thus their names do not appear on the parole list. On the morning of the surrender at Appomattox I was with my regiment (Forty-fifth) at the time the last charge was made by Grimes's division, to which it belonged. At the time I was suffering from an old open wound. Thinking that all prisoners would be marched back to City Point and thence transported to Northern prisons, I left the field and started home, moving down the Appomattox, intending to cross in the rear of Sheridan's cavalry during the night. I was captured late in the afternoon, about ten miles down the river, and was brought back to General Grant's camp with about 150 others caught in like case offending. Without waiting for daylight we were started early next morning for City Point. Owing to the condition of my wound, however, I was left at Farmville for medical treatment and was paroled there a few days later. In this way the names of no small numbers of soldiers (some of whom effected their escape), who were with their commands at Appomattox, failed to appear on the parole-list."

On being paroled Mr. Watson made the best of his way through many difficulties to his home, and soon began to cast about with the purpose of earning his livelihood. For a while he was employed as a clerk in a store at Kernersville; but while attempting to cut wheat at home, his old wounds broke his shoulder down and gave him trouble. Later, in 1866, he accepted a clerkship in High Point. Here an accident befell him which opened the wound on his right shoulder, and he now saw that it was necessary to abandon any vocation that required manual labor, and that he must seek a livelihood in some other career. Although not well prepared for professional life, his thoughts turned to the law, and he was fortunately able to enter upon the study of that profession in Lexington under General James Madison Leach. He had a resolute purpose to succeed, and addressed himself to his studies with a determination to master his profession. Indeed, there was a high incentive. Admitted to the bar in June, 1869, and at once beginning the practice in Winston, he was happily united in marriage to Miss A. E. Henley, and their union has been blessed by an interesting family, five of their children having grown up around them. From the first Mr. Watson was successful in his practice. He gave time and care to every case, and studied not only the law, but the methods, work,



and peculiar characteristics of the most distinguished lawyers with whom he came in contact. He sought that which was best and strove to attain superior excellence. As a result his practice became very extended. Perhaps no attorney has a better reputation for ability in examining witnesses and in forcibly presenting his case to the jury. He has been employed in many great cases and has always risen to the height of the occasion. There has never been any disappointment in his effort. Where he has not achieved success he at least deserved the victory. Among his great speeches will long be recalled his masterly effort in the case of *Gattis vs. Kilgo*, at Oxford, which won for him the highest applause. He is a constant, thorough, and careful student of human nature, and knows men, understands how they think, what they think, what their mental processes are, and what the men themselves really are.

It has been often said that the State has produced no greater criminal lawyer; but he early made it a rule that he would not, under any circumstances, prosecute a case where capital punishment was the penalty. In many of the great criminal trials he has thus been the leading lawyer for the defence, and by his earnestness, zeal, and capacity he has attained an eminence seldom achieved at the bar. His ideas of the ethics of the profession are high and proper, and while he is an antagonist to be feared, yet his conduct of a cause is always to be admired.

Mr. Watson's ancestry has been Democratic from the days of Jefferson, and he himself, imbued with the most patriotic sentiment, has been a devoted Democrat throughout his career. Looking only to the honors of his profession, he has never sought office or political preferment; but always deeply interested in the success of his party, he has freely given his services in every important campaign. On the hustings he is an exceedingly popular speaker, and he presents his views not only forcibly, but in such a captivating way as to carry his audience with him. Indeed it has been the fortune of but few to treat public questions so masterfully in debate and to find such favor with the people. In 1882 he was elected to the State Senate, and again in 1892.

Then in mature manhood, learned in his profession, experienced in matters of public interest, he made a record that exceedingly gratified his friends. Among the important matters that engaged his attention was the necessity of constructing good roads in this State, and he led in that movement, so that at one of the recent conferences it was ascribed to him that he was "the father of the good road movement." It is said that he read and studied the road laws of every State, and then prepared and had passed the road law of Forsyth County, which he called "the Alternative System," which has since been adopted in many other counties. In 1893 he represented his county in the House of Representatives. At that session he originated the Anti-Lynch Law, which is now embodied in the State Code. He was easily the leader of the body and served with ability and renown.

In 1890 the Farmers' Alliance began to play an important rôle in the Democratic Party, and as each year passed it added to its strength in the State. At length, in 1892, its leaders sought to draw the farming element into a separate organization and nominated Mr. Exum for Governor. But their defection was not sufficient to defeat the Democratic nominee, Elias Carr. Four years later, although the Populists nominated Mr. Guthrie for Governor, their leaders induced the Populist voters to vote for Honorable D. L. Russell, the Republican candidate. The outlook for Democratic success was now hopeless, but Mr. Watson was asked to lead the Democratic ranks.

No one who witnessed the magnificent State Convention of 1896 in the Academy of Music at Raleigh will ever forget it. Every delegate in it—and the flower of the party was there—felt that it was a crisis in the affairs of the party in this State. Two years before the party had been overwhelmingly defeated by a fusion of the Republican and Populist Parties. The Party had lost every representative in Congress, the Legislature, and nearly every county officer in the State. It was an hour of feverish anxiety, when personal differences were forgotten and personal ambitions were subordinated and when the ablest and best leaders of the party were looking for the strongest man in the State to

lead in the titanic struggle ahead. After a thorough and most careful canvass and analysis of the situation and search for the man of the hour, Cyrus B. Watson was unanimously chosen for the herculean task. No greater compliment was ever paid to a North Carolinian by his own people. When his name was mentioned to that magnificent assembly of splendid men the scene beggars description. It surpassed, if possible, the intense enthusiasm of the great Convention of 1876 in Metropolitan Hall when Vance was called to carry the standard of his party. It was worth all the sacrifice and hardship imposed by war and all the toil and self-denial of the intervening years to have lived this one hour in the ringing acclamations of that great body of the first men of this old commonwealth. Mr. Watson would have been more than human if he could have resisted this honor, which was wholly unsought and which came to him like a peal of thunder from a clear sky. Burdened with the cares and responsibilities of a busy professional life and taxed to the utmost of his strength by the exacting demands of his extensive law practice, he forgot self and with his whole heart accepted the standard of his party in the darkest hour of its history, and gave to his State a service akin to that which he rendered with dauntless courage from '61 to '65 on the crimsoned field of battle. He emerged from defeat as he did in 1865, undaunted and undismayed, and resumed his life's work as quietly and as serenely as the humblest citizen in the humblest walk of life.

Scarcely less remarkable was the honor bestowed by his friends in the memorable contest in the General Assembly of 1903 for United States Senator. Instinctively and without effort on his part, sentiment on the part of some of the best men of the party had crystallized into a movement favoring his election to the United States Senate. It was felt that in view of his distinguished service and sacrifices to his State, in war and in peace, he was entitled to this high honor. It was recognized, too, that there was no man in the party more splendidly equipped for this exalted position. In the contest, lasting more than a month, he was again defeated by a close vote, and again Mr. Watson re-

turned to his home carrying with him the proud assurance that he occupied a higher and more permanent place than ever before in the esteem of the people of North Carolina. It may be said without exaggeration that these honors stand unmatched in the history of North Carolina and give him an abiding place on the historic page of the great State he has served with such signal devotion and fidelity.

Mr. Watson has been for years a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church South, and is still a careful student, constantly reading good books, and is fully informed on all the topics of the day, not only politics, but in science and the arts as well. He is in great demand as a speaker at all public gatherings, and the old soldiers look to him for leadership and a touching address upon all occasions when they come together.

His integrity is known of all men, his character, ability, and standing are the highest, and he has a most charming personality. His fund of good stories seems almost inexhaustible, and it is the delight of his friends to gather about him and listen to his interesting anecdotes that flow in such boundless profusion from his lips. Almost his only recreation is the game of billiards, which he greatly enjoys, and his interest in his farm work, which he has never lost.

Now in the prime of life, blessed with health, strength, and vigor, having a brilliant and well-trained intellect and a true, warm, and tender heart, he has endeared himself to his fellow-men, earned the respect of all who know him, and richly deserves the success he has attained.

*W. A. Blair.*  
*S. A. Ashe.*



*M. H. White*



## MATTHEW H. WHITE



ABOUT four miles from the town of Hertford in Perquimans County a farmer, Stephen White, and his wife, Mary, whose maiden name was Wyatt, were living in a humble home in the year 1851. Farming at that period was not a very remunerative occupation, but it provided the means of solid comfort; and while no money was accumulated, living was bountiful and life was independent, and the careful, industrious husbandman, although not in the enjoyment of riches, had pleasant social relations even with the most prosperous of his neighbors.

Far removed from the madding crowd, the placid, quiet existence of the farm was particularly conducive to a religious life, and the elevating practices of religion were almost universal. The home-life of all, rich and poor alike, was permeated with fervid religious sentiment, and the mother reared her children with scrupulous care in her own communion. There was no purer, sweeter, and more moral atmosphere than on the farms of North Carolina, and in this respect there were but few regions that equalled that known as the Albemarle section, where the gentle faith of the Quakers had taken deep root in the early days of settlement and had exerted a refining influence for many generations.

It was under such circumstances that the early life of Matthew

H. White, the subject of this sketch, was cast. He was the son of Stephen and Mary White, and was born on his father's farm on the 5th day of September, 1851. When only three years of age, however, he had the misfortune to lose his father; but nearly every sorrow has its compensations. By this bereavement he was thrown more thoroughly under the particular care of his mother, whose influence thus entered more into the woof and warp of his life than would otherwise have been the case.

Always active and robust, and with a disposition to be helpful to his mother, even as a boy he became greatly interested in the work about his home and in accumulating something for his mother and himself. Addressing himself to his daily tasks with a vigor born of an affectionate and appreciative nature, he early emerged from boyhood into man's estate. One sees him to-day a man of large frame, well developed, and apparently the possessor of unusual physical strength. At sixteen he had attained a robust and vigorous manhood. One of his employments at that age was cutting wood for sale on his mother's account. She set a task for him of two cords a day, and allowed him fifty cents per cord for all beyond the task. He usually cut four cords per day, and thus earned a dollar a day for himself. Thus occupied in supplying something for the support of his mother and himself, Mr. White had no great turn for books and was denied the benefit of even such educational advantages as the neighboring town afforded. But such a man was irrepressible. Notwithstanding his want of opportunities, he overcame all obstacles and fitted himself for a man's work in life. On reaching his twenty-first year he was able to purchase a farm containing 333 acres, four miles from Hertford, for which he paid down \$500 in cash and agreed to pay the balance of the price, \$1,500, in six years. Now he had a still greater stimulus to exertion, and he applied himself with such energy to his work that in three years he had paid off the last of the mortgage. Successful in this, he afterwards entered upon a career in which he displayed a wonderful insight into business. Whatever he undertook prospered. He made no mistakes and his transactions were always profitable. His just sentiments, his

cheerful, sunny disposition, and the kindly feeling which beamed from his pleasant countenance seemed to be in natural accord with his success in life. He engaged with excellent results in farming, and particularly in raising and fattening stock. For horses he had a fancy, and he dealt largely in them and handled them with exceptional advantage. He also invested in lumber and in lands for trading purposes; and seldom did he make a transaction that added nothing to his bank account. Year by year he amassed means and his accumulations notably increased, and he was enabled to fall into that manner of life which was most inviting to him. He has long had a stock-farm where he raises fine-blooded horses, and which has an established reputation even in distant parts of the State. There is no pleasure like that accompanying successful achievement, and Mr. White has enjoyed the gratification of having his fine horses praised by all at the races and horse-shows of the State capital and other fairs and exhibitions.

Having made his own money, Mr. White has known how to invest it to advantage. While careful, he is not so conservative as to keep always within beaten paths, but he strikes out for himself. He blazes his own way in business matters. Thus he was one of the originators of the Albemarle Ice Company, and is the president of that company, whose operations have met with gratifying success. He was likewise one of those who organized the First National Bank of Elizabeth City, and has been a director in it ever since it was begun. He was also a director in the Hertford Banking Company, and likewise in the Great Eastern Life Insurance Company.

While not a politician, Mr. White is a Democrat, like most of his associates, and he has always taken an interest in the local affairs of his town and county.

His religious affiliations are with the Methodists, but he is broad-minded and liberal in his social intercourse, and he is one of the governors of the Hertford Club, whose object is to promote the amenities of life among the citizens. His relations, social, business, and political, to his community are thus seen to be agreeable, useful, and important. Whatever will tend to promote the



general welfare finds in him a warm and zealous advocate, and when he undertakes anything it generally is accomplished. The word failure is not in his vocabulary. In every town there is usually some man who stands foremost for public spirit and enterprise, and Mr. White has earned the reputation of being in this respect the first citizen of Hertford.

In the month of January, 1871, before he was twenty-one years of age, Mr. White was happily married to Miss Mattie E. Perry. She has borne him two children, but neither now survives.

Denied educational advantages in his own youth, Mr. White has been interested in helping others. For the past twenty years he has each year aided five or six deserving young people, girls and boys, to obtain an education. He has advanced them the necessary means, taking their notes without security. This kindness on his part has been appreciated, and with but few exceptions all whom he has helped in this way have been so successful in life that they have paid promptly the amounts lent them. At this particular time Mr. White is educating nine young people. This aiding others has brought him much gratification. He finds it a real pleasure to observe the successful careers of those whom he has benefited in this respect. Mr. White has not connected himself with many societies, but is a member of the Elks' Lodge 856 at Elizabeth City. Not only has he been helpful in assisting to promote business enterprises, but he has given liberally to all charitable and religious purposes that enlist the sympathies of his community.

Mr. White may well be classed among the self-made men of the State. He has been indebted to others but little for the success which has attended him in life. His fine character, sterling worth, and the confidence he has inspired among his business associates were the foundations of his success. His advice to young men is therefore of particular value. "A young man," says he, "should acquire good habits, should lead a life of sobriety and industry, hand out a square deal to everybody, and stand to his contracts, whether good or bad."

*S. A. Ashe.*



*W. J. Willard.*



## MARTIN STEVENSON WILLARD



MARTIN STEVENSON WILLARD was born January 17, 1858, in Washington, North Carolina. On December 5, 1883, he married Miss Elizabeth Gettig Oliver, daughter of William H. Oliver of New-Bern.

His father, Mr. Albert A. Willard, was descended through a long line of New England ancestors from a number of the most prominent and oldest families of that section. The elder Mr. Willard, who was born in Still River, Massachusetts, May 19, 1828, came to North Carolina in 1845 together with several brothers and engaged in a wholesale business in Washington. From Washington he moved to Greensboro in 1861 and was engaged during the war under a commission from Governor Vance in the manufacture at Thomasville of shoes and other supplies for the Confederate Government. In 1866 he came to Wilmington and established the wholesale grocery firm of Willard Brothers, which transacted for a number of years the largest business of that kind in the State. He never held or sought public office of any kind, but was for more than half a century a Ruling Elder in the Presbyterian Church. He was always distinguished for his deep piety, his scrupulous honesty, extreme modesty, and for patience and indomitable perseverance.

Major Simon Willard, the first person of the name in this country, landed in Massachusetts in 1636. He was one of the most

prominent men of his day in New England and commanded the Middlesex Regiment of the State of Massachusetts in King Phillip's War. Dr. George M. Bodge, in "Soldiers in King Phillip's War," says of Major Willard that "he was one of the noblest in the roster of the grand old Puritan officers." Among other prominent positions held by Major Willard was that of Deputy to the General Court of Massachusetts from 1636 to 1654. From that time to this each generation has been distinguished for capacity and excellence, and during the War for Independence several of his descendants were officers in the Revolutionary Army.

The maternal grandmother of Martin S. Willard was Hannah Emerson. She also was descended from a long line of New England ancestors, several generations in succession having been Congregational ministers, and among her first cousins was the distinguished Ralph Waldo Emerson.

His mother was Mary Hannis Stevenson, daughter of Martin Stevenson and Mary Taylor Stevenson of New-Bern, North Carolina, and through this side of his family Mr. Willard is connected with a number of prominent North Carolina families. Honorable Hannis Taylor is a near relative, being connected with Mr. Willard through both his (Mr. Taylor's) father and mother.

Mr. Willard has always been physically robust and in boyhood took an active part in all school and college sports. During late years he has been particularly interested in yachting, and his chief relaxation from the cares of business has been in this attractive pastime. In his early life Mr. Willard received regular and systematic training from his father in habits of industry and frugality. He cannot remember that he was ever given outright one dollar in money, but for simple kinds of employment he was paid fixed and liberal amounts, which were always entered in an account book. When money was to be spent it was always drawn from this fund, and an entry made what it was spent for. The habits inculcated by these methods have been of wonderful value to him in all his after life. His father kept him at private schools in his own town, and for a short time at the Hopkins Grammar School in New Haven, Connecticut, where he was prepared to enter Yale

College. The year he would have entered Yale (1873) his father unhappily met with business reverses, and he was prevented from continuing his studies, and returned home to take up the active pursuit of seeking a livelihood.

He was first employed as clerk (1874) in the insurance office of Colonel John Wilder Atkinson in Wilmington, continuing with him until he became chief clerk, when he resigned his position (1883) to commence business for himself. Shortly after entering the insurance business he associated with himself Dr. Armand J. De Rosset, and this partnership continued for a period of eight years and until Dr. De Rosset on account of failing health was obliged to retire from active business. In 1887 Mr. Willard secured from the Legislature of North Carolina a charter for the Carolina Insurance Company, and the company being organized soon afterwards, Mr. Willard was elected its Secretary, and he has continued in this position ever since, having the entire management of the company's affairs.

Mr. Willard aided materially in the reorganization of the Wilmington Light Infantry and for nine years was an active member of that organization, and while first sergeant of that company he was appointed adjutant of the Second Regiment N. C. S. G., and continued in that position for several years. When he retired from active military duty he was placed on the Reserve Corps of the W. L. I., and has been a member of that organization ever since except for the short time of the Spanish War. During that war the company volunteered for active service in the United States Army, and Mr. Willard, together with a number of other Reserve Corps members, took their places and performed the active work of keeping up the home company. During this period (November, 1898) the political revolution in Wilmington occurred, and Mr. Willard took a very active part in quieting that disturbance and restoring his town to the government of its white citizens.

Among the positions of responsibility and trust held by Mr. Willard are member of the Board of Commissioners of Navigation and Pilotage of the port of Wilmington, of the Board of

Managers of the James Walker Memorial Hospital, of the Board of Managers of the Board of Commerce, and for eight years Chairman for the Board of Assessors for New Hanover County.

Mr. Willard's most conspicuous public service has been as a Member of the Legislature of North Carolina, representing New Hanover County in the sessions of 1899 and 1901. His election with Mr. George Rountree to represent New Hanover County was one of the dramatic incidents of the White Supremacy campaign of 1898, and was of such importance that the great Metropolitan dailies, which had begun to look to Wilmington for startling new items, gave considerable notice to it. The selection of these two gentlemen was the result of an agreement between a committee of business men and Governor D. L. Russell that if the nominees of the Democratic Convention should be withdrawn and two other gentlemen selected by the business men of the city substituted, he (Governor Russell) would use his influence to prevent the nomination of a Republican ticket. This course was finally agreed to, although its wisdom was very much doubted at the time by some of the most prominent Democratic leaders. As a result of this agreement Messrs. Willard and Rountree were selected by the business men, and these gentlemen were the only persons voted for at the November election for Members of the House of Representatives and were therefore unanimously elected. They were also reëlected to the Legislature of 1901 without opposition.

Mr. Willard's work as a member of the Legislature brought him into great prominence all over the State. The treasury of the State was almost depleted, and still there was need for increased appropriations for school purposes, for the charitable institutions of the State, and for pensions to Confederate veterans. The necessity for more modern methods of taxation was apparent, and to Mr. Willard was chiefly assigned the duty of preparing a new revenue bill which would yield the necessary income to the State while not increasing the burden of taxation unnecessarily. To this duty he gave diligent and painstaking work, and the result has since been seen and recognized. While the new revenue law at first raised a storm of protest from the large corporations of the

State, it has since been admitted to be an equitable measure and is now working smoothly; the opposition has given place to favorable comment and the necessary revenue has been secured. The new features incorporated in the laws for the taxation of corporate interests have received the outspoken approval of the leading men in the State's Government, both executive and judicial, while the corporations which at first condemned the law now admit that it is far more equitable than previous laws. While a Member of the Legislature, he was called upon to explain through the daily press many sections of the proposed law, and he did so in a number of articles which were printed in the papers published at Raleigh. He also advocated in several extended articles, and in the face of violent opposition, the adoption of an inheritance tax, and this feature was finally incorporated into the law.

Because of Mr. Willard's knowledge of the insurance business he was made chairman of the Insurance Committee of the House of Representatives, and to him was assigned the task of preparing an insurance law for the State. Under the measure which he prepared and introduced the Department of Insurance was instituted. It provided for a full and complete management of all kinds of insurance companies, and the public advantage of the Insurance Department working under it has been most marked. Statutes modeled on the North Carolina insurance law have since been enacted in a number of Southern States and are working equally as well as in this State. A few newspaper comments will show the popular appreciation of this act and also of the law providing for the investigation of fires, which was drawn and advocated by Mr. Willard. The following are from several of the leading State papers:

"The insurance men North and South are much pleased with the act of the North Carolina General Assembly concerning insurance matters. Our townsman, Representative M. S. Willard, is to be congratulated upon being the author of a measure the provisions of which so clearly and thoroughly comprehend the needs in this connection, and which gives such universal satisfaction. The secretary of one of the largest insurance companies in the North writes to a gentleman here requesting that copies

of the Willard Bill be sent to some Texas parties. He says he has pointed with pride to the legislation of North Carolina, and especially the Willard Bill, showing the good results to both the public and insurance interests" (Wilmington *Star*).

The *Insurance Herald*, the leading insurance journal of the South, referring to the reduction in rates in North Carolina by the insurance companies, contained the following:

"At the last session of the North Carolina Legislature insurance laws were passed which met with general commendation from citizens and fire insurance companies. Particularly important to the better welfare and improved conditions of the State was the Fire Marshal Law, charging the insurance commissioner with the investigation of fires and the prosecution of charges of arson, etc. The vigorous manner in which Commissioner Young has performed his duties in this respect has had a favorable effect. Inasmuch as the increased hazard of obnoxious laws must be met by some increase of rate, many fire underwriters believe that meritorious laws should also be encouraged by some decrease in rate. It is evident that this liberal spirit actuated the Executive Committee of the South-eastern Tariff Association in its adoption of the following resolution at a meeting November 8th."

(Here followed a copy of the resolution reducing rates in North Carolina from 25% to 33 1-3%.)

The *Raleigh News and Observer* in a long article on the subject contained the following:

"All the insurance papers are commending North Carolina's fire insurance law and congratulating the State on the recent reduction in rates."

The following is from the *Wilmington Despatch*:

"Direct and indirect compliments are being paid North Carolina's new and most admirable fire insurance laws as set forth in the now famous 'Willard Bill,' drafted and engineered through the last legislature by Mr. M. S. Willard of this city, by the press throughout the South and in many parts of the North and West."

The *Despatch* then quotes a long article from the Richmond



*Times* which tells of the effort to have the North Carolina Law passed in Mississippi, closing by urging the Virginia Legislature to enact a law similar to the North Carolina Law.

The *Wilmington Messenger* contained the following :

"The act of the General Assembly of North Carolina to regulate insurance companies, and known as the 'Willard Law,' will probably be adopted in Virginia, Georgia, Mississippi and Texas. It is regarded as the best solution of the insurance problem that has been enacted into law in the South, and it is not only fair to the insurance companies, but makes a great saving for insurers. Representative Willard, the author of the act, is a practical, experienced and successful insurance man himself, and his bill is making him considerable reputation."

Mr. Willard also introduced and caused to be passed the Act giving New Hanover County a stock law. This measure was violently opposed by a large number of farmers in the county. Mr. Willard was convinced that such a law would soon be recognized as of great benefit to the county at large and felt compelled to urge its passage in spite of the strong opposition of so many of his own people. The wonderful development of the trucking interests in New Hanover, due almost entirely to this law, has demonstrated the wisdom of Mr. Willard's action.

Mr. Josephus Daniels in the *Raleigh News and Observer* has this to say of Mr. Willard's work as a legislator :

"The need of the hour is more legislators like Mr. Willard. Independent, studious, wise and progressive, the State and New Hanover County have reason to be proud of the constructive legislation Mr. Willard has had a large part in shaping."

Mr. Willard has since early manhood been a prominent Mason, having held the highest position in all the local Masonic organizations. In 1898 he was elected Grand High Priest of the Grand Chapter of the Royal Arch Masons in North Carolina and served the usual term. He has held minor offices in the Grand Lodge of Masons and is now one of the principal officers of the Grand Commandery of Knights Templar in North Carolina. Under his direc-

tion the magnificent Masonic Temple in Wilmington was erected, this being at the time the most conspicuous building in Wilmington and the first temple erected in the State. Mr. Willard has also been actively connected with a number of other prominent buildings in Wilmington, among which may be mentioned the large three-story factory of the Willard Bag and Manufacturing Company, of which he is president, and the office building owned and occupied by the Carolina Insurance Company. He will no doubt serve this latter company in the erection of a still more attractive and expensive building on a site recently purchased by them on the most prominent business block in the city. He is at present chairman of the building committee which is erecting the William H. Sprunt annex to the James Walker Memorial Hospital. In the Spring of 1906, the bag factory was destroyed by fire, entailing a heavy loss on the company, but Mr. Willard and his associates are rebuilding on a larger scale in a more eligible location.

While not taking so active a part in the other organizations, Mr. Willard has also held the office of Chancellor Commander of Stonewall Lodge, Knights of Pythias, this being the oldest Pythian Lodge in the State, and is also a member of the Independent Order of Red Men. In his religious life Mr. Willard has always been surrounded by earnest Christian influences and has for some time been a member of the First Presbyterian Church of Wilmington.

*P. Willard.*





*Thomas B. Womack*



## THOMAS BROWN WOMACK



AMONG the active men at the State capital whose influence is a strong force in the progress of the community is Thomas Brown Womack, who moved to Raleigh from Chatham County in 1894 and made his home there.

Judge Womack is descended on his mother's side from General Thomas Brown, one of the leading patriots of Bladen County in the days that tried men's souls, his first military service being with Governor Tryon at the battle of Alamance in 1771. General Brown ardently espoused the cause of liberty at the beginning of the troubles with the Mother Country, was made lieutenant-colonel in 1775, and later became a very active partisan officer of the lower Cape Fear. In 1781, when the British dominated the Cape Fear region and drove the Whigs from their homes, some sixty of General Brown's neighbors found refuge in Duplin County and were organized by him and made an attack on the Tory post at Elizabethtown, held by three hundred Tories. That was one of the most brilliant and bloody affairs in our partisan warfare. The attack was at midnight and entirely successful, the Tory leaders and many others being killed and those who survived being dispersed, and as a consequence, the Whigs repossessed themselves of that territory. Colonel Brown afterwards was appointed brigadier-general. He served in the State Senate in 1786, and also in 1788, exerting a strong influence in the de-

liberations of that body; and during the whole course of his life was greatly esteemed throughout the Cape Fear region. Through his mother also Judge Womack is one of the numerous descendants of John Sharpley, and has the same descent as Bishop W. M. Green of the Protestant Episcopal Church, whose saintly character caused him to be so widely admired.

On his father's side Judge Womack's ancestry is equally distinguished in social and civil life. His father, John Archibald Womack, was named for his two grandfathers, John Womack and Archibald McBryde. John Womack was a grandson of Ashby Womack, who was born at Suffolk, England, August 15, 1683, and settled in Prince Edward County, Virginia, in 1716, where he died February 4, 1756. He was a son of Edward Womack, who was born March 12, 1653, and died at Suffolk, England, September 8, 1723, being himself a son of Laurence Womack, Bishop of St. David's, who was born at Norfolk, England, May 23, 1612, and died in 1685.

Bishop Womack, or Womock as he usually spelled the name, was a son of Laurence Womack, who was rector of Lopham, as was his grandfather Arthur Womack. The Bishop in his early ministry had a benefice in the West of England, where he acquired fame by his preaching. In 1661 the degree of Doctor of Divinity was conferred upon him. From 1660 to 1683 he was Archdeacon of Suffolk, and on November 11, 1683, he was consecrated Bishop of St. David's.

Bishop Womack was a great controversial writer at the restoration of Charles II, proving himself an able literary advocate of the old liturgy. He published twelve theological works, the last in 1683, entitled "*Suffragium Protestantium. Wherein our governors are justified in proceedings against Dissenters.*"

He was twice married, having children by each marriage, but left a will devising his property to his nephew Laurence Womack, rector of Castor of Yarmouth.

John Womack came to North Carolina from Virginia in the latter part of the eighteenth century, and was elected to the Legislature from Caswell County in 1787. His son Green, Judge Wo-

mack's grandfather, first settled at Hillsboro, engaging in the mercantile business, but later moved to Pittsboro, where he married Ann McBryde in 1825.

Archibald McBryde, John Archibald Womack's maternal grandfather, was born in Wigtownshire, in northwest of Scotland, September 28, 1766, and came to America shortly after the cessation of hostilities, penniless, settling in Moore County, North Carolina. In 1797 he married Lydia Ramsey of Chatham County, who was a daughter of the owner of the celebrated Ramsey's Mills at which point Lord Cornwallis encamped and crossed Deep River when on his retreat from the Battle of Guilford Court House. There were born of this marriage four sons and seven daughters. They have left numerous descendants scattered through several of the Southern States, among whom is Honorable Hugh M. Street, ex-Speaker of the Mississippi House of Representatives and a prominent business man and politician of Meridian, Mississippi.

Archibald McBryde was twice elected to Congress, serving from May 22, 1809, to March 3, 1813, was several times State Senator, and was Solicitor of the Wilmington district.

Dr. Caruthers says that Mr. McBryde had prepared the notes for a history of the war in the Scotch region, but that he died before he had completed his manuscript. A number of his notes were turned over to Dr. Caruthers by Dr. Charles Chalmers, his son-in-law, and were freely drawn from in Dr. Caruthers' book entitled "Revolutionary Incidents."

Moore says Mr. McBryde was an avowed Federalist, and the only one reelected from this State to Congress during the middle of Mr. Madison's term. He declared that:

"Mr. McBryde was a lawyer of Moore County who was greatly respected for his good sense and many virtues. To legal and political pursuits he added laborious investigation and the preservation of the Revolutionary incidents of the State. To General Joseph Graham and Mr. McBryde are the people of this age largely indebted for what is known of that momentous epoch."

Mr. McBryde died February 15, 1836, and was buried at

Grange, on Deep River in Chatham County, his tombstone bearing this inscription :

“By perseverance, industry and attention he arose from poverty and obscurity to a seat in Congress, and for some time Solicitor for the State for the Wilmington Circuit.”

Judge Womack's father was John Archibald Womack, a merchant and farmer of Chatham County, a man of strong intellectual power and of business capacity. Among his notable traits were piety, high integrity, industry and careful attention to whatever occupied him. He was forty-three years a Ruling Elder in the Presbyterian church at Pittsboro, and was a frequent attendant on his Church Courts, being three times a Commissioner to the General Assembly of the Southern Presbyterian Church. No man exerted a greater influence for good in his section of the State. For twenty-five years he was public Administrator of Chatham County, and during those many years he settled more than two hundred estates without having one account impeached or excepted to for any improper expenditure or failure to perform his duty. For twenty-seven years he was a justice of the peace, trying and determining more than a thousand cases, and only one case was reversed on appeal to the higher courts. He represented his county in the important Legislature of 1870-72 and so impressed himself on his fellow-members by his sterling worth and business qualities that he was nominated for the position of Secretary of State on the Democratic Ticket at the ensuing election.

A devout man, moderate in his views, temperate in all things, careful and painstaking, and strict in the performance of every duty and obligation, his example exerted a great influence in forming the character of his son, who also received from him his fine intellectual endowment, while to his mother Judge Womack is largely indebted for that training in religious and spiritual matters which has been the basis of his own exact walk in life.

Born on the 12th day of February, 1855, his father's resources having been crippled by the result of the war during his

childhood, Judge Womack did not receive a collegiate education; but after attending a few years at the Pittsboro Academy, when only fifteen years of age, he entered a store as clerk and sold goods and kept the books of the concern.

The training then received has been of great service in familiarizing him with accounts and developing clerkly habits and order and system in his methods, business qualities that are not generally acquired by members of the bar. When he had reached the age of nineteen years he found himself the possessor of \$250 which he had saved, and having an inclination for the law, this enabled him to begin the study for that profession under the direction of his neighbor, Honorable John Manning, afterwards Professor of Law at the State University. In June, 1876, he obtained his license and opened an office at Pittsboro, and two years later was chosen Solicitor of the Criminal Court of Chatham County and discharged his duties very acceptably.

In 1883 he represented Chatham and Alamance Counties in the State Senate, and at the next election was chosen a Member of the House of Representatives. His legislative career won for him many friends, and as his acquaintance widened his popularity and influence became more extended.

The following year Governor Scales conferred on him the appointment of proxy to represent the State in the A. & N. C. R. R. Co., that position making him the personal representative of the Governor of the State in all matters connected with the management of that road, of which the State owned about two-thirds of the stock. In 1889 he became principal clerk of the House of Representatives; and the next year was appointed by Governor Fowle, Judge of the Superior Court, to fill the unexpired term caused by the resignation of Judge John A. Gilmer, an office he was admirably qualified to fill.

In 1894 he was persuaded to accept the chief clerkship in the office of United States Collector of Internal Revenue Simmons, and he displayed a mastery of the details of that business that excited the admiration of his friends. In 1899 he was appointed Chairman of the Board of Directors of the Institution for the



Deaf and Dumb and the Blind at Raleigh, and four years later he was elected by the Legislature chairman of the commission to codify the public laws of the State, a work for which he was eminently qualified.

Industrious and painstaking, his methodical habits led him to prepare a Digest of the Supreme Court decisions which he published in two volumes in 1891, and the third volume in 1898, and an Index in 1902; and in 1904 he published the "Laws of Private Corporations of the State of North Carolina," while at the same time he was much engrossed in preparing for publication the Revisal which was adopted by the General Assembly of 1905.

He originally began the practice of the law alone at Pittsboro, was a partner of Honorable John Manning from 1881 to 1883, and in 1894 he moved to Raleigh, forming a copartnership with Mr. R. H. Hayes, who resided at Pittsboro. In 1898 he moved to New York city as special counsel for a large corporation, but after a year's experience in the metropolis he returned to Raleigh and opened a law office there on March 1, 1899. In Raleigh Judge Womack, besides doing the literary work that has in some measure occupied him, has built up a substantial practice and is in the enjoyment of a handsome business. He served for two years as president of the Chamber of Commerce, and is actively interested in the uplift of the capital city.

He is a man of very acute mental power and endowed with a remarkable quickness of apprehension, a strong speaker, presenting his views with a clearness not often excelled; and no one is better grounded in the principles of the law or has a more accurate acquaintance with the decisions of the Supreme Court, while he is particularly distinguished for the systematic methods he adopts in his practice.

During his youth Judge Womack, while studious and inclined to his books, was fond of out-of-door sports, and until recently he practised wheeling as an amusement and for exercise, and is now frequently found among the spectators at the baseball and football contests.

On the 30th of November, 1881, he married Miss Susie Taylor

of Pittsboro, and their union has been a most happy and congenial one.

He feels that the influences that have chiefly directed his course in life originated at the fireside of his father's home—the example of his estimable father and the religious training of his admirable and devoted parents. But his own personal worth, his ability, industry, and his purpose to attain the highest excellence in whatever he undertakes, have in the estimation of his friends been the prime factors in his achieving the gratifying success that has attended his professional career.

In political matters Judge Womack has ever been an active and zealous Democrat, and he has warmly coöperated in the efforts of Senator Simmons, who as chairman of the State Committee has managed several campaigns in the State with great success, while in religion he is a staunch Presbyterian, an officer in the First Presbyterian Church at Raleigh, and enjoys the high esteem of his associates in that church.

In June, 1905, Wake Forest College conferred upon Judge Womack the honorary degree of Doctor of Laws.

*S. A. Ashe.*





## ROBERT SIMONTON YOUNG



ROBERT SIMONTON YOUNG was born in Cabarrus County, near Concord, at the beautiful country home of his father, Major Robert Simonton Young, on the 28th of September, 1861. His father was of Scotch-Irish descent and came of one of the best and most prominent families of Cabarrus County, and not one of them had borne the old name more worthily than he, who, when he fell in defence of home and country, left a spotless record as husband, father, citizen, and soldier. His memory as a soldier Doctor Young perpetuates as a worthy and active member of the United Sons of Confederate Veterans.

Major Young was one of the most prosperous and progressive farmers in the Piedmont section of North Carolina. He was a Democrat and a Secessionist. And when the war came he kept his political faith and honor sacred and high by early entering the Confederate Army as Captain of Company B, Seventh North Carolina Regiment of Infantry, which splendid company he himself enlisted in Cabarrus County.

He was for many years Ruling Elder in the congregation of Poplar Tent Presbyterian Church, of which his family were members. As a boy the writer knew his beautiful and hospitable home to be a pious and godly one and a happy resort for children.

The mother of Doctor Young was Miss Sarah Virginia Bur-



*Rev. S. Young.*

ton, daughter of Alfred M. Burton of Lincoln County. Her earliest known ancestor was Noel Hunt Burton, who was the father of Hutchins Burton, the father of Robert Burton, a colonel in the Revolutionary Army and a member of the Colonial Congress. Robert Burton's wife was a daughter of John Williams, one of the first judges under the State Constitution. Their son Alfred was the father of Doctor Young's mother.

Doctor Young thus came of true old Southern blood on both sides, and when his gallant father, then Major of the Seventh North Carolina Regiment, laid down his life on the battlefield at the siege of Petersburg in 1864, his youngest child and namesake, the subject of this sketch, was left to the sole care of his mother. That she was both faithful and competent was proven in many ways, but in none more than in the character and success of her youngest son. It is a cause for thankfulness to her and to her innumerable friends that she still lives, at the good age of seventy-eight years, to rejoice in the results of her loving care and wise training.

In Doctor Young's ancestry there was nothing of the very best wanting; and the surroundings and influence of his home in childhood and youth were splendidly adapted to the development of the heritage bequeathed him by those of his blood who had gone before. A priceless heritage it is, and of great value in a man's life, but it will not make a man unless he be faithful and diligent in the use of his natural advantages. That Doctor Young has displayed these two most estimable qualities in a marked degree is well attested by the position he holds in his own community and in the ranks of his profession.

While he was still a boy his mother moved to Charlotte, and in the High School and Carolina Military Institute of that city Doctor Young was prepared to enter on his course as a medical student of the University of Virginia and the University of New York, from the latter of which he was graduated as a Doctor of Medicine in 1881.

He began the practice of his profession that same year at Matthews, in Mecklenburg County, North Carolina. He re-

mained there less than two years, locating in 1883 in Concord, where his life since then has been spent in the arduous labors of his profession, in which he has spared neither time nor strength in the conscientious discharge of his duties.

He has not failed of his reward; for not only is he firmly established in the confidence and affections of hundreds of those to whom he has ministered in his own town and county, but it is also a matter of pride with them that his reputation is not confined even to his State, but is well known far beyond its borders among the most prominent members of the profession. At different times he has taken a course at the Post-Graduate Medical Schools of New York, thus keeping abreast with the progress of the day in his profession.

As some high evidences of his professional position among the great doctors of North Carolina and elsewhere, Doctor Young early in his professional life was winner of the Essayist Prize of the North Carolina Medical Society in May, 1885. He has been President of the North Carolina Medical Society, and a member of the State Board of Medical Examiners, the two highest positions within the gift of his profession in North Carolina, and is now, and has been by appointment of two successive Democratic governors, Surgeon-General of North Carolina. He is now surgeon for the Southern Railway, Superintendent of Health for Cabarrus County, a member of the North Carolina Medical Society, the American Medical Association, the Association of Military Surgeons of the United States, the Association of Surgeons of the Southern Railway and of the American Association of Railway Surgeons.

His principal public service has been rendered in organizing the medical department of the National Guard of North Carolina into its present effective form, which he has modeled after that of the United States Army, and in efficiency and equipment it is second to that of no State in the Union.

By honorable practice of his profession and rigid regard for the great principles and rules of business life, Doctor Young has succeeded well financially, and to-day, in the very prime of

life, is a man of wealth and takes an active interest in the management of many enterprises in and around Concord. He is president of the Young-Hartsell Mills Company and of the Concord Perpetual Building and Loan Association, and is a director in the Cabarrus Savings Bank, the Cabarrus Cotton Mill, the Gibson Manufacturing Company, the Wiscassett Mill Company and the Brown Manufacturing Company, all being among the most prominent and successful financial and cotton manufacturing industries of Western North Carolina.

Aside from his professional and business qualities, Doctor Young is prominent socially, and his home is one of the most attractive in Concord, intellectually and otherwise. He is a man of first-class general intellectual attainments, is a great history reader, and feels that history study next to his professional books has contributed most to help and fit him for his work in life. With Lord Bolingbroke, he considers that "history is philosophy teaching by example," and he studies it as such. And with it all he is a great believer in and promoter of the cause of general education.

On the 19th day of February, 1885, he married Miss Nannie Moss Ervin, who is to-day a beautiful and intellectual woman of Concord's best society. Her father, Mr. Jas. R. Ervin, is of a prominent old family of South Carolina; and her mother, formerly Miss Margaret Moss, was the youngest daughter of Mr. John B. and Mrs. Nancy Moss, of Cabarrus County, a father and mother representative of the best type of old *ante-bellum* Southern society. She is a member of the United Daughters of the Confederacy, the National Society of the Daughters of the American Revolution, and the North Carolina Society of the Colonial Dames of America. Doctor and Mrs. Young have only one child, a son, now a midshipman in the United States Navy at the Naval Academy. Although his father fell fighting for the Confederacy, Doctor Young devoted his son to the service of his country.

Doctor Young's biography has heretofore been published in the work entitled "Western North Carolina," in which it was said of him:

"He was appointed a delegate from North Carolina to the International Medical Congress of 1890, held at Berlin, and represented his State with great credit to himself and those who sent him. He improved his opportunities while abroad, and devoted much time to the study of medicine and surgery in the principal schools and hospitals of Europe."

Doctor Young has never devoted much time to sports, like hunting, etc., and has little faith in artificial forms of exercise, athletics and modern systems of physical culture, and finds that his professional daily life-work gives him all the exercise he needs for health and strength. In exact accord with his love of the study of history as an intellectual improvement and benefit, he feels that contact with men in active life has done more than all other causes combined in promoting his success.

Like all good men who have won large success, he says that he has met with many failures in what he hoped to do; and, with such men's usual wish for the success of young people, he suggests to all who desire to attain success in life the following: "Be ambitious. Aim high. You will never shoot higher than you aim. Back this up with politeness, affability and incessant work, and success is assured."

*Paul B. Means.*

